



This is a digital copy of a book that was preserved for generations on library shelves before it was carefully scanned by Google as part of a project to make the world's books discoverable online.

It has survived long enough for the copyright to expire and the book to enter the public domain. A public domain book is one that was never subject to copyright or whose legal copyright term has expired. Whether a book is in the public domain may vary country to country. Public domain books are our gateways to the past, representing a wealth of history, culture and knowledge that's often difficult to discover.

Marks, notations and other marginalia present in the original volume will appear in this file - a reminder of this book's long journey from the publisher to a library and finally to you.

Usage guidelines

Google is proud to partner with libraries to digitize public domain materials and make them widely accessible. Public domain books belong to the public and we are merely their custodians. Nevertheless, this work is expensive, so in order to keep providing this resource, we have taken steps to prevent abuse by commercial parties, including placing technical restrictions on automated querying.

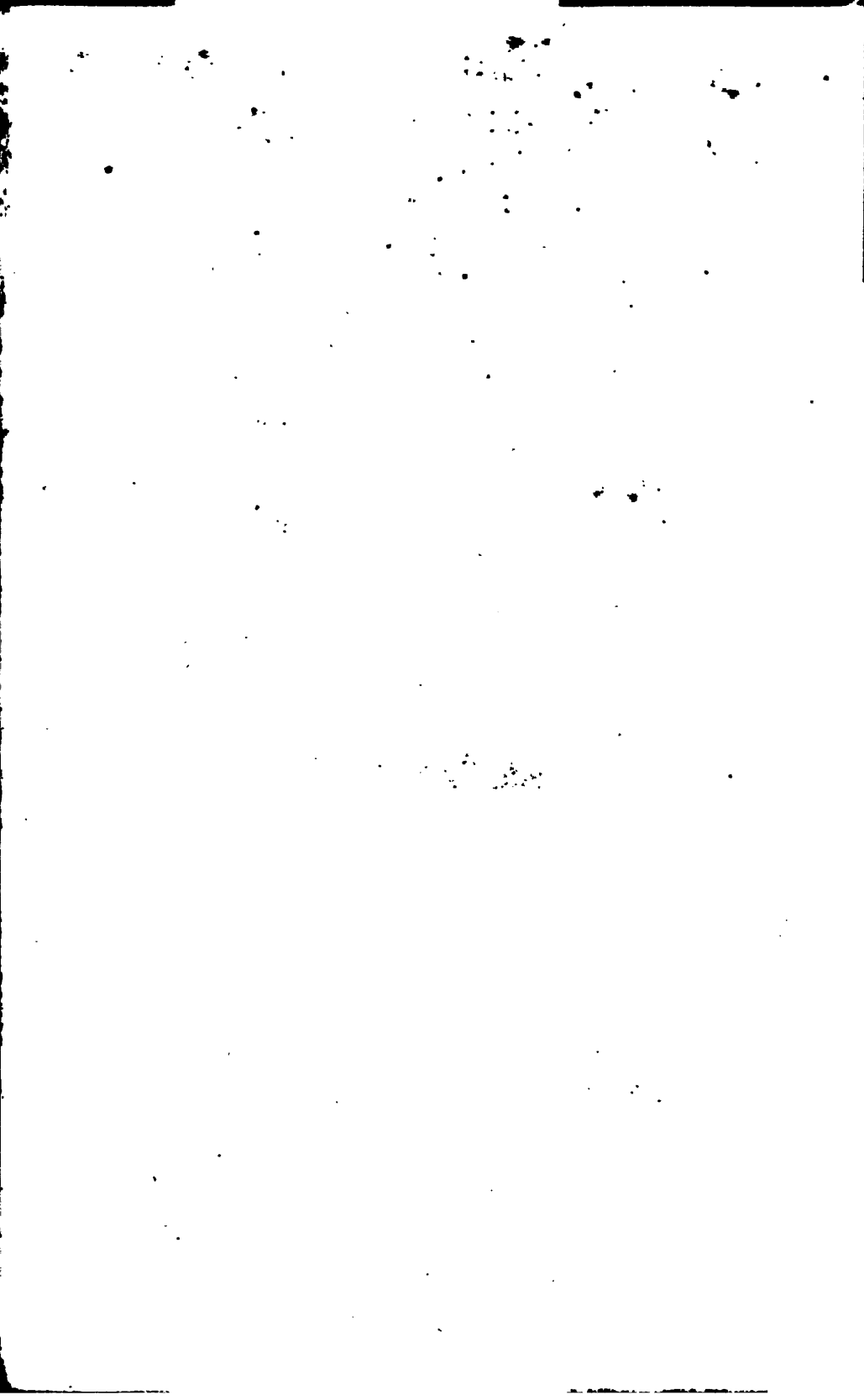
We also ask that you:

- + *Make non-commercial use of the files* We designed Google Book Search for use by individuals, and we request that you use these files for personal, non-commercial purposes.
- + *Refrain from automated querying* Do not send automated queries of any sort to Google's system: If you are conducting research on machine translation, optical character recognition or other areas where access to a large amount of text is helpful, please contact us. We encourage the use of public domain materials for these purposes and may be able to help.
- + *Maintain attribution* The Google "watermark" you see on each file is essential for informing people about this project and helping them find additional materials through Google Book Search. Please do not remove it.
- + *Keep it legal* Whatever your use, remember that you are responsible for ensuring that what you are doing is legal. Do not assume that just because we believe a book is in the public domain for users in the United States, that the work is also in the public domain for users in other countries. Whether a book is still in copyright varies from country to country, and we can't offer guidance on whether any specific use of any specific book is allowed. Please do not assume that a book's appearance in Google Book Search means it can be used in any manner anywhere in the world. Copyright infringement liability can be quite severe.

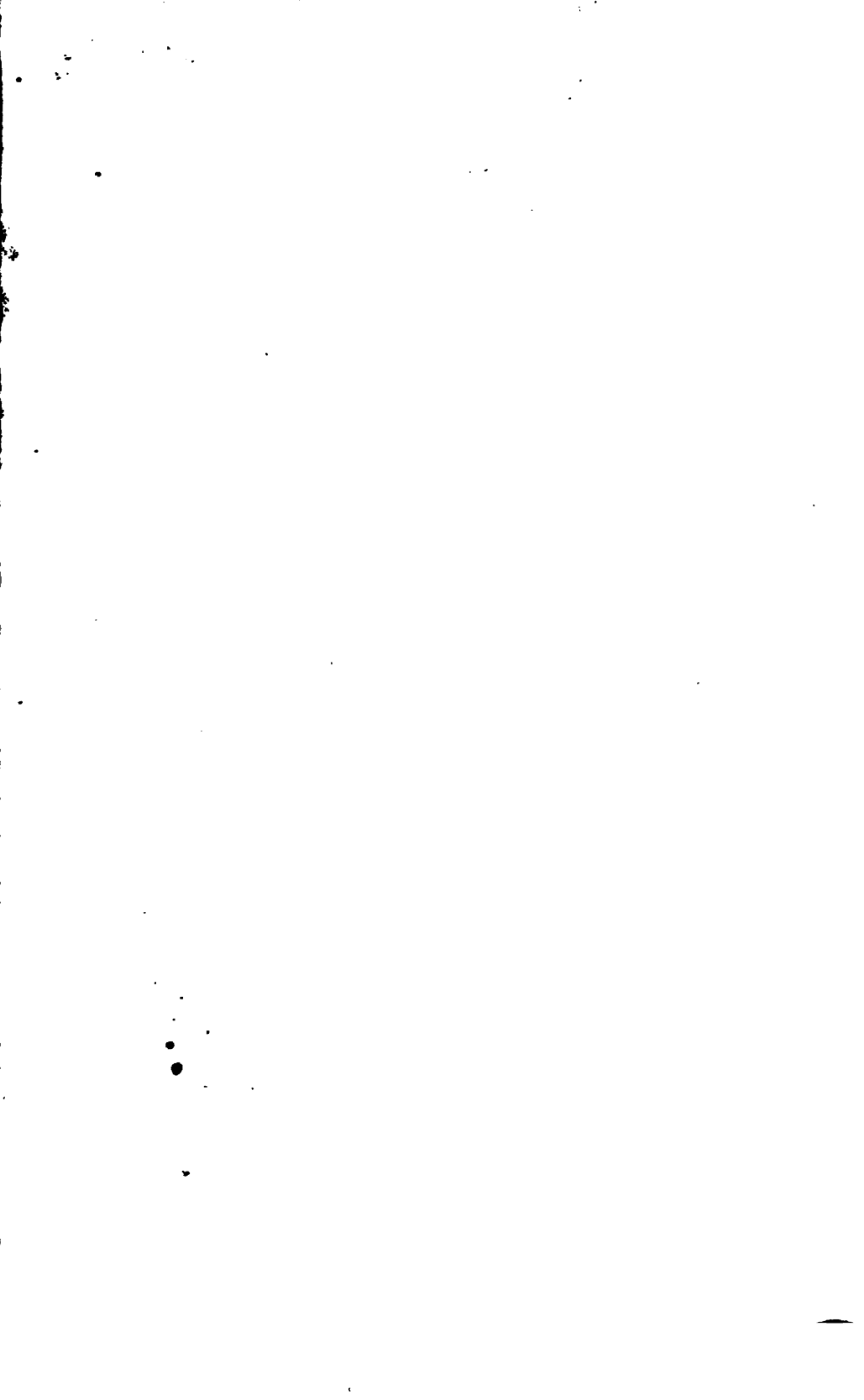
About Google Book Search

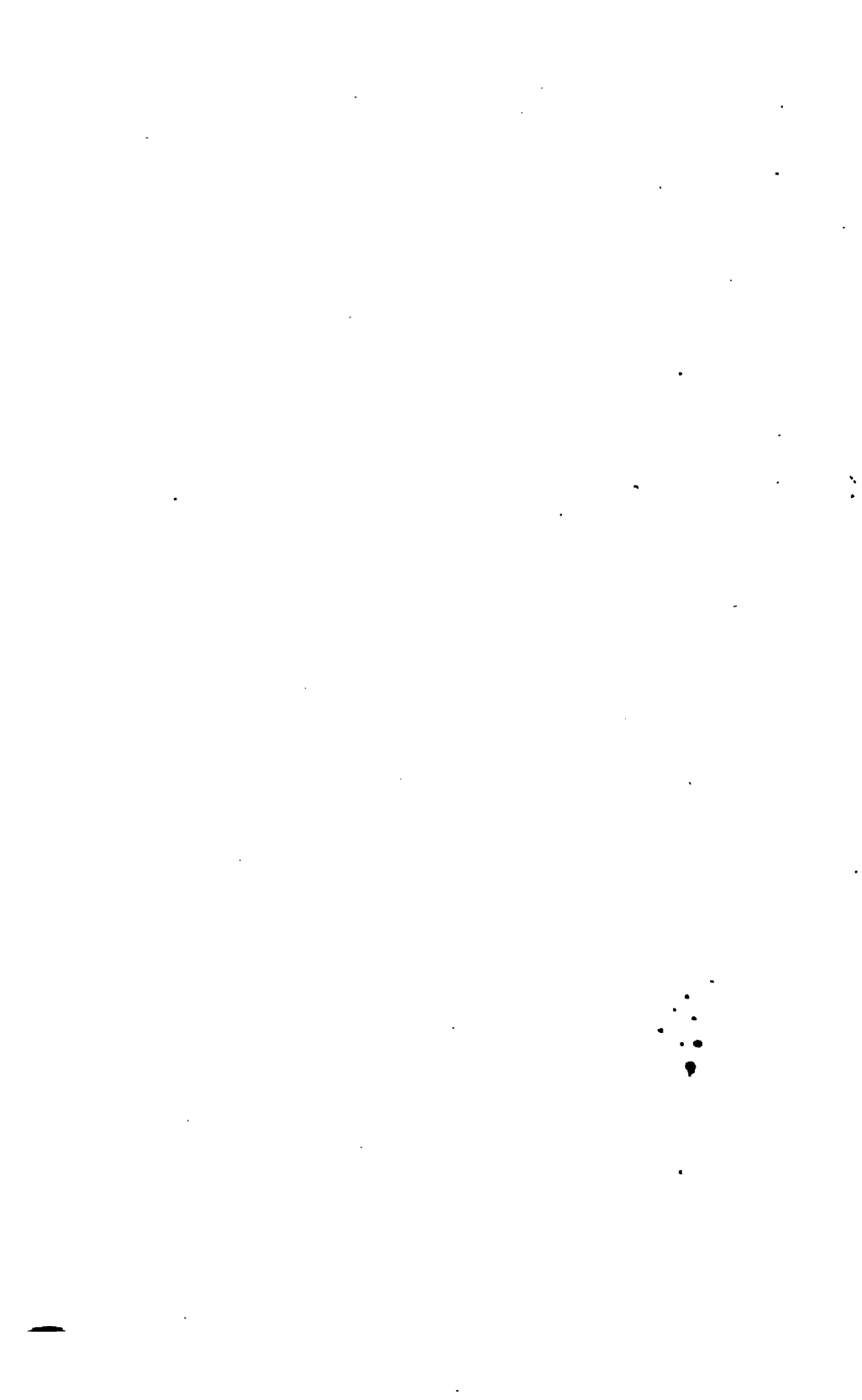
Google's mission is to organize the world's information and to make it universally accessible and useful. Google Book Search helps readers discover the world's books while helping authors and publishers reach new audiences. You can search through the full text of this book on the web at <http://books.google.com/>

Misc. Ind. d. 105

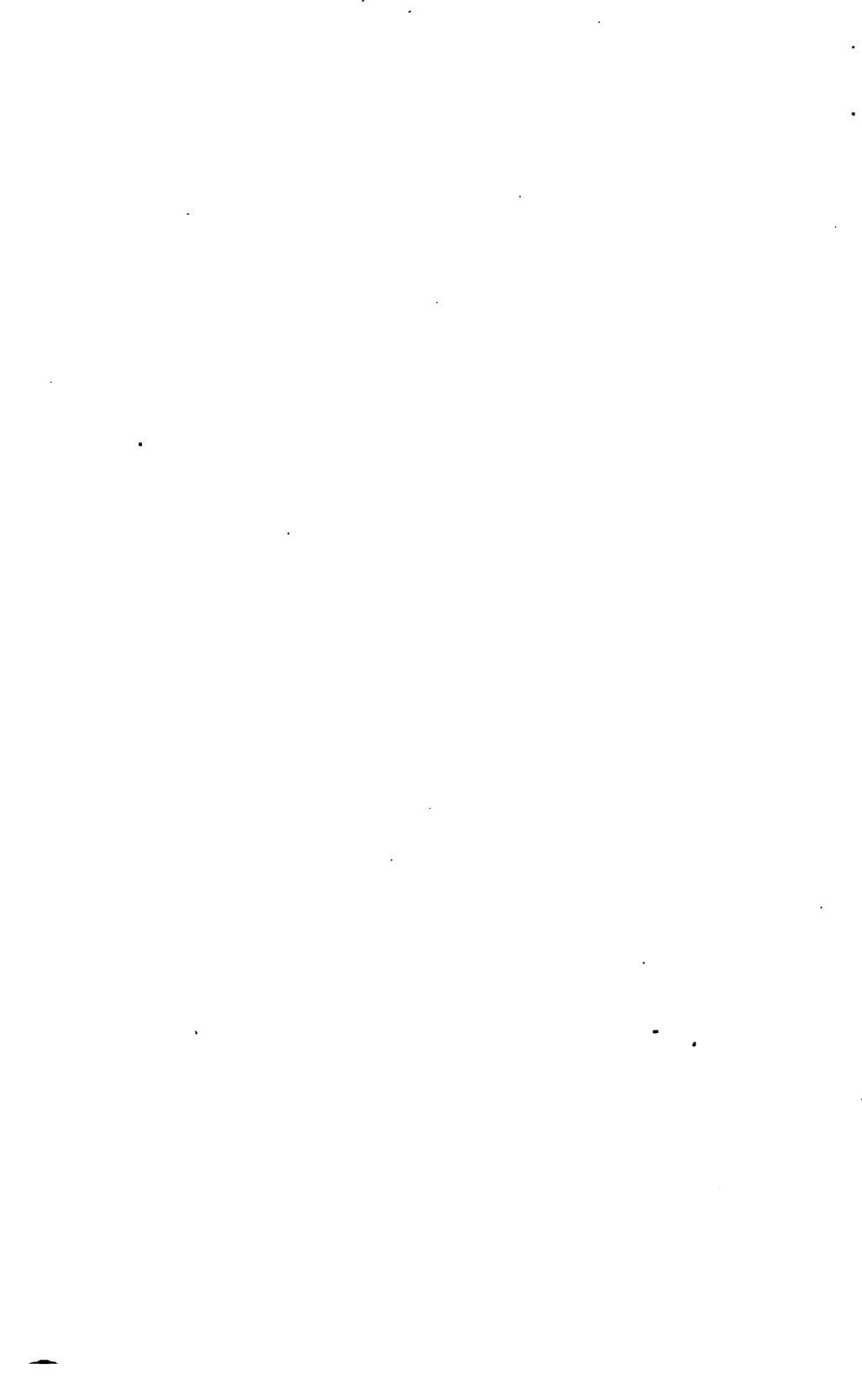








GRAMMAR
OF THE
SINDHI - LANGUAGE.



GRAMMAR
OF THE
SINDHI LANGUAGE.

COMPARED

**WITH THE SANSKRIT-PRAKRIT AND THE
COGNATE INDIAN VERNACULARS,**

BY

DR. ERNEST TRUMPP.

PRINTED BY ORDER OF HER MAJESTY'S GOVERNMENT FOR INDIA.



TRÜBNER AND CO., 60, PATERNOSTER Row, LONDON.

F. A. BROCKHAUS, LEIPZIG.

1872.

S. Zano. L. 79.
4-1.



DEDICATED

TO

SIR BARTLE FRERE, K. C. B.

AS A TOKEN

OF HIGHEST REGARD AND ESTEEM

BY HIS OBEDIENT HUMBLE SERVANT

E. TRUMPP.



P R E F A C E.

THE Grammar, which is now offered to the learned Public, has been compiled already years ago, but as there were no means of printing it, it was laid aside hopelessly. That it has finally been rescued from oblivion is owing to the enlightened patronage of Her Majesty's Government for India, which liberally granted the printing expenses.

I am afraid, that I have given rather too much than too little by endeavouring to render the Grammar as complete as possible; I trust, however, that this object may have been attained to some extent at least.

A beginner will do well, after he has acquainted himself with the Sindhī system of sounds, to commence at once with the declensions and to turn bye and bye to the formation of themes after he has got a fair insight into the fabric of the language. The *Introduction* is intended for those only, who wish to penetrate more deeply into the origin and nature of the Sindhī.

The quotations, which I have added, I hope may prove useful to introduce the beginner into the study of the Sindhī literature; most of the quotations are taken from my edition of the *Shāha jō Risālō*¹⁾, but many others also from manuscripts in my possession, which I collected during my former stay in Sindh. What we need now most is a critically sifted edition of the popular Sindhī tales and songs, which are very numerous and from which a good collection might be made. The next desideratum is an enlarged Sindhī Dictionary, as the late Capt. Geo. Stack's Dictionary, which is very good as far as it goes, is not sufficient for reading older or more difficult pieces. We may fairly expect, that these deficiencies will soon be remedied by Mr. Peile, the present energetic and enlightened Director of Public Instruction in the Bombay Presidency, for which the thanks of the learned Public will be due to him.

The Sindhī is by no means an easy language, it is on the contrary beset with more intricacies and difficulties than any of its Prākrit sisters. But on the other hand it amply repays to the philologist the labours he bestows on it; for the Sindhī has preserved a great many forms, for which we look in vain in the

1) Published with the title:

Sindhī Literature. The Divān of Abd-ul-Latif, known by the name of: *Shāha jō Risālō*, 739 pages. Printed by F. A. Brockhaus, Leipzig, 1866.

In the quotations Sh. stands as an abbreviation for it.

cognate idioms. For the purpose of intercomparing the modern Ārian dialects the Sindhī is therefore invaluable. For this reason we have pointed out, in the form of *annotations*, the relation of the Sindhī with the Sanskrit-Prākrit on the one hand and with the modern cognate idioms on the other hand, to give some impulse to a comparative study of the North-Indian Vernaculars, which as yet has been totally neglected.

The Sindhī Grammar of the late Capt. Stack is an accurate and meritorious work, but as all first attempts (for the Sindhī Grammar of Wathen does not deserve the name) incomplete and destitute of a Syntax. I sincerely wish, that the deficiencies of his work, from the emendation and enlargement of which he was prevented by an untimely death, may have been made up by the Grammar now offered to the Public.

The English reader will no doubt meet in this Grammar with many an expression, which he will consider as erroneous or ill-chosen. For all such and similar mistakes I must beg his pardon, which the kind reader surely will not withhold, when he is told, that the idiom, into which I endeavoured to clothe my thoughts, is not my mother-tongue.

Whilst this Grammar was passing through the press, I had gone to India for the purpose of translating the Sikh Granth. In order not to delay too long the printing of it, I could only see and correct a proof-sheet once. The unavoidable consequence was,

that owing to the letters of this Grammar being loaded with so many dots and distinguishing marks, a number of misprints has crept in, which the student is requested to correct first after the affixed list of misprints.

REUTLINGEN, 4th June, 1872.

E. TRUMPP.

CONTENTS.

	Page.
INTRODUCTION. On the relation of the Sindhī to the Sanskrit and Prākrit	I—L
The Sindhī Alphabet. §. 1.	1—6
I. The Sindhī consonantal system. §. 2.	7—21
II. The Sindhī vowel system. §. 4.	21—28
Other orthographic signs. §. 5.	28—30
Section I. The Formation of Themes in Sindhī.	
Chapter I. The termination of Sindhī nouns. §. 6.	31—44
Chapter II. Primary themes. §. 7.	45
I. Formation of abstract nouns. §. 8.	46—51
II. Formation of appellatives and attributives. §. 9.	51—57
Chapter III. Secondary themes. §. 10.	
I. Formation of abstract nouns	57—62
II. Formation of appellatives, attributives and possessives	63—77
Chapter IV. Formation of diminutives. §. 11.	77—80
Chapter V. Compound nouns. §. 12.	80—88
Chapter VI. Gender of nouns. §. 13.	88—98
Chapter VII. Formation of the Feminine from masc. bases. §. 14.	98—103

Section II. The Inflexion of Nouns.

Chapter VIII. I. Formation of the Plural. §. 15. 104—111

II. Formation of cases; case - affixes. §. 16. 111—122

III. The Formative. §. 17. 122—128

Survey of the Sindhī declensional process.

Declension of the Genitive affix **جو** and **سندو**.

§. 18 128—130

I. Declension 130—134

II. Declension 134—136

III. Declension 136—137

IV. Declension 138

V. Declension 139

VI. Declension 140—142

VII. Declension 142—144

Chapter IX. Adjectives. §. 19.

Position of adjectives 145—148

Formation of gender. §. 20 148—152

Adjectives ending in 'u' 152

Adjectives ending in ō 153

Adjectives ending in ū, ā 154

Adjectives ending in ī, e 155

Comparison of Adjectives. §. 21 156—157

Chapter X. Numeral adjectives. §. 22.

I. Cardinal numbers 157—169

Inflexion of cardinal numbers. §. 23 169—173

II. Ordinal numbers. §. 24 174—176

Inflexion of the ordinals. §. 25 176—178

III. Arithmetical figures. §. 26 178—179

IV. Collective numbers. §. 27 180—181

V. Proportional numbers. §. 28 182—183

VI. Reduplicative numbers. §. 29 184

VII. Fractional numbers. §. 30 184—188

Chapter XI. Pronouns.

I. Pronouns of the I and II Person. §. 31 188—194

II. Demonstrative pronouns. §. 32 194—202

III. The relative pronoun. §. 33 202—204

	Page.
IV. The correlative pronoun. §. 34	204—206
V. Interrogative pronouns. §. 35	206—209
VI. Indefinite pronouns. §. 36	210—215
VII. The reciprocal pronoun. §. 37	215—217
VIII. Pronominal adjectives. §. 38	218—224
IX. Pronominal suffixes. §. 39	225
I. Pronominal suffixes attached to nouns. §. 40	227—242
II. Pronominal suffixes attached to postpositions and adverbs. §. 41.	242—249

Section III. The Verb.

Chapter XII. Formation of the verbal themes.

§. 42.	250—260
The Imperative. §. 43	260—268
The participle present. §. 44	268—271
The participle past. §. 45	271—279
The participle of the Future passive. §. 46.	279—280
Indeclinable past participles. §. 47	280—284

Chapter XIII. Formation of the tenses and persons. §. 48.

I. Simple tenses	284
1) The Potential.	285—287
2) The Aorist	288—291
3) The Future	291—293
II. Compound tenses.	
1) The compound Potential	293
2) The present tense	293—295
3) The habitual Aorist	295
4) The Imperfect	295
5) The Perfect	296
6) The Pluperfect	296
7) The compound future tenses	297

Chapter XIV. The auxiliary Verbs.

A) The auxiliary verb هَرَنُ. §. 49	297—304
B) The auxiliary verb تَهَنُنُ. §. 50	305—312

Chapter XV. Inflection of the regular verb.

A) Inflection of the neuter verb. §. 51	312—322
---	---------

	Page.
B) Inflexion of the transitive Verb. §. 52.	
1) Active Voice	322—330
2) Passive Voice	330—338
Chapter XVI. Compound Verbs. §. 53.	338—344
Chapter XVII. The Verb with the pronominal suffixes. §. 54.	
1) The pronominal suffixes attached to the auxiliary verbs هُوْنَ and تِهِنَّ. §. 55.	346—360
2) The pronominal suffixes attached to the regular verb. §. 56.	360—379
 Section IV. Adverbs, Postpositions, Conjunctions and Interjections.	
Chapter XVIII. Adverbs. §. 57.	380—398
Chapter XIX. Postpositions. §. 58.	398—409
Chapter XX. Conjunctions. §. 59.	410—417
Chapter XXI. Interjections. §. 60.	418—424

S Y N T A X.

I. THE ANALYTICAL PART.

Section I. The Noun.

Chapter I.	On the absence of the article.	§. 61.	425—428
Chapter II.	On the gender of Nouns.	§. 62.	428—431
Chapter III.	Number.	§. 63.	431—435
Chapter IV.	Cases of the Noun.		
I.	The Nominative.	§. 64	435—438
II.	The Vocative.	§. 65	438—441
III.	The Instrumental.	§. 66	441—443
IV.	The Genitive.	§. 67	443—452
V.	The Dative.	§. 68	452—455
VI.	The Accusative.	§. 69	455—459
VII.	The Locative.	§. 70	459—463
VIII.	The Ablative.	§. 71	463—466
Chapter V.	Pronouns.		
I.	Personal Pronouns.	§. 72	466—469

	Page.
II. Demonstrative pronouns. §. 73	470—472
III. The relative and correlative pronoun. §. 74.	472—476
IV. The interrogative pronouns. §. 75	476—477
V. The indefinite pronouns. §. 76	477—478
VI. The reflexive pronoun. §. 77	478—481

Section II. The Verb.

Chapter VI. The Infinitive. §. 78.	481—483
Chapter VII. The Gerundive. §. 79.	483—484
Chapter VIII. The Participles. §. 80.	484—491
Chapter IX. The tenses of the verb.	
I. The Present. §. 83	491—494
II. The Imperfect. §. 84	494
III. The Aorist. §. 85.	
1) The simple Aorist	495
2) The habitual Aorist	496—497
IV. The Perfect. §. 86	497—498
V. The Pluperfect. §. 87	498—499
VI. The Future and Future past. §. 88	500—501
Chapter X. The Moods.	
I. The Indicative. §. 89	501
II. The Potential. §. 90	502—504
III. The Imperative. §. 91	505—506

II. THE SYNTHETICAL PART.

Section III. The simple Sentence.

Chapter XI. Subject and Predicate. §. 61.	507—508
Chapter XII. Concord of the Subject and Predicate. §. 93.	509
Chapter XIII. Enlargement of the sentence by a near and remote object. §. 94.	510—513
Chapter XIV. Enlargement of the sentence by a nearer definition of the verb as predicate. §. 95.	513—514
Chapter XV. Omission of the verb as predicate. §. 96.	515

	Page.
Section IV. The compound Sentence.	
Chapter XVI. I. Coordination of sentences. §. 97.	516—517
Chapter XVII. Contraction of coordinate sentences into one; concord of two and more subjects and predicates. §. 98.	517—519
Chapter XVIII. II. Subordination of sentences. §. 99.	
1) Subordination of a sentence by subjunctive particles. §. 100	520—525
2) Subordination of a sentence by the relative and relative adverbs. §. 101.	525—526
3) Subordination of a sentence by an interrogative pronoun or particle. §. 102 . . .	526
Chapter XIX. Abbreviation of subordinate sentences. §. 103.	527
Chapter XX. On the indirect oration. §. 104.	528
—	
Appendix I. On the Sindhī Calendar.	529—533
Appendix II. Survey of the different Sindhī-Arabic Alphabets.	534—535
—	



INTRODUCTION.

THE RELATIONSHIP OF THE SINDHI TO THE SANSKRIT AND PRAKRIT.

The Sindhī is a pure Sanskritical language, more free from foreign elements than any other of the North Indian vernaculars. The old Prākṛit grammarians may have had their good reason, to designate the Apabhraṁsha dialect, from which the modern Sindhī is immediately derived, as the lowest of all the Prākṛit dialects; but if we compare now the Sindhī with its sister-tongues, we must assign to it, in a grammatical point of view, the first place among them. It is much more closely related to the old Prākṛit, than the Marāṭhī, Hindī, Panjābī and Bangālī of our days, and it has preserved an exuberance of grammatical forms, for which all its sisters may well envy it. For, while all the modern vernaculars of India¹⁾ are already in a state of complete decomposition, the old venerable mother-tongue being hardly recognisable in her degenerate daughters, the Sindhī has, on the contrary, preserved most important fragments of it and erected for itself a grammatical structure, which surpasses in beauty of execution and internal harmony by far the loose and levelling construction of its sisters.

The Sindhī has remained steady in the first stage of decomposition after the old Prākṛit, whereas all the

1) In speaking of the modern vernaculars of India we exclude throughout the Dravidian idioms of the South, which belong to quite a different stock of languages.

other cognate dialects have sunk some degrees deeper; we shall see in the course of our introductory remarks, that the rules, which the Prākṛit grammarian Kramadishvara has laid down in reference to the Apabhraṃsha, are still recognisable in the present Sindhī, which by no means can be stated of the other dialects. The Sindhī has thus become an independant language, which, though sharing a common origin with its sister-tongues, is very materially differing from them.

The Sindhī, which is spoken within the boundaries of Sindh proper, is divided into three dialects, which grammatically differ very little from each other, but offer considerable discrepancies in point of pronunciation. The dialect of lower Sindh, comprising the Indus-Delta and the sea-coast, is called **लाड़ी** lārī, from **लाड़ु** lāru¹), by which lower Sindh is designated. The dialect, which is spoken north of Haiderābad, is called **सिराईकी** sirāikī, from **सिरो** sirō, by which Upper Sindh is designated; the dialect in vogue in the Thar, or desert of Sindh, is called **थरैली** tharēli, from **थरु** tharu, the desert.

The dialect of Lār, though employed in most Sindhī compositions, is not the purest; the vowels are frequently contracted and the consonants too much softened down by assimilation. The northern or Sirāiki dialect has remained far more original and has preserved the purity of pronunciation with more tenaciousness, than the southern one. With reference to this superiority of the northern dialect to the southern the Sindhīs like to quote the proverb:

लाड़ु जो पढ़ो सिरो जो ढगो

lāra jō paṛhyō sirō jō ḍhaḡō.

The learned man of Lār is an ox in Upper Sindh.

1) **लाड़ु** is not a proper noun, but an appellation, signifying: „sloping ground;“ the same is the case with **सिरो** sirō, which signifies the upper country.

The dialect of the Thar is vigorous but uncouth and already intermingled with the Mārṣārī; it is spoken by the Shikārīs, Dhedhs (देहु carrier) and other out-cast tribes. As far as I know, there are no literary compositions extant in this dialect.

The object of these introductory remarks is to show the relative position, which the Sindhī holds to the Sanskrit and Prākṛit; and in order to elucidate this subject, we shall lay down the rules and principles, by which the present Sindhī vowel and consonantal system has been derived from the Sanskrit by the medium of the Prākṛit. Thus, we hope, a solid basis also will be gained for intercomparing the Sindhī with its other sister-tongues. By this process alone, which will enable us, to assign to the Ārian stock, what has been taken from it, though much altered now in shape and outward appearance by dint of contraction and assimilation, we shall on the other hand be able to trace out a certain residuum of vocables, which we must allot to an old aboriginal language, of which neither name nor extent is now known to us, but which, in all probability, was of the Tātār stock of languages and spread throughout the length and breadth of India before the irruption of the Ārian race, as all the other vernaculars contain a similar non-Ārian residuum of words, which have been already designated as "provincial" by the old Prākṛit grammarians.

The following investigation is destined for such as may be competent, by their previous studies, to penetrate more deeply into the real nature of the modern idioms of India, and for them, I trust, these outlines may prove useful and at the same time incentive, to follow up more deeply the intricate path, which I have pointed out.

I. THE SINDHI VOWEL SYSTEM.¹⁾

§. 1.

We consider first the single vowels, their change, substitution, contraction or elision in Sindhi.

1) च्च (ṛ) and its permutations.

The Sindhi, like the old Prākṛit, has cut off च्च from its system of sounds; for it is either treated as a vowel, in which case it is changed to i, a etc., or as a consonant, in which latter case it coincides with र (r).

At the beginning of a word च्च, if standing by itself, is changed to रि (ri), just as in Prākṛit, e. g. Sindhi रिछु riṇhu, bear, Prāk. रिछ, Sansk. च्छस.

But if च्च be joined to a consonant, the following rules hold good:

a) ṛ is usually dissolved into i, as: डिसणु disanu, to see, Sansk. दृष् (but Prāk. दक्ख), Hindi देखना; विछूं viṇhū, scorpion, Prāk. विञ्जुञ्जो (or विञ्जुञ्जो), Sansk. कृश्चिक; किञ्जो kiō, done, Prāk. किद, Sansk. कृत; गिरहणु giṇhaṇu; to take, Sansk. गृह्ण, Prāk. गेणह.

b) ṛ is dissolved into u, if the consonant, to which it is joined, happens to be a labial, as: बुढो būdhō, old, Prākṛit on the other hand वड्ढ, Sansk. वृद्ध; मुञ्जो muō, dead, Prāk. मुदो or already मुञ्जो (by elision of द), Sansk. मृत. In such instances, as सुणणु sunaṇu, to

1) In order to facilitate the intercomparison of the Sindhi with the Sanskrit and Prākṛit we have used in these introductory remarks a modified Sanskrit alphabet, the particulars of which see further on under the Sindhi alphabets. The romanized transcription, which we have added-every-where, is in accordance with the Standard Alphabet by Prof. Dr. Lepsius, 2^d edition.

hear, Prāk. **सुण**, the original root-vowel (Sansk. **शु**) has been preserved.

c) In most instances though *r* is dissolved into *ar*, irrespective of the consonant to which it may be joined, as:

मरणु maraṇu, to die, Prāk. **मर्**, Sansk. **मृ**.

भरणु bharanu, to fill, Prāk. **भर्**, Sansk. **भृ**.

धरणु dharanu, to place, Prāk. **धर्**, Sansk. **धृ**.

सरणु saraṇu, to move, Prāk. **सर**, Sansk. **सृ**.

In such like instances the Sindhī, as well as all the other cognate dialects, is quite in accordance with Prākṛit usage, the Sanskrit verbal noun being taken as the base of the infinitive in the modern idioms. In other instances though the Sindhī is not so liberal in dissolving *r*, as the Prākṛit; it has managed, on the contrary, in many cases to preserve *r* by changing it to *ir* or transposing the same, as: **मिर्देगुं** mirdangu (or: **मिर्धेगुं** mirdhangu) a tabor, Prāk. **मुईगो**, Sansk. **मृदङ्ग**; **विरखु** virkhu, taurus (planet), Sansk. **वृष**; **हिरधो** hirdhō¹), heart, Prāk. **हिअअं**, Sansk. **हृदयम्**, but the more Prākṛitical form **हिअो** hīō, is also in use in Sindhī.

In a few cases *r* has been preserved by being changed to simple *r* (subscribed), in conjunction with a dental *t*, *d*, or a cerebral *t*, *d*; as: **ज्राट्रो** jāṭrō, son-in-law, Prāk. **जामाउअो**, Sansk. **जामातृक**; in this form **म** has been elided, which is rather of rare occurrence, and the dental has passed into a cerebral, the affix **क** being dropped altogether; similarly **माट्रे** māṭrē, and its derivatives, as: **माट्रेजो** māṭrējō, **माट्रेतो** māṭrētō etc., corresponding to the Prākṛit form **माउअो**, Sansk. **मातृक**.

1) The aspiration of **ध** is caused by the following *r*, which very frequently aspirates a preceding consonant, as we shall have often occasion to notice.

2) The Diphthongs ऐ ai and औ au.

Properly speaking there are no diphthongs in Sindhī, as little as in Prākṛit; ai is generally pronounced loosely as a-i, and au as a-u. The Sindhī, however, is somewhat tighter in its pronunciation and not quite so effeminate as the Prākṛit, so that it will depend more or less on the option of the speaker, if he will contract ai or au into a real diphthong, or pronounce them separately as two distinct vowels. From the manner of writing, no safe conclusion can be drawn, as a fixed system of orthography is still a desideratum. It may however be laid down as a general rule, that the Sindhī ignores diphthongs and pronounces them as two distinct vowels.

a) The diphthong ai.

α) In such words, as are borrowed from the Arabic or Persian, the original diphthong is generally retained, and written and pronounced accordingly, as: सैरु sairu, journey; Arab. سَيْرٌ; पैदा paidā, created, Pers. پَیْدَا; likewise in such nouns, as have been taken from the Hindūstānī, as: पैसो paisō, a pice. On the rest it is quite optional, to write and pronounce for instance सैन saina or सइन sa-ina, hint; the Hindūs prefer the loose Prākṛit pronunciation (a-i, a-u), the Muhammedans more the Arabic or Persian method (ai, au).

β) But generally the diphthong ai is contracted into ē in Sindhī, which is always long, and never aniceps, as in Prākṛit; e. g. वेरु vēru, enmity, prāk. वइरं (Lassen quotes also a form वेरं), Sansk. वैरं; वेजु vēju, physician, Prāk. वेज्ज, Sansk. वैद्य; सेंधोलूण sēndhōlūṇu, rocksalt (literally, Sindh-salt), from the Sansk. सैधव, Sindhī, and लवण salt (Prāk. लोण).

In a similar manner also अय ay, which in Sindhī is treated in the same way as ai, is frequently

contracted into ē, as: नेणु nēṇu, eye, Prāk. णञ्जणं, Sansk. नयनं; सेजा sējā, bed, Prāk. सेज्जा, Sansk. शय्या.

γ) The original diphthong ai may also be contracted to ī, as: धीर्जु dhīrju, firmness, Sansk. धैर्य, Prāk. धीर. This Sindhī form is so far a proof for the correctness of the Prākṛit rule, as धीर्जु can only be derived from धैर्य, and not from धीर itself; similarly Hindī धीर्ज.

b) The diphthong au.

The same, that has been remarked on the diphthong ai, may also be stated of the diphthong au; it may be optionally pronounced as a diphthong, but is more commonly separated into its component vowels.

a) This diphthong is generally preserved in words borrowed from the Arabic or Persian, as: दौर dauru, a period, arab. دَوْر; औरत aurata, woman, Arab. عَوْرَت; also in pure Sindhī words it is used and written, as: औखो aukhō, difficult; भौर bhaūru, a large black bee, Sansk. भमर; लौगु laūgu, a clove, Sansk. लवङ्ग. In such pure Sindhī words though the diphthong may also, after the analogy of the Prākṛit, be separated into a-u, as: वडणु va-uṇaṇu, to seek, or: वौडणु vaurāṇu; भउणु bha-uṇaṇu, to wander about, or: भौणु bhaūṇaṇu.

At the end of a word no diphthong is admissible, and it must always be pronounced अउ a-u, for the sake of inflexion, as: सउ sa-u, hundred (Prāk. सञ्ज) जउ ja-u, barley, Pers. جَو, Sansk. यव; चउ ca-u, say, imperative of चवणु, to say.

β) But very frequently this diphthong is contracted to ō, as: गोरो gōrō, fair, Sansk. गौर; जोभनु jōbhanu, time of youth, Prāk. जोवणं, Sansk. यौवनम्; मोडु mōṛu, a crest, Prāk. मउडं (Sansk. मुकुट); भोणो bhōṇō, or भउणो bha-uṇō, a vagabond. The same rule also is

occasionally applied to Arabic or Persian words, as: **कोम** kōma, a clan, or: **कौम** kauma, Arab. قَوْم.

γ) The diphthong au may also be contracted to ū, as: **सूरिहाई** sūrihāī, heroism, Prāk. **सोरिअं** Sansk. शौर्य; **लुण** lūṇu, salt, Prāk. **लोण**, Sansk. **लवणं** (अव being treated like au).

§. 2.

3) The vowels a, ā; i, ī; u, ū; ē; ō.

Having considered the diphthongs ai and au in their relative position to the Sanskrit and Prākrit, we submit now the common Sindhī vowels to a nearer examination.

a) The vowels a, ā.

The short vowel **अ** a, is more tenaciously kept fast in Sindhī, than in the Prākrit, and the Sindhī very frequently recurs directly again to the original Sanskrit, as: **पको** pakō, cooked, Sansk. **पक्क**, but Prāk. **पिक्क**; **अंगारु** angāru, coal, Sansk. **अङ्गार**, but Prāk. **इङ्गालो**; **सुपनो** supanō, dream, Sansk. **स्वप्न**, but Prāk. **सिबिण**; **वलि** vale, a creeper, Sansk. **वल्ली**, but Prāk. **वेल्लि**. But there is no lack of examples on the other hand, in which original a has been likewise shortened to i, as: **खिमा** khimā, patience, Prāk. **खमा**, Sansk. **क्षमा**; **मिज** miña, marrow, Sansk. **मज्जा**.

In this way a has been shortened to i in all those forms, which are already alleged by the Prākrit grammarian Kramadīshvara in the Apabhraṇsha dialect (compare: Lassen, Instit. Linguae Prāk. p. 454) as: **जिअ-तिअ** jīa-tīa (Apabhraṇsha: **जिध-तिध**, instead of **जध-तध**); **जिति-तिति** jite-tite, where-there (Apabhraṇsha: **जेत्यु-तेत्यु**¹⁾), from **यच-तच**); **किति** kite, where? (Apa-

1) e is in Prākrit before a double consonant = ॐ = ॐ.

bhransha: **केत्यु**, from an original form **क्यु**, instead of **क्च**, thence the common Sansk. form **कुच**). The Sindhī adverb **ईअ** īa or **ईअ** īa, thus, corresponds to the Prāk. **इअ**, and is regularly derived from the Sansk. adverb **इयम्** (not from **इति**, which Lassen has already doubted) with the elision of h (īa = iha).

Short a is occasionally, but rarely, changed to u, as: **राउरु** rā-uru, tax, Sansk. **राजकर** (but not in the examples quoted by Lassen §. 173, 3).

Long ā is in Sindhī frequently preserved in such forms, where in Prākrit it has been already shortened (owing to the contraction or assimilation of the following compound consonant): as: **बैरागी** bairāgī, a religious ascetic, Prāk. **बेरग**, Sansk. **बैराग्य**; **मारिख** mārīkha, way, Prāk. **मग्ग**, Sansk. **मार्ग**; **जाट्रा** jātrā, pilgrimage, Prāk. **जत्ता**, Sansk. **यात्रा**; **वाघु**, vāghu, tiger, Prāk. **वग्घु**, Sansk. **व्याघ्र**. Long ā has been shortened in **कोडरि** kō-dare, spade, Sansk. **कुदाल**.

Long ā is weakened to ī in the following adverbs, after the analogy of the Prākrit, as: **जडिहिं-तडिहिं** ja-dehē-ta-dehē, when-then; **कडिहिं** ka-dehē, when? which are derived from the Sansk. adverbs: **यदा-तदा**, **कदा**.

Long ā as a feminine termination of Prākrit nouns is in Sindhī occasionally permuted for ī or even ī (e), as: **वाई** vā-ī, speck, Prāk. **वाञ्जा**, Sansk. **वाच**; **धुरि** dhure, origin, Prāk. **धुरा**, Sansk. **धुर**. The only example of final **आ** of a masc. theme being changed to i is **राइ** rā-e, prince, Prāk. **राञ्जा**, Sansk. **राजा** nom.

In a certain number of words, ending in the Sansk. crude state in **तृ** (but nom. sing. **ता**), final ā has been changed in Sindhī (as now and then already in Prākrit) to u, as: **पिउ**, father, Prāk. **पिआ** (by elision of **त**), Sansk. nom. **पिता**; **भाउ** bhāu, brother, Prāk. **भाञ्जा**, Sansk. **भाता**; and by the same levelling process: **माउ**

māu, mother, Prāk. **माआ**, Sansk. **माता**; राउ rāu, prince (besides राइ); पंधु pandhu, journey, Sansk. **पन्था** m.

As regards the vowel changes in the midst of a word, the Sindhī adheres on the average to Prākṛit usage, as: पथरु patharu, bed, Prāk. **पत्थर**, Sansk. **प्रस्तार**, Hindī **बिस्तर**), different from the else identical word पथरु stone, Prāk. **पत्थर**, Sansk. **प्रस्तर** (Hindī **पत्थर**); मया mayā, compassion, Sansk. **माया** (Hindī likewise **मया**); देवली dēvalī, temple (in Sindhī with the fem. termination ī), Prāk. **देउल्ल**, Sansk. **देवालय** (Hindī likewise **देवल**).

b) The vowels i, ī.

Short i is in Sindhī pronounced like short ě, when preceded or followed by ह h, and regularly so, when ending a word, as: इहड़ो ěharō, such a one, मिहिति mēhētē, a mosque; गालि gāle, word. Short i corresponds therefore often to the Prākṛit ए ē, which is considered short, when followed by a compound consonant, whereas ए ē is in Sindhī always long; e. g. Prāk. **गेरह**, Sindhī **गिरह** (**गिरहणु**), to take; निंद्र nindra, sleep, Prāk. **खेह** or **खिह**, Sansk. **निद्रा**; चिन्ह činhu, sign, Prāk. **चेन्ध** or **चिन्ध**, Sansk. **चिह्न**.

It is a curious phenomenon in Sindhī, that occasionally a short i is interpolated in a syllable, which the effeminate pronunciation finds too harsh for the ear. This is particularly the case, when a syllable closes with a double n or n followed by another consonant (especially a liquida). The consequence of this effeminate pronunciation is, that the n thus separated by the interpolation of i, becomes nasalized, as: सइन sāina, sign, hint, instead of सन्न, from संज्ञा; सइसार sāisāru, world, instead of संसार; मइजल māijala, a day's journey, instead of मंजल (منزل), and is frequently no longer heard at all, especially

in the mouth of the Mūhammedans, who write: **مَيْزَل**
ma-izala, **سَيْسَار** sa-isāru etc.

Lengthened is ī in **की** kī, what, Prākṛit already **की**, from the Sanskrit **किम्**; further in **शीहु** śīhu, lion, Prāk. **सीह**, Sansk. **सिंह**; but not in **जिभ** jibha, tongue, Prāk. **जीहा**, Sansk. **जिह्वा**.

Long ī is kept fast by the Sindhī in many instances, where in Prākṛit it has been shortened to i, in consequence of the assimilation of consonants, as: **तीर्थु** tīrthu, a holy bathing-place, Prāk. **तिथ्य**, Sansk. **तीर्थ**.

Long ī is rarely shortened to i, and this only, when ending a noun, as: **नारि** nāre, a woman, Prāk. et Sansk. **नारी**.

Long ī passes into ē in those instances, which have been already marked out by the old Prākṛit grammarians, as Prākṛit **केरिस**, **एरिस** etc., Sansk. **कीदृश**, **ईदृश** etc. The corresponding Sindhī forms are: **केहरो**, kēharō, what? (by transposition of **ह**, instead of **केहो**); **केरु** kēru, who, (by elision of **ह**, instead of **केहु** kēhu; in the Apabhraṁsha dialect r on the other hand has been dropped, as: **केही**). The Prākṛit form **एरिस** (Apabhraṁsha **एही**) has not been taken up by the Sindhī, but other forms have been created from the pronominal bases **की**, **जो**, **तो**, **इहो**, **उहो**, by adding to them the diminutive affix **ड़ो** rō, as: **किहड़ो** kēharō, of what kind; **जिहड़ो-तिहड़ो** jēharō — tēharō, of which kind — of such a kind; **इहड़ो** ēharō, of this kind, **उहड़ो** uharō, of that kind.

c) The vowels u, ū.

On the whole the Sindhī has taken up those changes, which these vowels have been made subject to in Prākṛit;

but in some special cases it has remained more original, than the Prākṛit, as: **पुरुषु** puruṣu, man, Prāk. **पुरिसो**, Sansk. **पुरुषः**; **मुखिरी**, mukhirī, a bud, Prāk. **मउलं**, Sansk. **मुकुलं**.

U is changed to a in: **गरो** ġarō, heavy, Prāk. **गरुअ**, Sansk. **गुरु**; **इबलु** ḍaḇalu, weak (Prāk. still **दुबल**), Sansk. **दुर्बल**; or it may be dropped altogether, as: **परि** pare, on, upon, Prāk. **उबरि**, Sansk. **उपरि**.

U is changed to ō only in the following instances, as: **मोती** mōtī, pearl, Prāk. **मोत्त** (mōtta) Sansk. **मुक्त**; **पोथी** pōthī, book, Prāk. **पोत्थुओ**, Sansk. **पुस्तक**; **कोइरि** kōḍare, a spade, Sansk. **कुदाल**.

Long ū is preserved more tenaciously in Sindhī, than in Prākṛit, e. g. **नूरो** nūro, a hollow ring on the ankle, Prāk. **खेउरं** Sansk. **नूपुर**. — In such cases, where original u has been depressed to ō in Prākṛit, the original vowel generally reappears in Sindhī, as: **उखिरि** ukhirī, a mortar, Prāk. **ओकखलं**, Sansk. **उलखल**; **पुठि** puṭhe, power, Prāk. **पोठिठ**, Sansk. **पुष्टि**, which is, though identical in form, not to be confounded with **पुठि** puṭhe, the back, Sansk. **पृष्ट**, Hindī **पीठ**.

d) The vowels ē and ō.

In Sindhī, as well as in Prākṛit, ē and ō are no longer looked upon as Guṇa-vowels, but as simple sounds. In Sindhī ē and ō are always long, never aneeps, as in Prākṛit; for the short Prākṛitical ē short i is substituted in Sindhī, as: **हिकु** hiku, one, Prāk. **एक्क**; and for the short Prākṛitical ō short u, as stated already.

Both vowels keep their place very steadfastly and frequently reappear in such cases, where they have been

already shortened in Prākṛit, owing to the assimilation of consonants, as: प्रेम प्रेम, love, Prāk. पेम् (pēm); जेभनु jēbhanu, time of youth, Prāk. जेव्वणं (jēvva-nam); जोगु jōgu, fit, Prāk. जोग्ग, Sansk. योग्य.

Quite exceptional is the shortening of ō to u in लुहरु luharu, blacksmith, instead of: लोहकार (Sansk. लोहकार), where ā has been likewise shortened to ă; and the change of ē to ī in पीजु pīju, draught, Sansk. पेय; खी khī, welfare, Sansk. क्षेम; नीहु nīhu, love, Prāk. ऐहो, Sansk. ऐह; मीहु mīhu, rain, Prāk. मेहो, Sansk. मेघ.

When ending a noun ē and ō are frequently shortened to ě and ũ respectively, especially in poetry; but these changes being peculiar to Sindhī, we shall consider them hereafter separately. The peculiarity of the Apabhraṃsha dialect, as noted by the grammarian Kramadīśvara, is fully borne out by the modern Sindhī; it uses likewise in the locative singular ě (i) instead of ē, as पड़ेहि pa-ṛēhe, in a foreign country, घरि gharē, in a house etc. In the same way, as the Apabhraṃsha, the Sindhī also changes to a great extent the Prākṛit termination ō to u, as: कमु kamu, business, Prāk. कम्मो etc. The same may also be said of the ablative sing. termination आदो (= ā—ō with elision of द) which is commonly shortened to ādu in the Apabhraṃsha dialect, and in Sindhī further to ā-u: as घराउ gharā-u, from a house. This old Sindhī ablative termination is now-a-days generally contracted to अँ अँ (ā being likewise shortened to ă, and to avoid the hiatus, both vowels being nasalized) but ā-u is still very frequently used in poetry.

§. 3.

The elision, contraction and insertion of vowels.

These three points, so important in the old Prākṛit, we may, as far as the Sindhī is concerned, sum up under the following brief remarks:

a) An elision of vowels takes far more rarely place in Sindhī, than in the Prākṛit, because the consonants do not so easily give way; there is however no lack of instances, in which the Sindhī accedes to Prākṛit usage, as: दुआरो duārō, temple (different from दुआर door, Sansk. द्वार), Sansk. देवालय, where ē has been elided; सिआरो siārō, the cold season, Prāk. सीआरो, Sansk. शीतकाल; कुंभर kumbharu, potter, Sansk. कुंभकार; पखाल pakhāla, a pair of leather-bags, Sansk. पयःखल्ल; रिणु riṇu, the desert (the Rīṇ), Sansk. इरिणं; धिअ dhia, daughter (prākṛit already धीआ, see Lassen p. 172, note); बि bi, also, Prāk. बि, Sansk. अपि.

b) As regards the contraction of vowels, the Sindhī coincides more fully with the Prākṛit, though in some instances I have noticed a deviation from Prākṛit analogy, as: चौथों čōṭhō, the fourth, Prāk. चउत्थ, Sansk. चतुर्थ; मोर moru, peacock, Prāk. मोर, Sansk. मयुर; लूण lūṇu, salt, Prāk. लोण, Sansk. लवण; सोनु sōnu, gold, Sansk. सुवर्ण.

c) With reference to the insertion of vowels the Sindhī agrees on the whole with the Prākṛit.

α) An original compound consonant is separated by the insertion of a vowel, to render its pronunciation more easy for a Sindhī organ. The insertion of a respective vowel depends on the sequence of vowels or the varga of the consonant, which is to be separated from the preceding one, though this rule is by no means strictly adhered to.

a is inserted in cases like the following: सराह sa-rāha, praise, Prāk. सलाहा, Sansk. छाया; सलोकु sa-lōku, a ślōka, Prāk. सिलोच्च, Sansk. श्लोक.

i is inserted, as: इस्त्री istri, woman, Prāk. इत्थी, Sansk. स्त्री; वरिहु varēhu, year, Prāk. वरिसो, Sansk. वर्ष; मिलणु milanu, to be obtained, Prāk. मिलाण, Sansk. root म्लै.

u is inserted, as: सुपनो supanō, dream, Prāk. सिबिण, Sansk. स्वप्न; सुमरणु sumaranu, to remember, Prāk. सुमर्, Sansk. स्मृ (root स्मृ).

β) On the other hand the Sindhī very frequently has gone a step farther and dispensed with the insertion of a vowel by pushing the root-vowel between the compound consonant and dropping the final consonant, as: सेणु sēnu, friend, Prāk. सणेह, Sansk. स्नेह; or more commonly it drops simply one of the compound consonants, as: नुहु nuhu, daughter-in-law, Prāk. सोणह, Sansk. सुषा; सघणु saghanu, to be able, Prāk. सकणोमि, Sansk. सक्रोमि.

§. 4.

Sandhi, Hiatus and Euphony.

The Sindhī, as well as the Prākrit, dispenses totally with the rules of Sandhī, and vowels may therefore meet, without being subject to the laws of euphony. To separate however in some measure concurring vowels, the Sindhī very liberally employs the use of Anusvāra, whereby a certain nasalizing pronunciation has been imparted to the language, which is in some measure disagreeable to our ear; e. g. झाँज āũ, I; सुखाँज su-khāũ, nom. plur. of सुखा, vows; स्वाँडु khāĩnu, to burn; गाँज gāũ, cow etc. The Anusvāra is further inserted, to facilitate the lengthened pronunciation of a

vowel, as: **मीहु** mīhu, rain, Sansk. **मेघ**; this is particularly the case, when a noun ends in a long vowel, as **प्री** prī, friend, **भू** bhū, earth etc.

On the other hand there are also examples to be met with, where original Anusvāra has been dropped in Sindhī, as: **मासु** māsu, or **माहु** māhu, meat, Sansk. **मांस**.

II. THE SINDHI CONSONANTAL SYSTEM.

§. 5.

In comparing the Sindhī letters (see below the Sindhī alphabets) with the Prākṛit alphabet, we see at the first glance, that the Sindhī has retained the letters **श** ś, **इ** ñ, **ज** ñ and **न** n, as single letters, which have disappeared already from the Prākṛit alphabet, except when preceding a consonant of their respective vargas.

श ś, is in Sindhī by no means a palatal sibilant, as in Sanskrit, but a simple dental sound, equally unknown in Sanskrit and Prākṛit, which has become naturalized in all the modern idioms (with the exception of the Gujārātī), and which corresponds to our common dental sh. It is derived from various sources:

a) from the Sanskrit palatal sibilant **श**, as: **शब्दु** śabdu, word, Sansk. **शब्द**; **शरीरु** śarīru, body (besides **सरीरु** sarīru), Sansk. **शरीर**; **शुक्रु** śukru, fridday, Sansk. **शुक्र**.

b) from the Sanskrit dental sibilant **स** s, as: **शीहु** śīhu, lion, Sansk. **सिंह**; **शाहू** śāhū, rich (by the Musal-māns generally pronounced **साऊ** sā-ū) Sansk. **साधु**; the s of Persian words is also now and then changed to ś, as: **शीख** śikha, a spit, Pers. **سیخ**.

c) from the Sanskrit cerebral sibilant **ष** ś, as: **कशणु** kaṣaṇu, to pull, Sansk. **कृष्** (Hindī **कच्चा**); **किशणु** kiṣṇu,

Krishna, Sansk. कृष्ण; विशु viṣu, world (besides विसु)
Sansk. विषय.

The letter ش of Arabic and Persian words is always rendered by श, as: शहरु śaharu, town, Pers. شهر; शाहु śāhu, king, Pers. شاه.

This is a very remarkable deviation from the principles of the Prākṛit, where the letter श has been changed to स, and further to ह.

In Sindhī the use of the letter श is confined to a limited number of indigenous vocables (those, which have been borrowed from foreign sources, not being taken into account), but that it is still to be considered more or less exceptional, may be concluded from the circumstance, that the Prākṛit rules concerning its permutations (श = स = ह) are still in full force in Sindhī, as: सुणणु su-ṇaṇu, to hear, Prāk. सुणामि, Sansk. शृणोमि; फासी phāsī, or फाही phāhī, a noose, Sansk. पाश; देसु dēsu, country, Sansk. देश; इह ḍaha, ten, Prāk. दह, Sansk. दश.

The same law holds good with reference to the cerebral ष ṣ, which like श, passes into स or ह, as: नुहु nuhu, daughter-in-law, Sansk. नुषा; विसु visu, world, Sansk. विषय; वेसु vēsu, disguise, Sansk. वेष.

श and ष are in Sindhī also frequently changed to छ ḥ, as: किछड़ी kiḥṇṇī, rise and pulse boiled together (Hindī खिचड़ी), Sansk. कृशरा; छंछरु ḥanḥaru, Saturday, Sansk. शनिश्चर; छ ḥa, or छह ḥaha, six, Prāk. छा, Sansk. षट्. This permutation seems in Sindhī to be so deeply rooted, that even the ش of Arabic and Persian words is occasionally changed to छ, as: छाल ḥāla (besides शाल), would to God, Arab. شاء الله; छाबसि ḥābase, bravo! Pers. شاباش; पाछाहु pāḥāhu, king, Pers. پادشاه.

The cerebral ष is occasionally written in Sindhī, but only by Brāhmans, and even with them its use depends on their relative knowledge of Sanskrit. We may therefore as well leave out this letter from the consonantal system of the Sindhī, as its actual pronunciation is completely ignored. In Capt. Stack's Sindhī Dictionary some words are given with the cerebral ष, such as: **विषई** viṣai, voluptuary, **डुष्टु** ḍuṣṭu, bad, **कष्टु** kaṣṭu, wretchedness etc., but the letter itself as well as those words are only known to the Brāhmans.

The guttural ङ ṅ, as well as the palatal ज ṛ, keep their place in Sindhī as single letters, e. g. **अङ्गु** aṅgu, body (Hindī **अङ्ग** or **आङ्ग**), Sansk. **अङ्गः**; **मङ्गु** maṅgu, to ask (Hindī **माङ्गना**), Sansk. **मार्गण** (r. **मृग**); **मज्जु** maṅgu, to heed (Hindī **माच्चा**), Sansk. **मानन**. In the kindred dialects both these nasals are only used in conjunction with a letter of their varga, and never as single consonants (the Panjābī alone being excepted).

The cerebral ण ṇ has not supplanted the dental ज in Sindhī, as in Prākṛit, but both are sharply kept asunder; ण ṇ is also used as a single consonant, in the same way as ङ ṅ and ज ṛ, and is of very frequent occurrence, in which respect the Panjābī alone agrees with the Sindhī, the other dialects using ण ṇ only before letters of the cerebral class, with the exception of the Hindūstānī, which is destitute of a cerebral nasal.

§. 6.

1) Single consonants at the beginning of a word.

At the beginning of a word the following consonants occur in Sindhī:

- 1) Gutturals: **क** k, **ख** kh; **ग** g, **घ** gh; — **ह** h; — — **ग** ḡ.
- 2) Palatals: **च** c, **छ** ch; **ज** j, **झ** jh; — **य** y; — **श** ś, **ज्ञ** j̥.
- 3) Cerebrals: **ट** ṭ, **ठ** ṭh; **ड** ḍ, **ढ** ḍh; — **इ** ṛ; — — **इ** ḍ.
- 4) Dentals: **त** t, **थ** th; **द** d, **ध** dh; **न** n; **र** r; **ल** l; **स** s; —
- 5) Labials: **प** p, **फ** ph; **ब** b, **भ** bh; **म** m; **व** v; — — **ब** ḃ.

This scheme deviates from that of the Prākṛit in some essential points, which we have partly already noticed.

Peculiar to the Sindhī is the cerebral इ र, beginning a word, which is not found in any of the other dialects. It is, however, also in Sindhī confined to the two interjections इ रे and इी री; the former is used in calling out to a man, the latter in calling out to a woman. There can be no doubt, that we have in both forms the Sansk. interjectional adverb अरे (which form is also used in Sindhī) which has been vindicated by Dr. Caldwell (Comparative Grammar of the Drāvidian languages, p. 440) to the Drāvidian idioms of the south, and the original signification of which is: o slave! The correctness of Dr. Caldwell's statement is borne out by the Sindhī, in which besides इ and इी, also अइ and अइी is used, corresponding to the Drāvidian aḍā.

All those consonants, as arrayed above, hold their place at the beginning of a word, when standing single; but when a noun happens to be compounded, then the first consonant of the second noun is no longer considered initial, and may therefore be elided, as: सिआरो siārō, the cold season, Prākṛit already मीआरो, Sansk. शीत—काल.

1) क k is not subject to aspiration, as in some examples of the Prākṛit, e. g. खुज्ज, Sansk. कुज्ज, Sindhī कुबो kuḃō, hump-backed; neither is k changed to च at the beginning of a word, but frequently at the end (being an affix) and in the case of the genitive affix जो even to the media ज j.

The k of Arabic-Persian words on the other hand is now and then aspirated or even changed to خ χ, as: کُتَابُ khutābu, school, or خُتَابُ xutābu, from the Arabic سَكَّانُ sukhānu, a rudder, Arab. سَكَّانُ.

2) ग g is aspirated in the single instance of घर gharu, a house, Prāk. घर (instead of गर्ह), Sansk. गृह.

3) त t is very frequently changed to the corresponding cerebral ट t. The tendency of the dentals, to surrender their place to the corresponding cerebrals, has so much got the upper hand in Sindhī, that its consonantal system differs therein quite materially and significantly from the old Prākrit; e. g. द्रामो trāmō, copper, Prāk. तांब, Sansk. ताम्र (Hindī तांबा); द्वे trē, three, Prāk. तिस्सि, Sansk. त्रीणि (Hindī तीन); the same may also be stated of the aspirate थ th, as: ठाणु thānu, stable, Prāk. थाण, Sansk. स्थान.

The cerebral ट (ठ) with its media ड (ढ) comprises the most non-Ārian elements of the language; nearly $\frac{3}{4}$ of the words, which commence with a cerebral, are taken from some aboriginal, non-Ārian idiom, which in recent times has been termed "Scythian"¹⁾, but which we would prefer to call Tātār. This seems to be a very strong proof, that the cerebrals have been borrowed from some idiom anterior to the introduction of the Arian family of languages; the Sanskrit uses the cerebrals very sparingly, but in Prākrit, which is already considerably tinged with so-called "provincial" (i. e. non-Ārian) elements, they struggle already hard to supplant the dentals.

4) द d, as well as its tenuis त t, is very frequently changed to the corresponding cerebral ड ḍ, and, as even ḍ did not seem hard enough at the beginning of a word, it was changed in most cases to the peculiar Sindhī ङ ṅ (the pronunciation of which see under the Sindhī alphabets), as: डोली ḍolī, a kind of sedan chair, Prākrit already डोला, Sansk. दोला; डंडु ḍaṇḍu, a stick, Prāk.

1) This term, though used by Dr. Caldwell and Mr. Ed. Norris, we find too vague; Tātār is more specific, as we understand by this term a certain family of languages.

इण्ड, Sansk. दण्ड; डिञ्चणु ḍiṇṇu, to give, Prāk. देमि, Sansk. root दा; डिसणु ḍisaṇu, to see, Prāk. दक्ख Sansk. दृष्. But if r be joined to the cerebral media, the simple cerebral (ड) must be used, as इ ḍ is already by its own nature a double cerebral, e. g. द्राक्षा ḍrākha, grape, Sansk. द्राक्षा (Hindī दाख). The simple cerebral इ ḍ is very seldom to be met with at the beginning of a word, and must be carefully distinguished from इ ḍ, as: डिठो ḍiṭhō, obstinate, but डिठो ḍiṭhō, seen, participle past of डिसणु to see.

द d, is changed to its aspirate ध dh in the single instance of धिञ्च dhia, daughter, after the precedent of the Prākrit धीदा or धीञ्चा.

5) Initial प is aspirated in some instances, as: फासी phāsī or फाही phāhī, a noose, Sansk. पाश (Hindī फांसी); now and then it passes also to the semi-vowel व (by the medium of ब b) as: वाज्ञो vājñhō, a Hindū schoolmaster, Sansk. उपाध्याय (initial u having first been dropped).

6) The semi-vowel य y has become now very scarce in Sindhī at the beginning of a word, as: यभणु yabhaṇu, coire; यटो yaṭō, stout; यारंहं yārāhā, eleven. After the analogy of the Prākrit initial य is generally changed to ज, as: जो jō, who, Sansk. यो; जसु jasu, fame, Sansk. यश.

In words, borrowed from the Arabic or Persian, y is always preserved, as: यारु yāru, friend, Pers. یار etc.

The only instance, where initial य has been changed to ल l in Sindhī is लठि laṭhe, a walking-stick; the same is the case in Prākrit, लट्ठि, Sansk. यष्टि.

§. 7.

2) Single consonants in the midst of a word.

According to a common Prākṛit rule the following consonants:

क k, ग g; च ṣ, ज ṣ; त t, द d; प p, ब b, when standing single in the midst of a word, may either be retained or elided. This rule we find corroborated by the Sindhī, but not without some essential restrictions, the consonants being on the whole more frequently retained than elided, as the effeminacy of pronunciation has not yet reached that degree of indistinctness in Sindhī, which so peculiarly characterizes the Prākṛit. We shall therefore find, that in many instances the Sindhī has followed the already beaten track, but has more frequently preserved the old harder form, or chosen its own way of elision and contraction. The semi-vowels are but rarely totally elided in Sindhī; they either keep their place or are dissolved into their corresponding vowels.

Examples of elision: सुई suī, needle, Prāk. सूई, Sansk. सूची. किञ्चो kiō, done, Prāk. किदो, Sansk. कृत; राउ rāu, prince, Prāk. राञ्जा, Sansk. राजा; चउमासो ṣa-umāsō, the rainy season, Sansk. चतुर्मास; सरउ sara-u, autumn, Prāk. सरदो, Sansk. शरद; पिउ piu, father, Prāk. पिञ्जा, Sansk. पिता.

This process of elision is extended even to foreign words, as: नाखुओ nākhuō, a ship-master, Pers. ناخدا.

But more frequently the consonants keep their place, as: सागरु sāgaru, the sea, Prāk. साञ्जरो, Sansk. सागर; नगरु nagaru, town, Prāk. णञ्जरो, Sansk. नगर; वचनु vačanu, promise, Prāk. वञ्जण, Sansk. वचन.

It is quite characteristic, that the Prākṛit does not elide the cerebrals, for which it shows already such a predilection, but, wherever possible, it changes

the dentals into cerebrals, to guard them thus against elision. This process we find in full operation in the modern dialects, which have sprung from the Prākṛit; the common dentals have become too weak for the mouth of the people, a circumstance, which receives a particular light from the manner, in which the modern Indians write and pronounce European words; every dental is without mercy changed by them into a cerebral, which proves at least so much, that the cerebrals are more familiar to them, than the dentals.

Let us now briefly glance over the exceptions, which have been noted down by the Prākṛit grammarians.

1) According to the rule, laid down at the head of this paragraph, the letters क k, ग g, च ङ, ज j are, when not elided, retained. The exceptions from this rule in Prākṛit are not borne out by the Sindhī, and seem therefore to have been more of a local character. The only exception, which is corroborated by the modern idioms, is the Prākṛit form बहिणी, sister, Sansk. भगिणी; which must be explained by an original form बघिणी, from which बहिणी has sprung; Hindī बहिन and Sindhī, by transposition of the aspiration, भेणु bhēṇu.

क k, may pass into its corresponding media ग, as: भगनु bhaṅatu, a worshipper, Sansk. भक्त; सगति saṅgate, strength, Sansk. शक्ति. On the contrary there is a transition of ग to क (and by the influence of following r to kh) in खडु khaḍa, a pit, Prāk. गडु, Sansk. गर्त.

2) The cerebral ट ṭ and its aspirate ठ ṭh, frequently pass into their corresponding media, as: कंठी kandhī, a necklace (besides कंठी), Sansk. कण्ठीय. This is fully borne out by the modern dialects, especially the Sindhī, which goes already a step further in this downward course, and changes ड ḍ to ङ ṅ, and ढ ḍh to ढ ṛh; e. g. बडु baṛu, the Indian fig-tree, Sansk. वट; ट्रोडु trōṛaṇu, to break, Sansk. चोटन; पडु paṛaṇu, to

read, Sansk. पढ़; पीढ़ी pīrī, throne, Sansk. पीठी; लुढ़ाणु lurhaṇu, to roll down, Sansk. लुढ़.

To this permutation also the original Sanskritical ड ḍ is subject in many instances, as: जुड़णु juraṇu, to be joined, Sansk. जुड़; पीड़णु pīraṇu, to press, Sansk. पीड़; जड़ jaru, inanimate body, Sansk. जड़. In a similar manner also the Sansk. ढ dh may be changed to ढ ṛh, as: मूढ mūrhu, ignorant, Sansk. मूढ.

But by far the greatest number of words, in which र or ṛh is to be found, is of non-Ārian origin.

3) त very often passes into its media द, as: खांदि khānde, patience, Sansk. क्षान्ति. The Sansk. participial termination अन्त (अत्) is always changed in Sindhi to अंदो andō, as: हलंदो halandō, going, कंदो doing. त is even changed to an aspirated cerebral, but only in such cases, where the aspiration has been caused by an elided r, as: वदु vathu, taking, Sansk. वृत्ति. त is preserved in many instances, where in Prākṛit it has passed into the media द, as रुति rute, season, Prāk. उदुज, Sansk. चतु. In words borrowed from the Arabic (or Persian) त is occasionally aspirated, as: हिम्मथ him-matha, Arab. هَمَّة; साअथ sāatha, hour, Arab. سَاعَة.

4) प only rarely passes into its media ब, as बि bi, also, Sansk. अपि; रज्जूतु rajbūtu, a Rajput, Sansk. राजपुत्र; Prāk. उवरि upon, but Sindhi परि.

On the other hand there is a transition of the media to the tenuis in the abstract affix प, पो, पणु etc. (Hindī बन्), from the Sansk. affix त्व, त्वन (v = b = p), as: ड़ाहप ḍāhapa, wisdom.

Final प is now and then changed to u (p = b = v = u), as: ताउ tāu, heat, Sansk. ताप, Hindī ताव tāo.

5) The substitution of ल in lieu of ड has been preserved in the case of: तलाउ talāu, a tank, Prāk.

तलाञ्चं, Sansk. तडाग. In other examples however the course, taken by the Prākrit, has again been abandoned, and a new one struck out; e. g. the Prākrit डालिम, pomegranate, sprung from the Sanskrit दाडिम (by the substitution of ल for ड) becomes in Sindhī डाढूं ḍāṛhũ (Hindī दाड़िम), the initial dental द being first changed to ड ḍ and then hardened to ङ ṅ, and ड ḍ passing into ङ ṅ with an additional aspiration (which is rather unusual).

The modern idioms deviate in this respect from the Prākrit, that they change ड ḍ to ङ ṅ, instead of substituting ल for ड; but therein also lies a hint, how the substitution of ल for ड has been possible. The change must have been effected by the medium of ङ ṅ (not of र, as Lassen supposes), which approaches ल very closely in sound. This explains sufficiently such like cases as: पीलो pīlō, yellow, Sansk. पीत; the change must have passed through the following stages, as: पीत = पीद = पीड = पीङ = पील.

6) The substitution of र r for द d in those numerals, which are compounded with दश, has been retained in Sindhī, as well as in the cognate dialects, e. g. Prāk. एआरह, Sindhī यारंहं yārāhā, eleven; Prāk. वारह, Sindhī बारंहं bārāhā, twelve; Prāk. तेरह, Sindhī तेरंहं tērāhā, thirteen; द however must be standing by itself, for Prāk. चउहह, Sindhī चोड़ंहं cōḍāhā, fourteen.

§. 8.

3) Single Aspirates in the midst of a word.

On the average the aspirates are in Sindhī more frequently preserved, than elided, though the Prākrit laws, concerning their elision, are also in force.

a) The letters ख kh, घ gh, थ th, ध dh, भ bh may be elided in this wise, that only the spiritus ह

remains. This phenomenon is so far of great importance, as the Prākṛit seems to indicate thereby, that it considers the aspirates as compound consonants, like gh, bh etc., the base of which is dropped and the spiritus ह alone retained. The aversion of the Prākṛit against the aspirates seems to point to a Tātār under-ground current in the mouth of the common people, the Drāvidian languages of the south being destitute of aspirates. Against this tendency of clearing away the aspirates the modern idioms react far more strongly than the old Prākṛit, their pronunciation proving in this respect much tighter, than that of their immediate common mother-tongue.

Examples of elision: मुहुं mūhū, face, Prāk. मुहं, Sansk. मुख; but मुखु mukhu is also in use in Sindhī; मीहु mīhu, rain, Prāk. मेहो, Sansk. मेघ; in Sindhī also मेघु; सही sahī, friend, Prāk. सही, Sansk. सखि; कहणु kahanu, to say, Prāk. कह, Sansk. कथ; लहणु lahanu, to obtain, Prāk. लह, Sansk. लभ्.

In some instances the Sindhī advances beyond the Prākṛit by dropping ह, which has been severed from its base, as; साज sāu, upright, Prāk. साहु, Sansk. साधु.

b) But more commonly the aspirates in question are retained, as: सुखु sukhu, pleasure, Prāk. मुखं; अधीरो adhīrō, hasty, Prāk. अधीरो; सुघडु sugharu, shrewd, Sansk. सुघट.

c) The aspirates छ ḥ, ज्ञ jh, ठ ṭh, ढ ḍh, फ ph are retained unaltered; e. g. इच्छा iḥhā, wish, Sansk. इच्छा; अच्छो aḥhō, white, Sansk. अच्छ; कंठी kanṭhī, a kind of necklace, Sansk. कण्ठीय; ढूँढणु dhūṇḍhanu, to seek, Sansk. ढूँढण; सफलु saphalu, fruitful, Sansk. सफल.

d) The aspirate ठ ṭh may also pass into its corresponding media, as: सुँढि sundhe, ginger, Sansk. शुण्ठी, Hindī सोँद; कंढी kanḍhī, a kind of necklace (be-

sides कंठी); गंढि gandhe, a bundle, Prāk. गरिठि, Sansk. गन्धि.

The cases of a media passing into its corresponding tenuis are very rare, as: सुठो suṭhō, pure, Sansk. शुद्ध, Hindi again सुध्.

e) The aspirated dental थ th passes in some instances into its corresponding media ध, as: पंधु pandhu, journey, Sansk. पन्था m. The aspirated dentals may also be exchanged for their corresponding cerebrals, as: बुढो bṛdhō, old, Prāk. बइढ, Sansk. वृद्ध; मूढ mūḍhu, a fool, Prāk. मुद्ध, Sansk. मुग्ध.

The transition of an aspirated dental to its corresponding non-aspirate is very rare, as मदु madu, liquor, Sansk. मधु (Hindī मद् and मधु).

§. 9.

4) Single nasals.

The dental न n, is now and then changed to the palatal ज ṛ, as: थजु thaṇu, woman's milk, Sansk. स्तन, Hindī थन् (udder). न is changed to the cerebral ण ṇ in धेणु dhēṇu, a milk-cow, Sansk. धेनु. In the case of लिमु limu, a nimb-tree, न has been exchanged for ल, Sansk. निम्बु, Hindī नीम् and लीम्.

The palatal ज ṛ is in some instances substituted for ज्ञ jñ (= Sindhī ज् j), as मिज्ज miñu, marrow, Sansk. मज्जा; but besides मिज्ज the form मिज्ज mija, is also in use. Similarly ज ṛ may supplant ण ṇ, as: पुज्जि puñi, virtuous, Prāk. पुण्ण, Sansk. पुण्य; सुज्जो suñō, empty, Prāk. सुरण्ण, Sansk. शूण्य. It only rarely happens, that a cerebral ण ṇ is changed to a dental one, as: पुनो (= punnō) accomplished, participle past of पुज्जण्ण, Sansk. पूर्ण.

A single म m in the midst of a word is now and

then elided, as: **साईं** sâi, lord, Sansk. **स्वामी** (= **स्वामिन्**); but the form **सामी** sāmī has likewise been preserved.

म m is further elided in the affixes **मन्** (= **इमन्**) and **मय**, as: **अच्छाणि** ačhāṇe, whiteness, from **अच्छो** ačhō, white; **लोहांछो** lōhāō, made of iron; further in the affix **मत्**, as: **भर्यतु** bharyatu, a carrier of burden, from **भरी**, a load. These forms we shall explain further on in the formation of themes.

§. 10.

5) The semi-vowels **य y**, and **व v**.

1) In Prākrit **य y** has lost its hold in the midst of a word; it is either dissolved into the vowel i, or changed to **ज j**, or dropped altogether. In Sindhī on the contrary **य** may keep its place in the midst of a word; it is even frequently inserted, to avoid a hiatus, as: **आयो** āyō, come, **भर्यो** bharyō, filled, though these forms may also be written and pronounced: **आइओ** ā-i-ō, bhar-i-ō, which is frequently done in poetry, to gain a syllable. The cases, where **य** has been dropped altogether in Sindhī, are rare, as: **वाउ** vā-u, wind, Prāk. already **वाज**, Sansk. **वायु**; **य** is frequently contracted, as: **नेणु** nēnu, eye, Prāk. **णञ्जणं**, Sansk. **नयनं**; at the end of a word the elision of **य** is more common, as: **विशु** viśu, world, Sansk. **विषय**. After the precedent of the Prākrit **य** is exchanged for **ज** in cases like the following: **सेज** sējā, bed, Prāk. **सेज्जा**, Sansk. **शय्या**; **पीजु** pīju, draught, Sansk. **पेयं** etc.

य as a sign of the passive verb is in Sindhī, as already in Prākrit, always changed to **ज j**, a method, by which the Sindhī has gained a regular passive voice, whereas all the kindred dialects are compelled to make

up the passive by compositions; e. g. **डिसिजणु** *disiḷaṇu*, to be seen, active **डिसणु** *ḍisaṇu*, to see, Hindī **देखा जाना** etc.

2) **व** *v* is, after the analogy of **य**, either preserved or dissolved into *u*; but if the laws of euphony require it, it is again reinstated between two vowels, and very rarely dropped altogether; e. g. **जीउ** *jīu*, life, formative **जीव** *jīva* (instead of **जीअ** *jīa*), Prāk. **जीअं**, Sansk. **जीव**; **देवी** *dēvī*, goddess; on the other hand **देउ** *dēu*, a demon, formative **देव** *dēva*; **पवनु** *pavanu*, wind; Prāk. **पउणु**, Sansk. **पवन**. It is also now and then totally elided; as: **जिअणु** *jiṇu*, to live; **डीहु** *ḍīhu*, day, Prāk. **दिअहो**, Sansk. **दिवस**, especially when compounded with another consonant, as we shall see hereafter. It may also be contracted, as: **पूणु** *pūṇu*, to fall, instead of **पवणु**; **चूणु** *čūṇu*, to say, instead of **चवणु**. In the prefix **अव** it may also be contracted to **औ** *au*, as: **औसारु** *ausāru* or **अवसारु** *avasāru*, want of rain; **औतारु** *autāru* or **अवतारु** *avatāru*, an Avatār.

A euphonic insertion of **व** takes place in the word **छांव** *chāva* shade, to keep the two vowels *ā-a* asunder; in Prākrit already, for similar reasons, **ह** has been inserted, **छाहा** (comp. Varar. II, 18), Sansk. **छाया**.

§. 11.

6) The liquidae **र** *r* and **ल** *l*; the sibilant **स** *s* and the spiritus **ह** *h*.

1) **र** *r* and **ल** *l* are not elided in Sindhī, but keep their respective places; **ल** is frequently exchanged for **र** in Sindhī, as: **केलो** *kēlō* or **केरो** *kērō*, name of a flower; **बुर्बुली** *burbulī*, a nightingale, from the Persian **بُلبُل**; **सिआरु** *siāru*, a jackal, Hindī **सिआल्**, Sansk. **शृगाल**;

डुबिरो ḍubirō, weak, instead of: डुबिलो ḍubilō, which is also in use, Sansk. दुर्बल; सराह sarāha, praise, Prāk. सलाहा, Sansk. स्थाया. The only example, in which र has been changed to ज = ज़ is पुजण pujaṇu, to be accomplished (Hindī likewise पूजना) from the Sansk. पूरण.

2) The sibilant स (be it original or a derivative from श and ष) either keeps its place or is changed to ह, as: देसु dēsu, country, more generally: डेहु ḍehu, Sansk. देश; मासु māsu, flesh, or माहु māhu, Sansk. मांस.

In the case of हंजु hanju or हंहु hanjhu, a wild goose, original स has been exchanged for ज or श (in Hindī हंस or हांस), Sansk. हंस. Similarly हंज hanja or हंहु hanjha, tear, Sansk. अश्रु, Prāk. अंसु (initial h being in Sindhī of a euphonic nature in this case); in the same way the Sindhī demonstrative pronoun इजो ijhō seems to have sprung from एस = एष, and उजो ujhō from the remote demonstrative base u, and sō (= sa).

3) ह h remains unaltered in Sindhī; in some instances however it is dropped for euphony's sake, as: सरहो sarahō, joyful, Sansk. सहस्र (= सहरसो = सह-रहो = सरहो) साऊ sā-ū or साहु sāhū, the same as: साधु or साधू honest.

Remark. The final consonants, their respective changes and permutations we may here as well pass over, as the modern Indian vernaculars have already so much receded from the old Prākrit, that partly quite new formations have been introduced, which preclude any nearer comparison with the Prākrit. The particular changes or elisions, to which the final consonants are subject in Sindhī, we shall supply in their proper places.

§. 12.

7) Compound consonants.

For a thorough insight into the nature of the North Indian vernaculars this point is of the greatest importance; for thus only we can trace out the changes, which the Sanskrit has undergone in the mouth of the common people, if we follow up the laws, according to which the Sanskrit sounds have been decomposed into the Prākṛit and its modern daughters, or weakened at least to such a degree, that they are now scarcely recognisable. We can perceive a principle pervading this process of decomposition similar to that, by which out of the old Latin the modern Romanic tongues have been derived, and the mutual congruity is often surprising.

We meet here again with the same principle, which we have seen operating in the decomposition of the vowels and the single consonants. The effeminacy of pronunciation, which absorbs every hard and rough sound, and which consequently rather bears up with vowels, though they may form a displeasing hiatus, than with consonants, which are elided wherever possible, can in a far less degree endure compound consonants. All means are therefore employed, either to smooth them down or to assimilate them, in order to adjust them for a Prākṛit mouth, a consonant compounded of letters of different vargas being incompatible with Prākṛit rules of euphony. It is understood, that in such an idiom a conjunction of three letters is quite out of question; the utmost which the Prākṛit can endure, is the same letter doubled, as क्क kk, त्त tt etc.; र and ह alone cannot be doubled.

Another means, to do away with a compound consonant, is to dissolve the same into its component parts by the insertion of a vowel, a method, to which recourse is had very frequently in Prākṛit and the modern vernaculars.

But even such a doubled consonant is as yet thought too hard; we perceive therefore already a tendency, as well in the old Prākṛit as in its daughters, to clear away the doubling of a consonant by prolonging the preceding vowel, to restore thereby again the quantity of the syllable, as: **आगि** āge, fire, Prāk. **अग्गि**, Sansk. **अग्नि**, Hindī **आग्**; Hindī **भीत्** wall, Sindhī **भित्ति**, Sansk. **भित्ति**.

§. 13.

A) Assimilation of the first four consonants of the five vargas.

These are the following:

क k, **ख** kh; **ग** g, **घ** gh.
च ç, **छ** çh; **ज** j, **झ** jh.
ट t, **ठ** th; **ड** d, **ढ** dh.
त t, **थ** th; **द** d, **ध** dh.
प p, **फ** ph; **ब** b, **भ** bh.

The ground-law of the Prākṛit is this: when two consonants form a compound, the former must give way to the latter, by being assimilated to the same; thereby originates the only conjunction of consonants, which is suffered in Prākṛit, the doubling of the same consonant. In the dental class this doubling of a consonant does not prevent it from passing over into the cerebral class; in the other vargas the transition of a so doubled consonant to another varga is rare, as the consonant gains more strength by being doubled. The only example of such a transition to another varga is **सर्वेगु** sarvaṅgu, omniscient, Prāk. **सर्वज्ज**, Sansk. **सर्वज्ञ**, where the doubled palatal has been changed into a double guttural (**ग** = **ग्ग**), a transition, which is natural enough in a single consonant, but which is very seldom to be met with in a doubled consonant. **सघणु** saghaṇu, to be able, Prāk. **सक्कणोमि**, Sansk. **शक्नोमि**

(Hindī **सकुना**), and perhaps a few others, which may have escaped my notice.

On the whole the Sindhī, as well as the kindred dialects, agrees with this ground-law of the Prākṛit¹), without making it an immutable rule of its proceedings: for it may also assimilate the following consonant to the preceding. In many instances the Sindhī is more original, than the Prākṛit, by preserving such like conjunctions of consonants, as are usual in Sanskrit.

Examples of assimilation.

सुतो sutō, asleep, Prāk. **सुत्तो**, Sansk. **सुप्त**; **उपनो** upanō, created, Prāk. **उप्पण**, Sansk. **उत्पन्न**; **भतु** bhatu, boiled rice, Prāk. **भत्त**, Sansk. **भक्त** (Hindī **भात्**, by prolonging the preceding vowel); **लधो** ladhō, received, Prāk. **लद्ध**, Sansk. **लब्ध**. But on the other hand: **कुबो** kubō, hump-backed, Prāk. **सुज्जो**, Sansk. **कुञ्ज**.

But an original compound consonant may also be preserved unaltered in Sindhī, as: **शब्दु** śabdu, word, Prāk. **सद्**, Sansk. **शब्द**; **मुक्तो**, mukto, free, Prāk. **मुत्त**, Sansk. **मुक्त**.

It depends however more or less on the option of the speaker, if he will pronounce a compound consonant as such, or separate the same by the insertion of a vowel, as: **शब्दु** śabdu, or **शबिदु** śabidu, the inserted i being pronounced so rapidly, that it is scarcely perceptible. The Musalmāns therefore, when writing with Arabic letters, never place the sign jazm (ـ) above a consonant, destitute of a vowel, but always add the kasr, which is nearly equal to jazm, it being scarcely heard at all in

1) It must be stated here, that according to the common method of writing the Sindhī, a double consonant is not expressed generally, but only in such instances, where two words, written else in the same way, are to be distinguished, as **ٺٺ** una, by him, and **ٺٺ** unna, wool.

pronunciation. The next vowel, thus inserted, is usually i (kasr), but a or u may also be employed, according to euphony or the sequence of vowels, as: **भगत्** bhaḡatu, a worshipper, Sansk. **भक्त**; **सगति** saḡate, power, Sansk. **सक्ति** (Hindī **सकत्** f.).

§. 14.

B) Assimilation of the nasals.

a) A nasal, preceding a consonant, generally keeps its place as: **अंतु** antu, end, Sansk. **अन्त**. A preceding nasal may be dropped altogether, if the preceding vowel happen to be a long one, as: **मासु** māsu, flesh, Sansk. **मांस**; **गाड़ो** gāḍō, a cart, Sansk. **गन्धी** (Hindī **गाड़ी**), the doubled consonant being cleared away in the latter instance by the prolongation of the preceding vowel.

The compound **न्म** nm is severed by the insertion of a vowel, as: **जनमु** janamu, birth, Sansk. **जन्म**.

b) In a compound consonant the following nasal is assimilated to the preceding consonant, as: **आगि** āḡe, fire, Prāk. **अग्गि**, Sansk. **अग्नि**; **लगो** laḡō, applied, Prāk. **लग्ग**, Sansk. **लग्न**; **भगो** bhaḡō, broken, Sansk. **भग्न**.

The compound consonant however may also remain unaltered, or be taken asunder by the insertion of a vowel, as: **रत्नु** ratnu or **रतनु** ratanu, jewel; **सुजाणु** jujānu, wise, Prāk. **सुज्ज**, Sansk. **सुज्ञ**; **सुपनो** supanō, dream, Sansk. **स्वप्न**.

The nasal may also be pushed forward, to escape being assimilated: as: **नंगो** nangō, naked, Prāk. **नग्गो**, Sansk. **नग्न**.

On the reverse a following nasal may also assimilate a preceding consonant, as: **सइन** sa-ina, hint, Sansk. **संज्ञा**; **राणी** rāṇī, queen, Sansk. **राज्ञी**. The nasal may also assimilate a preceding consonant in such a wise,

that it draws the same over at the same time to its own varga. The only example of such an assimilation (if it be not to be explained in some other way) is the reflexive pronoun पाण pāṇa, self, Prāk. अपाण, Sansk. आत्मा; in Hindī we have the form आप्, which has sprung from अप्, instead of अत् (= आत्मा); compare on this head: Lassen §. 67.

c) The nasals may assimilate a preceding or following semi-vowel, as: पुञ्जी puñī, virtuous, Prāk. पुण्ण, Sansk. पुण्य; सुजो suñō, empty, Prāk. सुण्ण, Sansk. शूण्य; उन्न unṇa, wool, Sansk. उर्ण; चउमासो ča-umāsō, the rainy season, Sansk. चतुर्मास.

On the other hand notice पूरो pūrō, full, Sansk. पूर्ण; चूरु čūru, pulverized, Sansk. चूर्ण, where the semi-vowel r has assimilated the nasal, r being stronger in sound, than n.

घ mr in the Sanskrit आघ āmra, is changed in Sindhī to mb, as: अंबु ambū, mangoe, Prāk. अघ (Hindī आम); but in the case of the Sindhī word ट्रामो trāmo, copper, Sansk. ताम्र, Prāk. तघ (Hindī तांबा or तामा) the semi-vowel r has been pushed forward to t = t, as r may easily hold its place in conjunction with a dental or cerebral.

च mb is assimilated to mm, as: निमु nimu (= nimmu) a lime-tree, Sansk. निम्ब; झ ml is taken asunder, after the analogy of the Prākrit, as: मिलणु milaṇu, to be obtained, Prāk. मिलाण, Sansk. झै, Hindī likewise मिलना.

§. 15.

C) Assimilation of the semi-vowels.

a) The semi-vowel य y.

a) If the semi-vowel य happen to be joined to a preceding consonant, it is assimilated to the same, as:

जोगु jōgu, fit, Prāk. **जोग्ग**, Sansk. **योग्य**, Hindī **जोग्**; **वाघु** vāghu, a tiger, Sansk. **व्याघ्र**; **वइसु** va-isu, a Vaisya, Sansk. **वैश्य** (Hindī **वैस्**). It may, however, also hold its place, as: **वाक्यु** vākyu, a sentence, Sansk. **वाक्य**, though this is very rarely the case.

β) **य**, when compounded with a preceding **र**, is elided, as: **तुरी** turī, a small trumpet, Prāk. **तुरं**, Sansk. **तूर्य**; **धीर** dhīra, firmness, Prāk. **धीरं**, Sansk. **धैर्य**; **आरु** āru, sense of honor, Sansk. **आर्य**, Hindī **अरिज्**. But **य** may also be preserved by being changed to **ज**, as: **धीर्जु** dhīrju, the same as: **धीर**; **सूरिजु** sūriju, the sun, Prāk. **सूरो** or **सुज्जो**, Sansk. **सूर्य**; **अचुरजु** ačurju, wonderful, Prāk. **अच्छरिअ**, Sansk. **आश्चर्य**.

γ) **य** joined to a preceding dental is either simply dropped, as: **नितु** nitu, always, Prāk. **निच्च**, Sansk. **नित्य**; **आडितु** āditu, the sun, Sansk. **आदित्य**, or it may also, though rarely, be preserved, as: **मठ्यां** mathyā, falsely, Prāk. **मिच्छा**, Sansk. **मिथ्या**. But the more usual way is that **य**, being first assimilated to a preceding dental, draws the same over to its own (i. e. palatal) class, so that **त्य** is changed to **च्च**, **थ्य** to **च्छ**, **द्य** to **ज्ज** and **थ्य** to **ज्ज** (for which double consonants, as remarked already, the simple bases are only written in Sindhī); e. g. **विज्ञा** vijā, science (**ज्ञ** = **ज्ज**), Prāk. **विज्जा**, Sansk. **विद्या**; **अजु** aju, to-day, Sansk. **अद्य** (Hindī **आज्**); **खाजु** khāju, food, Sansk. **खाद्यं**; **मंजु**, manjhu, the midst, Prāk. **मज्जो**, Sansk. **मध्य**; **बज्जणु** bajhaṇu, to be bound, Sansk. **बध्य**; **वाजो** vājhō, a Hindū schoolmaster, Sansk. **उपाध्याय**; **हचा** hačā, murder, Sansk. **हत्या**.

δ) **य** joined to a preceding **ह** is changed to **ज्ज** jh, as: **गुजो** gūjhō, concealed, Prāk. **गुज्जाओ**, Sansk. **गुह्यक**.

ε) **य** is assimilated to a preceding **ल**, but final **ल**, instead of being doubled in consequence thereof, is

aspirated, e. g. कल्ह kalha, yesterday, Prāk. कल्ल, Sansk. कल्यं (Hindī कल्); मुल्हु mulhu, price, Sansk. मूल्य; in the midst of a word य is simply assimilated to ल (the doubling not being expressed in Sindhi), as: पलगुं palangu, a bedstead, Sansk. पर्यङ्ग (r being exchanged for l); प-लाणु palāṇu, a pack-saddle, Prāk. पल्लाण, Sansk. पर्याण.

b) The semi-vowel र r.

a) र is assimilated to a preceding or following consonant, as: अगु agū, the front, Prāk. अग्गो, Sansk. अय; गूजरी gūjarī, name of a Rāgini, Sansk. गुर्जरी; ग-जणु gajāṇu, to thunder, Sansk. गर्जन (but Hindī गरज-ना); कमु kamu (= kammu), business, Prāk. कम्मो, Sansk. कर्मेन् (Hindī काम्); मुंढी munḍhī, head, Sansk. मुर्धेन्; सपु sapu, snake, Sansk. सर्प; सिघो sighō, quick, Sansk. शीघ (Hindī शीघर्); चकी čakī, a mill, Sansk. चक्र; निभागु nibhāgu, misfortune, Sansk. निर्भाग.

On the other hand र, preceding or following a consonant, may just as easily hold its place, without being assimilated, as: चर्चो čarčō, silly talk, Sansk. चर्चा; प्री prī, friend, Sansk. प्रिय; पर्भु parbhu, a festival, Sansk. पर्व (व = ब, and ब aspirated by the influence of र); गर्बु garbu, pride, Sansk. गर्व; शुक्रu šukru, Friday, Sansk. शुक्र; सुर्गु surgu, heaven, Sansk. स्वर्ग; धर्मु dharmu, religion, Prāk. धम्म, Sansk. धर्म.

Very frequently such a compound is again dissolved into its constituent parts by the insertion of a vowel, as: पिरी pirī, friend, or प्री prī; पिग्भिाति piribhāte, break of day, Sansk. प्रभात; or r is transposed for euphony's sake, as: पर्तापु partāpu, splendour, Sansk. प्रताप; पर्तु partu, leaf (of a book), Sansk. पत्र; द्रिघो drighō, long, Prāk. दिग्घ; Sansk. दीर्घ; किर्ति kirtē, trade, किर्तु kirtu,

action, Sansk. कृति and कृत; द्रकु ṭraku, a spinning wheel, Sansk. तर्कु.

It very rarely happens, that r is totally elided in a compound, as: वाघु vāghu, tiger, Sansk. व्याघ्र; राति rāte, night, Sansk. रात्रि (Prāk. रत्ती by ejection of ā); भाउ bhāu, brother, Sansk. भ्राता. The ejection of r in these and such like examples is caused by the preceding long vowel, which precludes the possibility of assimilating the compound consonant, or by the consonant, with which r forms a conjunction, being initial. In such cases, as रत्ती, the Prākrit has preferred to drop the long vowel, in order to make room for assimilation.

β) When compounded with a preceding dental, r is in most cases assimilated to the same in Prākrit, though it may also keep its place; in Sindhī on the other hand r is, when following a dental, mostly preserved, and the assimilation takes place only in the dialect of Lār (Lower Sindh), whereas in the dialect of the Upper country (Sirō) the original compound is preserved, the dental only being commonly changed to a cerebral (or even to an aspirated cerebral, by the influence of r); e. g. पुट्रु putru, son, Prāk. पुत्त, Sansk. पुत्र (in Lār: पुट्टु puttū, according to the analogy of the Prākrit); मिट्रु mitru, friend, Prāk. मित्त, Sansk. मित्र (in Lār: मिट्टु mittū); चंडु čandru, the moon, Prāk. चन्द, Sansk. चन्द्र; खेट्रु khētru, a field, Sansk. क्षेत्र; मंड्रु manṭru (or with transition to the media) मंद्रु mandru, an incantation, Sansk. मन्त्र; त्रे trē, three, Sansk. त्रि; इद्दु ḍadhru, or इद्दु ḍadhu, a cutaneous disease, Sansk. दद्रु; द्रापणु dhrāpanu, to be satiated, Sansk. तर्पण (by transition of the tenuis into the media). In those adverbs, which are compounded with the adverbial affix च, च is, after the precedent

of the Prākṛit; changed in Sindhī to **थ**, as: **किथे** kithē, where; **जिथे** jithē, in which place; **तिथे** tithe, in that place etc.

R, when preceding a dental, may likewise be assimilated to the same, as: **कतरणु** katarṇu, to spin, Sansk. **कर्त्तन**; **कतर** katara, scissors, Sansk. **कर्त्तरी**; **वटि** vatē, a wig, Sansk. **वर्त्तिका**; **खड्ड** khada, a pit, Prāk. **गड्डो**, Sansk. **गर्त**. On the other hand the compound may also be retained unaltered, as: **अर्धांगु** ardhāngu, palsey, Sansk. **अर्धाङ्ग**; **अर्थु** arthu, object, Sansk. **अर्थ**; **तीर्थु** tirthu, a holy bathing-place, Sansk. **तीर्थ**; or the compound may again be dissolved by the insertion of a vowel, as: **मूरति** mūrate, image, Sansk. **मूर्ति**; **कीरति** kīrate, glory, Sansk. **कीर्ति**, Prāk. **किसि**; **तीरथु** tirathu = **तीर्थु**.

γ) **र्व** rv is either assimilated, as: **सभु** sabhu, all, Sansk. **सर्व**, Hindī **सब्** (the aspiration of b being caused in Sindhī by the influence of elided r); or the compound may be retained unaltered, as, **सर्वसगति** sarvasagāte, omnipotent; or the compound may be dissolved again by the insertion of a vowel, as: **पूरबु** pūrabu, the east, Sansk. **पूर्व**.

δ) In the compound **अ** śr the semi-vowel r may either be assimilated, as, **सुओ** suō, heard, Prāk. **सुदो** (= **सुतो**), Sansk. **श्रुत**; **ससु** sasū, mother-in-law, Sansk. **श्वश्रु**; or, the compound may be retained, as: **श्री** śrī, prosperity; or more commonly, the compound is dissolved by the insertion of a vowel, as **सिराधु** sirādhū, funeral obsequies, Sansk. **श्राद्ध** (Hindī **श्राद्ध**). The Sanskrit **अश्रु**, téar, Prāk. already **अंसु** (instead of **आसु**) has become in Hindī **आसूं**; the Sindhī form is **हंज** hanja or **हंरु** hanjha (with initial euphonic h), s being changed in this instance to **ज** or **रु**; Panjābī likewise anjhu.

The same holds good with reference to the compound

स sr, as: **सहसु** sahasu, thousand, Prāk. **सहस्र**, Sansk. **सहस्र**.

The compound **शे** rś and **घे** rṣ are assimilated in Sindhī as well as in Prākrit, as: **वसणु** to rain, Sansk. **वर्षे**; **पासो** pāsō, side, Sansk. **पार्श्वे** (Hindī **पास्**); **सिसो** sisī, head and neck, Sansk. **शीर्षे** (Hindī **सीस्**); or they are preserved (of course with transition of **श** and **घ** to **स**), as: **दर्सेनु** darsanu, interview, Sansk. **दर्शन**; **तर्सेणु** tarsanu, to wait, Sansk. **तर्षण**; the compound **घे** rṣ may also be dissolved into **रस**, and this again into **रह**, as: **सरहो** sarahō, happy, Sansk. **सहर्षे** (compare §. 11, end).

c) The semi-vowel **ल** l.

α) **ल** forming a compound with another consonant at the beginning of a word, is severed from the same by the insertion of a vowel, as: **सराह** sarāha, praise, Prāk. **सलाहा**, Sansk. **श्लाघा** (r = l in Sindhī); **किलेसु** kilēsu, fatigue, Sansk. **क्लेश** (Hindī **कलेस्**); **सलोकु** sa-lōku, a Slōka, Sansk. **श्लोक**.

β) In the midst of a word **ल** is assimilated to any consonant, save **य**, **र** and **व**, as: **बकरु** bakaru, vegetables, Prāk. **वक्कल**, Sansk. **वल्कल**; or it is severed again from the compound by the insertion of a vowel, as: **लुक**, hot wind, Prāk. **उक्का**, Sansk. **उल्का**, the initial vowel u being thrown back to serve in place of an inserted vowel.

d) The semi-vowel **व** v.

α) **व**, joined to a preceding consonant at the beginning of a word, is either dissolved into u, as: **सुर्गु** surḡu, heaven, Sansk. **स्वर्ग**; **दुआरु** duāru, door, Prāk. **दुआरो**, Sansk. **द्वार**; **सुआउ** suāu, taste, Sansk. **स्वाद**; or it is totally elided (i. e. assimilated to the preceding consonant) as: **जलणु** jalaṇu, to burn, Sansk. **ज्वलन**; **सर्गु** sarḡu (besides **सुर्गु**), heaven, Sansk. **स्वर्ग**; **साई** sālī,

lord, or **सामी** sāmī, Prāk. **सामि**, Sansk. **स्वामिन्**; **सहुरो** sahurō, father-in-law, Sansk. **श्वशुर**; **ससु** sasu, mother-in-law, Sansk. **श्वश्रु**. **व** v may also be severed from the compound by the insertion of a vowel (a or u), as: **सवाड़** savāḍu, taste, flavour (besides **सुआड़**), Sansk. **स्वाद**; **दुवारु** duvāru, door (besides **दुआरु**). **व** very rarely assimilates a preceding consonant, as: **ब** ba, two, Sansk. **व** (= vva = bba = b).

β) **व** v being joined to a preceding consonant in the midst of a word, is assimilated to the same, as: **पको** pakō (= pakkō) cooked, Prāk. **पिक्क**, Sansk. **पक्क**; **सतु** satu, strength, Prāk. **सत्त**, Sansk. **सत्त्व**.

In the abstract affix **त्व**, **त्वन**, the dental on the other hand is assimilated to the semi-vowel **व**, which latter is first changed to the labial **ब**, and then to the corresponding tenuis **प**, so that we have in Sindhī the forms **प** pa, **पो** pō, **पणु** paṇu or **पणो** paṇō, as: **बान्हप** bānhapa, **बान्हपो** bānhapō etc., slavery, from **बान्हो** bānhō, a slave.

The regular form of assimilation however is also in use, but only in a few examples; **त्त** is in this way assimilated to **त्त** tt = **ट्ट** ṭṭ, and the double consonant again cleared away by the prolongation of the preceding vowel, as: **छोकिराट्ट** chōkirāṭṭu, time of youth, from **छोकरु** chōkaru, a boy.

The semi-vowel may also be dissolved into u, as: **परमेसुरु** paramēsuru, supreme lord = God, Prāk. already **परमेसुर**, Sansk. **परमेश्वर**; or it may be retained, as: **दानेस्वरी** dānēsvarī, liberal, besides: **दानेसुरी** dānēsurī.

§. 16.

D) Assimilation of the sibilants.

a) The palatal sibilant **श** ś.

a) **श** ś, when preceded by **च** c and **छ** ch, is assimilated to them, as: **अचुर्जु** ačurju, wonderful, Prāk.

अच्छरिञ्च, Sansk. **आश्चर्य** (long ā being shortened in Prākṛit and Sindhī, and in compensation thereof the following consonant doubled, to restore again the quantity of the syllable); **शनिचरु** śaničaru, Saturday, Sansk. **शनीचर** (Hindī **सनीचर**).

β) The compound **च** čč (which however is rendered in Sindhī, as all double consonants, by its simple base) arising from the assimilation of **च**, is, after the analogy of the Prākṛit, frequently aspirated in Sindhī, on account of the inherent tendency of the sibilant towards aspiration (**स** = **ह**), as: **विच्छू** vičhū, scorpion, Prāk. **निच्छुओ**, Sansk. **वृश्चिक**; **पच्छुताउ**, pačhutāu, repentance, Sansk. **पश्चात्ताप**, final **प** being changed (by **b** = **v**) in Sindhī to **u**.

γ) **श** followed by **म**, assimilates the same, as: **रसी** rasī (= rassī), a rope, Prāk. **रासि**, Sansk. **रश्मि**, but not necessarily; for: **कश्मीरु** kaśmīru, Kashmīr.

b) The cerebral sibilant **ष** ṣ.

α) The compound **ष्क** ṣk (of **ष्व** I have hitherto not met any instances) is assimilated in Sindhī to **क** (= **क्**), and not to **क्ख** kkh, as in Prākṛit; e. g. **डुकालु** ḍukālu, famine, Sansk. **दुष्काल**; **निकमी** nikamī, useless, Sansk. **निष्कर्म**; **सुको** sukō, dry, Sansk. **शुष्क** (Hindī, as in Prākṛit, **सूका**).

β) The compounds **ष्ट** ṣṭ and **ष्ठ** ṣṭh, are assimilated in Sindhī to **त्थ**, as: **डिठो** ḍiṭhō, seen, Prāk. **दिट्ठ**, Sansk. **दृष्ट**; **गोठु** gōṭhu, a village, Prāk. **गोटी**, Sansk. **गोष्ठी**; **निठरु** niṭharu, obstinate, Prāk. **निट्ठरु**, Sansk. **निष्ठुर**; **मिठो** miṭhō, sweet, Sansk. **मिष्ट**.

The compound is also retained unaltered, as: **डुष्ठु** ḍuṣṭu, bad; but this is only done by Brāhmans, who understand Sanskrit; the common people ignore it completely.

The cerebral **ढ**, which has sprung from **ह** or **ड** by assimilation, may also pass into its corresponding media **द** dh, and this again to **ढ़** ṛh, e. g. **कोढु** kōṛhu, leprosy, Sansk. **कुष्ठ** (the preceding vowel u having been lengthened in Sindhī to ō, to clear away the double consonant ttḥ or ddḥ).

γ) The compounds **ष्प** śp, **ष्फ** śph are assimilated to **फ** in Sindhī, as: **बाफ** bāpha, steam, Prāk. **वप्फो**, Sansk. **वाष्प** (Hindī **बाफ़**, and even with aspiration of **बःभाफ़**).

In compound words **प्प** is simply assimilated to **प** p (= pp) as: **निपुट्रो** nipuṭrō, without a son, Sansk. **निष्पुत्र**.

δ) In the compounds **ष्म** śm and **ष्ण** śn, **ष** is in Prākṛit exchanged for h and placed after **म** and **ण** respectively; in Sindhī the original compound may be preserved, as: **विष्णु** viṣṇu, Prāk. **विणहु**; **विष्णवहू** viṣṇavahū, a worshipper of Viṣṇu; by the Musalmāns however words of this kind are simply written **وِشْنُ**, **وِشْنَوُ**, Hindūstānī likewise **وِشْنُ**, as cerebral ś is ignored by the common people.

ε) The compound **ष्य** śy (and **ष्व** śv) is in Prākṛit assimilated to **स्स** ss, but in Sindhī to **ख** kh (= kkh) as: **सिखु** sikhu, a disciple = Sikh, Sansk. **शिष्य**.

c) The dental-sibilant **स** s.

α) The compound **स्क** sk is assimilated in Prākṛit to **ख** kh, in Sindhī however to **क** k, as: **कंधु** kandhu, shoulder, Prāk. **खंधो** (खंदो); Sansk. **स्कन्द** (Hindī **कंध**).

β) The compounds **स्त** st and **स्थ** sth are assimilated to **थ** (= ttḥ) and **त्स** ts to **छ** čh (= ččḥ), as: **थञु** thañu, woman's milk, Sansk. **स्तन**; **थिञो** thiō, become, Sansk. **स्थित**; **थंभु** thambhu, "post (Prākṛit on the other hand

खम्भो), Sansk. स्तम्भ; वथु vathu, thing, Sansk. वस्तु; हथु hathu, hand, Prāk. हथ्यो, Sansk. हस्त (Hindī हाथ); थाणो thaṇō, place, Sansk. स्थान; अथ atha, is, Prāk. अत्थि, Sansk. अस्ति; वछि vaṇṇe, a buffalo calf, Prāk. वच्छो, Sansk. वत्स.

The compound स्त st however may also, instead of being assimilated, be dissolved into its constituent parts by the insertion of a vowel, and when the compound happens to be initial, by prefixing a vowel, as: अस्तु-ति astute, praise, Prāk. शुई, Sansk. स्तुति; इस्तिरी istirī, woman, Sansk. स्त्री.

γ) स्प sp is assimilated to प (= pp), स्फ sph to फ (= pph), प्स ps to प (= pp) respectively as: फुटणु phuṭaṇu, to be broken, Sansk. स्फुर; फुट्ती phuṭṭī, activity, Sansk. स्फूर्ति; लपी lapī, a dish of coarse wheaten flour, Sansk. लप्सिका; but प्स may also remain unassimilated, as: लप्सी.

In compound words स्प sp may be preserved, as: विस्यति, vispate, Thursday, Sansk. बृहस्पति; or the compound, especially at the beginning of a word, may be dissolved into its constituent parts, as: पारसु pārasu, the philosopher's stone, Sansk. स्पर्श (मणि), Hindī likewise पारस्.

δ) The compound स्न sn, when beginning a word, is either dissolved into its constituent parts by the insertion of a vowel, as: सनानु sanānu, bathing, Sansk. स्नान; सनेहो sanēhō, a message of love, Sansk. स्नेह; or the preceding स is cast off altogether, as: नीहु nīhu, love, Sansk. स्नेह (Hindī नेह), Prāk. also गेहो; नुहु nuhu, daughter-in-law, Prāk. गोरुह, Sansk. सुषा.

ε) The compound स्म sm is assimilated to स s (= ss) as: विसाई visāi, stupor, Sansk. विसमय; or dissolved again by the insertion of a vowel, as: सुमरणु sumaraṇu, to remember, Sansk. स्मृ; विसामणु visāmaṇu, to be

stunned, Sansk. **विस्मि** (विस्मय, Prāk. विम्हञ्चो); or s is changed to h and placed after **म** (similarly to **ष्म**), as Prākrit **म्ह** = **स्म**, in the pronominal forms **तुम्हे**, **अस्मे** (cf. Lassen p. 331, 4; p. 329, 5), In Sindhī the **म** of the conjunct **म्ह** is also changed to v, as **तव्हिं** tavhī, you, instead of **तुम्हीं** tumhī.

५) The compound **स्य** sy is assimilated to **स** s (= ss) and thence farther to **ह** h, as: **मुंहिं** mūhī, **तुंहिं** tūhī etc., which must have sprung from an original form **मस्य**, **तुस्य** etc., Prāk. already **मह**, **तुह** (thence also the other Prākrit forms **मज्झ**, **तुज्झ** = **मस्य**, **तुस्य**); **तांहिं** tāhē, of that (nom. sing. **सो** sō) Prāk. **तस्स**, Sansk. **तस्य**.

d) The compound **क्ष** kṣ.

This compound letter is assimilated in Sindhī:

a) To **ख** kh (= kkh), as: **अक्षि** akhe, eye, Sansk. **अक्षि**; **खीरु** khīru, milk, Sansk. **क्षीर**; **खारो** khārō, brackish, Sansk. **क्षार**; **खेतु** khetu, field, Sansk. **क्षेत्र**; **खिमा** khimā, patience, Sansk. **क्षमा**; **खी** khī, welfare, Sansk. **क्षेम**; **रखणु** rakhaṇu, to keep, Sansk. **रक्षण**; **खांदि** khande, patience, Sansk. **क्षान्ति**.

All these instances are against Prākrit usage, according to which **क्ष** ought to have been assimilated to **छ** ṣh, though **ख** is also admissible in Prākrit, and prove distinctly, that the Sindhī has followed its own course, independently of the Prākrit.

β) **क्ष** is also assimilated to **छ** ṣh, after the precedent of the Prākrit, as: **रिछु** riṣhu, a bear, Sansk. **रुक्ष**; **छुरी** ṣhurī, a knife, Sansk. **क्षुरी**; **छिनणु** ṣhinaṇu, to pluck, Sansk. **क्षिण**; **लछणु** laṣhaṇu, sign, Sansk. **लक्ष** but **लखणु** lakhaṇu is also in use in Sindhī.

According to Prākrit rule every consonant (the nasal n excepted), which is joined to **क्ष**, must be dropped;

but the Sindhī so far deviates from the Prākṛit, that it separates any such consonant by the insertion of a vowel, as: Prāk. लच्छी, but Sindhī लछिमी lačhimī, the wife of Viṣṇu, Hindī likewise लक्ष्मी, Sansk. लक्ष्मी. On the other hand the Sindhī assimilates the nasal in the compound ह्ण kṣṇ to ख (kh = kṣ), whereas the Prākṛit changes the same to रह, as: Sindhī तिखो tikhō (= tikkhō), quick, Prāk. तिहह, Sansk. तीहह.

A change of ख kh (= kṣ) to the spiritus ह h is found in Hindī, after the analogy of the Prākṛit, as: Hindī दाहिना right (opposed to left), instead of the more common दक्खिणा, but not in Sindhī, which simply clears away the doubling of the letter in Prākṛit by the prolongation of the preceding vowel, as: डाखिणो ḍā-khiṇō, right, southern.

§. 17.

F) The spiritus ह h.

The spiritus ह cannot be assimilated to any other consonant. If therefore ह be joined to any other consonant, the compound is again separated into its component parts in the following way:

a) In the compounds ह hn, ह hm, ह is put after the nasal, a euphonic transposition, which is already common in Prākṛit, as: बाहि bāhe, fire (instead of बांहि bāhe), Prāk. वरही, Sansk. वहि; चिन्हु cīnhu, mark, Sansk. चिह्; the hardened Prāk. form चिन्ध or चेन्ध is not used in Sindhī.

The compound म्ह (instead of ह hm) is in Sindhī, on account of the preponderance of the labial, already exchanged for म् mbh, as: बांभणु bāmbhaṇu, a Brāhman, Prāk. वम्हण, Sansk. ब्राह्मण.

b) ह hy is assimilated to ङ्ग jh (by transposition: hy = yh = jh), as: गुग्गो gūghō, concealed, Prāk. गुग्गाओ, Sansk. गुग्गुलु.

c) ह् hv is assimilated to भ् in Sindhī (hv = vh = bh), whereas in Prākṛit the following semi-vowel is simply elided, as: जिभ jibha, tongue, Prāk. जीहा, Sansk. जिह्वा. (Hindī जीभ).

§. 18.

E) Assimilation of three conjunct consonants.

In Sindhī, as well as in Prākṛit, a compound, consisting of three consonants, can only then be tolerated, if the first consonant happen to be a nasal: as: चंद्रु ^{चंद्र} candru, moon, मंत्रु ^{मन्त्र} mantru, incantation.

As regards the assimilation of three conjunct consonants the preceding rules come into operation. If no assimilation takes place, the one or the other of the consonants thus joined together, is severed from the rest by the insertion of a vowel, as: शास्तिरी śastirī, a Shāstrī, learned in the Shāstras (a usual title of a Brāhman), from the Sansk. शास्त्र. In reference to the assimilation itself the following rules are to be observed.

a) If one of the consonants happen to be a semi-vowel, it is dropped, and the assimilation of the remaining two consonants is effected according to the usual method, as: मराठी marāṭhī, a Marāṭhī man (or. adj.), Sansk. महाराष्ट्र; अग्र्योṁ agryō, the foremost, Sansk. अग्र्य; पासो pāsō, side, Prāk. पास, Sansk. पार्श्वे.

The semi-vowel य alone, when preceded by a dental, forms an exception to this rule, this compound being changed to the corresponding palatal (see §. 15, γ), as: संजो sanjhō, evening, Prāk. संज्झा, Sansk. सन्ध्या.

b) When of three conjunct consonants the two former or the two latter can be assimilated, preference is given to the stronger assimilation, as: मछु maṅhu, fish, Prāk. मच्छो, Sansk. मत्स्य; in this instance त्स ts is assimilated to छ (čh), the assimilation of it being stronger than that of स्य to स्स.

§. 19.

G) Elision of a double consonant.

The doubling of a consonant renders the same so much stronger, that even a long vowel, preceding it, must give way and is weakened to its corresponding short one. On the other hand a double consonant, as noticed already, may again be rendered simple; but in this case the preceding vowel, to make up for the quantity of the syllable, must be prolonged, as: राति *rāte*, night, Prāk. रत्ती, Sansk. रात्रि; कमु *kamu* (= *kam-mu*), business, Prāk. कम्मो, Hindī on the other hand काम्.

It is quite against the genius of the language, to elide totally a double consonant; notwithstanding this some few examples of this kind are to be met with in Sindhī, as: दुआरि *ḍuāre*, illness, दुआरी, adj. *ḍuārī*, ill, Prāk. दुबल, Sansk. दुर्बल; मित्रो *miō*, friend (corroborated already by the Prākrit, which however preserves also the original from मित्रो). In these and such like examples the process cannot have been such, that a double consonant is elided at once, but it must first have been reduced to its simple base by the prolongation of the preceding vowel, as: मीतो *mitō*, instead, of मित्रो; from this base has sprung again, according to the usual laws of elision, the form मीत्रो *mīō*, in which, against the ordinary process, long *ī* has been shortened to *i*, मित्रो.

In the forms दुआरि and दुआरी, original double *b* must have been changed to *vv* (both letters, *b* and *v*, being already identical in Prākrit) previous to its elision; but it is quite an extraordinary phenomenon, that the following vowel has been lengthened instead of the preceding one.

Far more easily may one of the compound consonants be elided, when preceded by a long vowel, which renders the assimilation impossible, especially if one of the compound consonants be a semi-vowel, as: वाघु vāghu, a tiger, Sansk. व्याघ्र; राणी rāṇī, queen, Sansk. राज्ञी. Thus even two semi-vowels may disappear, as: पासो pāsō, side, Sansk. पार्श्व.

§. 20.

H) A double consonant at the beginning of a word.

A compound consonant at the beginning of a word is subject to the same laws of assimilation, as in the midst (or end) of a word. But as a double consonant would not be utterable at the beginning of a word, one of the assimilated, i. e. doubled consonants is simply cast off, so that only the simple base of the consonant remains, as: जलणु jalaṇu, to burn, instead of: ज्जलणु jjalanu, Sansk. ज्वलन; वाघु vāghu, tiger, instead, of व्वाघु vvāghu; कधुṃ kandhu, shoulder, instead of क्कधुṃ kkandhu. But if a word be compounded, the common laws of assimilation are applied (to the second), as: इबलु ḍubalu, weak, Prāk. दुब्बल.

Those compounds, which are not susceptible of assimilation, are dissolved into their component parts by the insertion of a vowel, as: किलेसु kilēsu, weariness, Prāk. किलेस, Sansk. क्लेश; सुमरणु sumaraṇu, to remember, Prāk. सुमर्, Sansk. स्मर् (स्मृ); or the first letter of the compound is cast off, which is particularly the case, if this happen to be a sibilant, as: नीहु nīhu, love, Prāk. सणेह saṇēha, Sansk. स्नेह; but if the sibilant be followed by a semi-vowel, the latter, as the weaker, is dropped, as: साहु sāhu, breath, Sansk.

श्यास; सालो sālō, wife's brother, Prāk. सालो sālō, Sansk. श्याल.

च tr and द्र dr, which in Sindhī are commonly changed to the corresponding cerebrals, keep their place as well at the beginning as in the midst (or end) of a word, as: त्रे trē, three; द्राख drākha, grape, but Hindī दाख्, Sansk. द्राक्षा.

THE SINDHI ALPHABET.

§. 1.

Up to the present time various alphabets have been in use in Sindh, the Muhammadan portion of the community using the Arabic characters, loaded with many dots, to express the sounds peculiar to the Sindhī, and the Hindū population employing different alphabets of their own, which vary very much, according to the locality, in which they are used, though all of them are originally derived from an old Sanskrit alphabet. These latter alphabets, which are known in Sindh by the name of the Banyā characters, are utterly unfit for literary purposes, as they have become greatly mutilated in the course of time and are very deficient in the vowel and consonant system, so that the Hindū merchants themselves, after a lapse of time, are hardly able to reproduce with accuracy what they have entered in their ledgers. No alphabet suits the Sindhī better, than the Sanskrit alphabet, the Sindhī being a genuine daughter of Sanskrit and Prākṛit. But appropriate as the Sanskrit characters are to the Sindhī sounds, they will under the present state of society in Sindh be hardly in their right place, religious prejudices preventing the great majority of the population from using them in their writings. Sindh has been the first Indian country, which has succumbed to the fury of the Moslim invaders, and Hinduism and the culture of Sanskrit literature has been

so completely swept away from its borders, that it is now, as has been stated, "a country without castes and Brahmins."

The Muhammadans of Sindh, as soon as they tried to employ their native idiom for literary purposes, detected, that the Arabic system, which had been forced upon them as a necessary consequence of the Islām, was deficient in many sounds; and they endeavoured to make up for this deficiency by dotting the nearest corresponding Arabic letters. The manner, in which they have done this, has not been very satisfactory. They were not led by any system and therefore the emendation, they attempted at, stopped half-way.

In the guttural class the Arabic base ك (k) was indiscriminately used to express the sounds k, kh; g, gh, ġ; the aspiration (kh, gh) was left unnoticed, and for the media g not even the corresponding Persian letter (گ) was supplied; the guttural ñ was expressed by the compound گن (nk).

In the palatal class the aspirate čh was happily distinguished by an additional dot (= چچ), and jh marked likewise چج; also the peculiar Sindhi ĵ (dy) was not forgotten and marked by چڄ; the palatal ñ (ny) was again expressed by the compound چنچ, so that in this class all sounds were provided with distinguishing marks.

In the cerebral class, which is completely wanting in the Arabic system, the bases of the dentals were retained and the dots distributed in such a way, as to distinguish them from the corresponding dentals, viz.: چ = t; چھ = th; چد = d, چڊ = dh, چڍ = ḍ; a method, which is not without ingenuity; but the cerebral r and the cerebral n were again completely forgotten (i. e. they were expressed by the corresponding dentals ر and ن) and left to the knowledge of the reader.

The dental class did not offer many difficulties; only the aspirates had to be provided with diacritical

marks, which was done in the following way: $\text{ث} = \text{th}$, $\text{ذ} = \text{dh}$.

The same was the case with the labial class, where the aspirates only were to be pointed out by peculiar marks; but here their skill seems to have left them. In order to express ph, refuge was taken to the peculiar Arabic and Persian letter ف (f), which was provided with two additional dots = ڦ ; bh having been expressed already by پ ; the peculiar Sindhi ب was dexterously rendered by ب .

The Sindhis had in this undertaking apparently the Sanskrit alphabet before their eyes, where the aspirates are written and treated as one sound. Accordingly they tried to express the aspiration of a letter by additional dots, which overloaded the few Arabic bases with diacritical signs.

The necessity further, to provide marks for the cerebral class, compelled them, to distribute afresh the dots for the dental aspirates, so that the eye finds only with difficulty a resting-place in the confuse mass and position of diacritical marks, as: $\text{ط} = \text{ṭ}$, $\text{ظ} = \text{ṭ}$; $\text{ث} = \text{th}$; $\text{ذ} = \text{th}$.

This attempt to adapt the Arabic characters to the sounds of a Prākṛit language is very interesting, though the method applied has followed a wrong track and has not been extended to all the sounds of the language. The way, in which this has been done in Hindūstānī, is far more correct, in fact, the only course, which can be taken in adapting the Arabic letters to an Indian language. The Arabic system knows no aspirates, and consequently the aspiration must be expressed by an additional ه , if the original character of the Arabic alphabet is to be preserved in any way; else a quodlibet will be made out of it, which may be designated by any name but Arabic.

It was therefore soon found, when European scholars began to pay attention to the Sindhi, that the

common Sindhī characters would not do for scientific purposes. New characters were in consequence composed by a Bombay civilian and unfortunately introduced into the government schools of Sindh, without being first submitted to the examination of competent scholars.

This new system, instead of striking at the root of the previous confusion, merely endeavoured to make up some deficiencies of the old, while retaining all its errors, so that it cannot even boast of the compactness of the old system.

The alterations and emendations were the following:

In the guttural class, where the old system was most deficient, as we have seen, the Persian letter گ g has been justly taken in, and from the Hindūstānī, the aspirate گھ gh, of which we fully approve. We should now reasonably expect to find the compound گھ kh corresponding to گھ gh; but to our utter surprise we find the old error repeated, and 'kh' again rendered by the simple base گ k. So it has happened, that all the prints published in this character are disfigured by the letter گ, which is now used throughout as the simple base for k, whereas it is well known, that گ is only used at the beginning of a word, when connected with a following letter and in the midst of a word only, when unconnected with the preceding and connected with the following letter, and that it is in no way differing, as regards its pronunciation, from گ; as a final letter the shape of گ has never been seen before.

The guttural n, which in the old system was consequently rendered by گ (nk), has been expressed in the new system by گ, which is quite inappropriate; for the base is not 'g', but 'n', pronounced with the guttural organ, and in the Arabic consonantal system it can only be rendered by a compound letter (گ ng). The peculiar Sindhī ḡ is marked گ; we have only to point out the inapplicability of two dots beneath گ, and the frequent confusions, to which it will give rise.

In the palatal class we meet with the same in-consequence; the aspirate čh has been taken over from the old system (چھ), whereas for jh the Hindūstānī compound جھ has been borrowed. In the other letters of this class only the dots have been differently distributed; j (in the old system marked ج) has been expressed by ج, and the palatal í by ع, which is less to the point than the old چ, which was as correct as it could be rendered.

In the cerebral class only the dots have been differently arranged as: t = ت (old system ت), th = ث (old system ث); d = د (old system the same), dh = ذ (old system the same), ð = ڈ (old system ڈ); the cerebral r, which had not been marked at all in the old system, has been borrowed from the Hindūstānī (ر), and the cerebral 'n' is marked by the antiquated method of placing a ن above it (ن), which is highly inconvenient in writing, and has therefore been justly discarded in Hindūstānī, where formerly the cerebrals used to be marked by the same letter.

In the dental class the old system has been retained unaltered.

In the labial class the base ف was retained for ph, with additional dots (= ف; old system ف); bh was rendered by ب, as in the old system.

We fully allow, that the old Sindhī system of writing did not answer its purposes, quite abstracted from its deficiency; but instead of emendating the old system by a different distribution of dots and inserting a few Hindūstānī letters, we consider it far more advisable, to adopt the whole Hindūstānī consonantal system, and to mark those sounds, which are peculiar to the Sindhī, by convenient dots.

The Sindhī language is restricted to the comparatively small province of Sindh; we cannot therefore see any reason, why the Hindūstānī alphabet, which

is known throughout the length and breadth of India, and which is a compact system in itself, should not be preferred to such a motley composition?

The number of the Indian alphabets should not be augmented, but rather, wherever possible, be restricted, as they only serve as barriers to mutual intercourse. If therefore the old system of writing proves unfit for literary purposes, we consider it for the best, to substitute one universally known, instead of emendating imperfectly a local alphabet, which has no chance to spread beyond its narrow borders.

As under the present circumstances it is not likely, that the Hindū portion of the community will adopt the Hindūstānī alphabet, owing to religious scruples on their side, we have chosen for them the Hindī characters, with some slight deviations from the system employed by Capt. Stack, which were imperatively necessary, and which will be noticed further on. We may say the same of the Hindī alphabet, what has been remarked on the Hindūstānī; it is well known throughout India, and the common vehicle of literature amongst the whole Hindū population. An emendation of the old Banyā characters would have been far more useless, than that of the Arabic system current amongst the Moslims.

§. 2.

I. The Sindhī consonantal system.¹⁾

	SINDHI.					ARABIC LETTERS.				
Gutturals:	ک; گھ	ک; گھ	نگ	ھ	...	ک	ع	ح	خ	غ
	ک; گھ	گ; گھ	ڱ	ھ	...	گ	.	.	.	.
	k; kh	g; gh	ṅ	h	...	g̃	;	ħ	χ	ɣ q
Palatals:	چ; جھ	چ; جھ	نج	ي	ش	ج				
	چ; جھ	ج; جھ	ڄ	ي	ش	ج				
	ç; çh	j; jh	ñ	y	š	j				
Cerebrals:	ت; ٿھ	ڌ; ڏھ	ن	ر; ڙھ	...	ڌ				
	ت; ٿھ	ڌ; ڏھ	ڻ	ڙ; ڙھ	...	ڙ				
	t; th	ḍ; ḍh	n	r; rh	...	ḍ				
Linguals:							ط	ص	ظ	ض
							t	s	ḍ	z
Dentals:	ت; ٿھ	ڌ; ڏھ	ن	ر; ل	س	...	ث	ذ	ڙ (Pers.)	
	ت; ٿھ	ڌ; ڏھ	ڻ	ڙ; ل	س	...	.	.	.
	t; th	ḍ; ḍh	n	r; l	s	...	ṯ	ḏ	z (ž)	
Labials:	پ; ڦھ	ب; ڳھ	م	و	...	پ	ف			
	پ; ڦھ	ب; ڳھ	ڻ	و	...	ڦ	.			
	p; ph	b; bh	m	v	...	b̃	f			

We subjoin here the common alphabetical order of the Arabic-Sindhī Alphabet:

1) In the Romanized transcription we have followed the Standard Alphabet, by Prof Lepsius (2^d edition).

Un-connected.	Final.	Med.	Initial.	Name.	Pronunciation.
ا	ا	ا	ا	اَلِف	'
ب	ب	ب	ب	بِي	b
پ	پ	پ	پ	پِي	p
ت	ت	ت	ت	تِي	t
ث	ث	ث	ث	ثِي	t̪
ج	ج	ج	ج	جِي	ʃ
چ	چ	چ	چ	چِي	ʃ̌
ڄ	ڄ	ڄ	ڄ	ڄِي	ɟ
ح	ح	ح	ح	حِي	h
خ	خ	خ	خ	خِي	x
د	د	د	د	دَال	d
ڌ	ڌ	ڌ	ڌ	ڌَه	d̪
ڏ	ڏ	ڏ	ڏ	ڏَه	ď̪
ڍ	ڍ	ڍ	ڍ	ڍَال	ɖ
ر	ر	ر	ر	رِي	r
ڙ	ڙ	ڙ	ڙ	ڙَه	r̪
ز	ز	ز	ز	زِي	z
ڙ	ڙ	ڙ	ڙ	ڙِي	ž

Un- connected.	Final.	Med.	Initial.	Name.	Pronun- ciation.
س	س	س	س	سین	s
ش	ش	ش	ش	شین	ṣ
ص	ص	ص	ص	صَاد	s̄
ض	ض	ض	ض	ضَاد	z
ط	ط	ط	ط	طَوِي	t
ظ	ظ	ظ	ظ	ظَوِي	ḍ
ع	ع	ع	ع	عَيْن	i
غ	غ	غ	غ	غَيْن	γ
ف	ف	ف	ف	فِي	f
ق	ق	ق	ق	قَاف	q
ک	ک, ک	ک	ک	کَاف	k
گ	گ	گ	گ	گَاف	g
مک	مک	مک	مک	مکَاف	ḡ
ل	ل	ل	ل	لَام	l
م	م	م, م	م	مِيم	m
ن	ن	ن	ن	نُون	n
ن	ن	ن	ن	نَہ	n̄
و	و	و	و	وَاد	v
ہ	ہ, ہ	ہ, ہ	ہ	ہِي	h
ي	ي	ي	ي	يِي	y

The (purely) Arabic letters are also used as numeral values, in recording (by brief sentences, in which the sum of all the letters must be added together) historical events.

ا	1	ح	8	س	60	ت	400
ب	2	ط	9	ع	70	ث	500
ج	3	ي	10	ف	80	خ	600
د	4	ك	20	ص	90	ذ	700
ه	5	ل	30	ق	100	ض	800
و	6	م	40	ر	200	ظ	900
ز	7	ن	50	ش	300	غ	1000

This method of computation is called abjad, from the first four letters, which are pronounced as a group. The following technical groups are:

هَوَز, حَطِي, كَلَمَن, سَعَقَص, قَرَشَت, تَحَكَّد, ضَطَف.

The Arabs have borrowed this whole system from the Hebrews and have therefore also followed the order of the Hebrew alphabet; the first nine letters represent the units 1—9; the nine following the tens, the nine following the hundreds and the last غ a thousand.

The order of the Hebrew alphabet goes only as far as ت (400); from thence the Arabs have gone their own way, by using those letters, which are peculiar to their own language.

1) The Gutturals.

The gutturals k, g are pronounced in the common manner; their aspirates, kh, gh, as all other aspirates, form, according to the Sanskrit system, one sound, and must therefore be pronounced by a strong breathing of the respective simple base. Peculiar to the Sindhī is the guttural ñ, which is throughout used as an independent sound (like the english ng in "sing"), and never precedes the letters of its own varga or class, in which case Anusvāra or simple n is employed (see Introduction §. 5). In the Hindī alphabet it is expressed by ङ, it being an original Sanskrit sound, but the Arabic system, which knows only one dental n (ن), offers great difficulties in this as in other respects. In Hindūstānī an independent guttural ñ is not to be met with; we have therefore been compelled to circumscribe it by the compound ङ ng, which comes nearest to it, following therein the track of the old Sindhī alphabet. But one difficulty still will remain, that the guttural simple ñ can thus not be distinguished from the guttural ñ preceding a letter of its own varga, as: اَنُ (अनु) anu, body, and اَنُ (अंगु), or more properly: अङ्गु) angu (āngu) a limb. In the alphabet, now in use, an attempt has been made, as has been adverted to, to obviate this difficulty (viz.: ڱ = ñ), but we cannot agree, that the problem has been solved satisfactorily, a false base having been chosen for the guttural nasal. Practically the difficulty will be easily surmounted by any careful student, as there are only a few nouns in the language, in which simple guttural ñ is found.

We subjoin here an alphabetical list of all those words, in which the simple (unconnected) guttural nasal is to be found:

اَنُ m. anu, body; اَنگارو m. añārō, Tuesday. اَنگاري f. añārī, a disease of the gums etc. اَنگاريو m. añāryō,

a bruise in the sole of the foot; اَنَكْرُ n. añaru, coal; اَنَكْرُ m. añuru, a finger's breadth. اَنَكْرُ f. añure, a finger; toe; اَنَكْنُ m. añanu, courtyard; اَنَكُوْتَهْ m. añūthō, the thumb; اَنَكُوْتِهِي f. añūthī, a thumb-ring. بَهَانَكُو m. bhānō, share, and its derivatives, as: بَهَانَكَايَتُو adj. bhānāitō, in shares; بَهَانَكِيرُو m. bhānērō, a sharer. پَهِينَكَنُو m. phēnanō, the orbicular excrement of camels (پَهِينَكِينِي f. phēniṇī, the orbicular excrement of sheep etc.). جَانَكُورُو m. jānūrō, the wild Beru fruit; جَانَكُورِي f. jānūrī, the wild Beru tree; چَنَكُو adj. čaṇō, good, and its derivatives. دِهِنَكَايِي m. dhināī, a manufacturer of saltpetre; دَانَكُورَنُ v. a. ḍānōraṇu, to flog; دُنِكْتُو adj. ḍuṇitō, stout; دُنِكِرِي f. ḍuṇirī, a stick to beat clothes with (in washing); دُھِنَكِنُو m. dhuṇiṇō, name of a fish. رَنَكُ m. raṇu, colour; رَنَكُنُ v. a. raṇaṇu, to dye, and its derivatives; رَنَكُو m. raṇō, a carpenter's chalk-string. سَانَاھُ f. sāṇāha, or: سَانَاھَتُو f. sāṇāha, care, and its derivatives (as: سَانَاھَتُو adj. sāṇāhitō, careful, سَانَاھُو adj. sāṇāhū, ditto); سَانَاھَنُ v. n. sāṇāhaṇu, to be careful. سَنَكُ m. saṇu, connexion by marriage, and its derivatives; سِنَكُ m. siṇu, born, and its derivatives; سِنَاگَارِي f. siṇārī, name of a fish (or: سِيگَارِي siṇārī); سَنَكْرُ m. saṇaru, the seed-pod of the thorn-tree; سَنَكُنُ v. a. saṇaṇu, to point out; سِينَكُ f. sīṇa, bow. مَانَكُو m. gāṇō, or مَانَكِي f. gāṇī, name of a fruit and shrub (*Grewia betuloefolia*). لَنَكُ m. laṇu, lameness (لَنَكُو adj. laṇō, lame); لِنَكُ m. liṇu, limb; لِنَكُ f. liṇa,

a trip in carrying; لِنَکُو m. linō, time, turn (besides: لِنَا f. linā, ditto). مَنک f. maṇa, a betrothed girl; مُنک m. muṇu, a grain of mung; مَنکَرُ m. maṇaru, fire; مُنکِرُ m. muṇirō, a mallet (used by washermen); مَنکنُ v. a. maṇaṇu, to ask, to beg, and its derivatives; مَنکُو adj. mōṇo, having the colour of mung; نِنکنُ adj. & adv. niṇunō, entirely, wholly. وَاَنکنُ m. vāṇaṇu, the egg-plant, and its derivatives; هِنک f. hiṇu, Assafoetida; هِنکِرُ m. hiṇirō, name of a fruit of an aquatic plant.

Another letter peculiar to the Sindhī is گ, گ̃; it is not found in Hindī or Hindūstānī, nor in any of the cognate dialects, and we have therefore been compelled to provide it with a mark of its own. After the precedent of the Paṣtō we have added a hook below the under parallel line, which marks off this letter strongly enough, without giving rise to any confusion or misconception. The pronunciation of گ̃ is quite peculiar; it is that of the letter g uttered with a certain stress in prolonging and somewhat strengthening the contact of the closed organ, as if one tried to double the sound in the beginning of a word, as gga. The pronunciation is so far quite in accordance with the origin of this and the other three letters, peculiar to the Sindhī, though they are now treated to all intents and purposes as simple letters; e. g. اَگُ āgū, the front, Prāk. अग, Sansk. अग्र (compare Introduction §. 15, b); لَگُ lāgō, applied, Prāk. लग, Sansk. लग (see Introduction §. 14); بَहَगु bhagō, broken, Prāk. भग, Sansk. भय. In other instances, where an original doubling of g cannot be proved etymologically, the use of this harsh گ̃ must be explained by the influence of the following letters, as: گَوتھُ gōṭhu, a village, Prāk. गोठ, Sansk. गोष्ठ; in this, as in similar cases, the weight of the double ṭṭh, which

in Sindhī has been reduced to its simple base by the prolongation of the preceding vowel, seems to have been thrown forward on g. Such an influence is especially exercised by a following r, as: گرو̄ garō, heavy, Prāk. गरु, Sansk. गुरु.

Both letters, g and ḡ, must be carefully distinguished in pronunciation, as the signification of a word varies considerably according to the use of one or the other letter, as: گرو̄ garō, mangy, but گرو̄ garō, heavy etc.

2) The palatals.

The palatals ज j and च ḥ, and their respective aspirates ज्ह jh, and च्ह ḥh, are pronounced in the common Indian way as simple sounds, and are grammatically treated as such, though they are, according to their present pronunciation, compound sounds. Originally they cannot have been pronounced, as they are at present, for else the grammatical rules of Pāṇini would be incomprehensible. In our days ज is pronounced as english j, and च as english ch, that is to say, as dž and tš respectively; how these sounds, if they are to be treated as simple ones, should be aspirated or doubled by any human organ, is past our conception. The old pronunciation of these letters¹⁾ must have gone through great variations, till they have become the compound sounds of the modern Indian idioms.²⁾ In the Roman transcription they have therefore not been marked by the palatal stroke (—), but by the same sign, with

1) See Standard alphabet, p. 93.

2) The pronunciation of the Marāṭhī च and ज as ts and dz respectively before the vowels a, ā, u, ū, ai, ō, does not fall under this head, as this is owing to Drāvidian influences and only occurs in words of non-Arian origin.

which the sibilant sh (= ś) is provided, to point out their modern pronunciation.

The Sindhī has preserved the palatal nasal *ñ* (ञ) as an independent sound, which never precedes the letters of its own varga, for which purpose anusvāra (and in Hindūstānī writing simple ण) is used. The Hindūstānī being destitute of a palatal nasal, we had to provide a new character. Following the analogy of the old Sindhī alphabet we chose for it the compound *ṇ*, which comes nearest to it, for the palatal *ñ* of the Sindhī is properly a compound sound, and is pronounced *ny*. The proper circumscription by *ني* would not do for this reason, that the palatal *ñ* is still considered by the Sindhī as a simple sound and rendered in Sanskrit writing by *ञ*; it ought therefore to be pointed out, as near as possible, as such, for which purpose the compound *ṇ* answers much better, than *ني*, which latter would give rise to many misconceptions. In the Romanized transcription it has simply been furnished with the palatal line = *ñ*.

The sign chosen for it in the alphabet at present in use viz.: *ج*, is not to the purpose, as the base is not *ج*, but the nasal *ن*, with a subsounding *y*.

The sibilant *श*, *ष* ś, which we have inserted in our scheme in the palatal row, is no longer a palatal sound at all, but a pure dental sh = ś. The original pronunciation of *श* is more than doubtful; now-a-days it is in no way differing from our common sh, and might therefore be as well classed under the dentals. The Arabic-Persian *ش* is always rendered in Sanskrit writing by *श*; but it is also found in pure Sindhī words, as: *شينہ* śīhu, lion etc. compare; Introduction §. 5.

Peculiar to the Sindhī is *ज*, *ञ*, *j*. It is now treated as a simple sound, but it has in most cases, as etymology proves, sprung from a double *jj* (= *ज्ज*), and is still pro-

nounced as a compound sound = dy; e. g.: اَاجُ āju (= adyu), to-day, Prāk. अज्ज, Sansk. अद्य (on the assimilating process see Introd. §. 15.); وِجَا vijā, science, Prāk. विज्जा, Sansk. विद्या; وِجُ vĕju, physician, Prāk. वेज्ज, Sansk. वैद्य. In other nouns though an original doubling of اَ cannot be traced etymologically, as: جَتُ jātu, a Jat, Hindī जट; and اَ is in such instances frequently exchanged for اِج, as: جَاتِرِي jātrī, or: جَاتِرِي jātrī, a pilgrim, Sansk. यात्री).

3) The Cerebrals.

The cerebrals ت t and ढ ḍ, and their respective aspirates, تھ th and ढ्ह dh are common to all the North-Indian vernaculars; they are pronounced by turning the tip of the tongue towards the roof of the mouth whilst sounding the dental bases, t, d, etc. respectively.

The Sindhī has likewise preserved an independent cerebral न, ण, ṇ, which is not bound to the letters of its own varga as: وَن vanu, a tree (Sansk. वन) تَهَن thanu, the teat of an animal, Hindī घन, Sansk. स्तन. It is pronounced very hard and resembles much the compound nr (in Paštō it is therefore very frequently rendered by nr).

In Sindhī it exchanges therefore occasionally its place with the cerebral र, as: مَانِهُون mānhū, man, or: مَانِهُون mārhū. The cerebral ढ ḍ, which in Prākṛit already frequently supplants the dental d, has in Sindhī given birth to two other cerebral sounds, viz.: ढ, ڙ ḍ, and ڙ, ڙ r, and this again aspirated, ڙه, ڙه rh.

ڢ, ڙ ḍ is pronounced in a similar way as گ; the cerebral ڢ (ڢ) is uttered with a certain stress in prolonging and somewhat strengthening the contact of the closed organ, as if a double ڢ was to be pronounced.

दोला (compare Introd. §. 6. 4). The simple cerebral **ḍ** has been thus nearly totally supplanted at the beginning of a noun by **ḍ̣**, and **ḍ̣** is only found in a few nouns, to distinguish them from others written else quite alike, as: **ḍ̣ḥō** **ḍ̣ḥō**, obstinate, but **ḍ̣ḥō** **ḍ̣ḥō**, seen.

It has therefore been a great mistake of Capt. Stack, that he has not distinguished ढ ढ from ढ ढ, and marked both sounds by the same diacritical dot (= ढ), though he has been aware of their different pronunciation. A Sindhī will never confound ढ ढ with ढ ढ; they are in his mouth thoroughly distinct from each other and have been differently marked already in the old Sindhī alphabet (viz.: ढ = ढ, and ढ = ढ). We were therefore compelled in this respect to deviate from Capt. Stack's Sanskrit alphabet, retaining for the simple cerebral ढ the original Sanskrit letter ढ, and marking the sound of ढ by a line beneath ढ (= ढ), the dot beneath ढ being reserved for some other sound, which we shall presently notice.

The cerebral ر, ر̣, and its aspirate رَ, ر̣h have sprung from the cerebral د d and دَ dh respectively (see Introduction §. 7, 2), as: رُ gurū, molasses, Sansk. गुड; دَرِرْهَاتَا drirhata (द्रिढता) firmness, Sansk. दृढता. We have noticed already (l. c.), that by far the greatest number of words, in which r or rh is to be found, is

taken from some aboriginal tongue, which is now lost, and which must have had a great predilection for cerebral sounds (as the Drāvidian idioms of the south) and to the influence of which the preponderance of the cerebrals in the north Indian vernaculars must be ascribed.

The two peculiar letters **ट** (ṭr) and **ड** (ḍr), which Capt. Stack in his *Sindhī Grammar* has advocated for the Sindhī under the cerebral class, are found, on nearer investigation to be compound sounds (see *Introduction*, §. 15.) and may therefore be safely discarded from the alphabet, as they ought to be written **ट्र** ṭr and **ड्र** ḍr respectively, as: **पुट्रु** putru, son, Prāk. **पुत्त**, Sansk. **पुत्र**; **द्राख** drākha, grape, Sansk. **द्राक्षा**. A subscribed r is also found in some nouns with the aspirate **ढ** ḍh, as: **द्रापणु** dhrāpanu, to be satiated, and its derivatives, as: **द्राइणु** dhrāiṇu, to satiate; **द्राउ** dhrāu, satiety, all of which are sprung from the Sansk. root **नृप्** (नर्पण); **डदु** ḍadhru (also written: **डदु** ḍadhru), a cutaneous disease, Sansk. **दद्रु**, Hindī **दादू** (compare *Introduction* §. 15. b. β).

We have not inserted the cerebral **ष** in the Sindhī alphabet, though in Capt. Stack's *Sindhī Dictionary* a few words are written with **ष**. This letter is completely ignored by the common people and left unnoticed in the old Sindhī alphabet; only a Brāhman now and then uses it, to show his knowledge of Sanskrit (compare *Introduction* §. 5).

4) The dentals.

The dental row offers nothing particular; **र** r, which is considered a cerebral in Sanskrit, has become a pure dental in the modern idioms.

5) The labials.

It is to be noted, that **फ** ph, is to be pronounced as the aspirate of **प**, **प** p, and never as f, which is of Arabic or Persian origin, wherever found.

Peculiar to the Sindhī is the letter **ب**, **ب̄** **b̄**; it is pronounced in the same way as **ḡ** and **ḍ̄**, being originally a double b, as: **ب̄** **ba**, two, Sansk. **व** (= **vva** = **bba**; see Introduction §. 15. *d. α*); **کُبو** **kubō**, hump-backed (see Intro. §. 13); **دَابَل** **ḍābalu**, weak, Prāk. **दुब्बल**, Sansk. **दुर्बल**. In other nouns however an original doubling of **b** cannot be traced out, and the language seems to use **ب** **b** and **ب̄** **b̄** quite arbitrarily, as: **بَابُو** **bābō**, father, but, **بَابُو** **bābō**, father's brother, both nouns being derived from the Turkish **بابا** father.

The nasal of this class is **m**; but when preceding a letter of its own varga it is supplanted by simple **n** (or **anusvāra**), as in all the other rows; e. g.: **اَنَب** (**अंबु**) **ambu**, a mango; **کُنْبَهَار** (**कुम्हार**) **kumbhāru**, a potter.

§. 3.

On the purely Arabic letters.

The Sindhī, as well as the Hindūstānī, has, in consequence of the forced introduction of the Islām, been considerably mixed up with Arabic elements, and though the vulgar pay no attention to the particular pronunciation of the genuine Arabic sounds, the original Arabic orthography has been generally adhered to.

Under the guttural class we find the letters: **ع**, **ح**, **خ**, **غ**, **ق**, the Roman transcription of which we have conformed to the Standard alphabet, though these letters are somewhat differently pronounced in Sindhī. **ع**, which is in Arabic treated as a consonant, is generally ignored and only its accompanying vowel articulated, as: **عَقْل** **ʾaqlu**, intelligence, is sounded: **akulu**. In the midst of a word **ع** is either passed unnoticed (i. e. only the respective vowel is uttered) as: **نِعَمَت** **niamata** (properly:

nizāmata) or ع with its accompanying vowel is pronounced as a long syllable, as: نَعْلَبَنْدُ a ferrier, is sounded like: nālbandu (properly: nālbandu). and by ignorant people also written accordingly; or the ع with its respective vowel is dropped altogether; as: طَعَامُ food (taṣāmu) is commonly pronounced: tāmu. The same is the case at the end of a word, where ع with its vowel is contracted by the vulgar to a long syllable, as: جَعَج receipt-account (jamaʿa) is pronounced like jamā, and mostly written accordingly; only the Mullās, who pretend to a knowledge of Arabic, affect the deep guttural articulation of the Arabic. In Sanskrit writing ع is therefore simply rendered according to its accompanying vowel, and not distinguished by any particular mark or dot.

The deep Arabic ح ḥ is treated in the same way and pronounced as simple h, as: حَالُ ḥālu, state, is sounded: hālu. The Arabic and Persian خ ḫ is commonly pronounced by the vulgar (especially the Hindūs, who are quite unable to articulate ḫ) as kh, as: شَيْخَ šīḫa, a spit, is sounded: šikha (Pers. سِيخ).

The Arabic or Persian غ ḡ is pronounced in Sindhī as simple g, and very frequently exchanged for ك k in writing, as: بَاغُ bāḡu, garden, is sounded as: bāgu; غَمُ ḡamu, grief, as: gamu etc.

The deep guttural ق q of the Arabic is articulated in Sindhī like simple k, as: قَوْمُ qōma, a tribe, clan (Arabic قَوْم), is pronounced like: kōma; قَوْلُ qaulu, word, like: kaulu etc. The Hindūs ignore all these foreign letters in their writings and render them by the nearest Sanskrit consonants, as has been adverted to.

The lingual letters, which are peculiar to the Arabic, are not distinguished in Sindhī pronunciation from the

corresponding dentals; ط *t* is sounded like common *t*, and ص *s* like *z*; ظ *ḍ* and ض *ẓ* likewise as *z*. The Hindūs on the other hand pronounce ط and ض like *j*, and render these letters promiscuously according to their actual pronunciation, which is frequently done by the Musalmāns likewise, especially the unlearned.

The Arabic letters, which figure under the dental row, viz.: ث *ṭ*, ذ *ḏ*, and ز *ẓ* (the two latter of which are also common to the Persian) are pronounced in Sindh (and India generally) as follows: ث like *s*, ذ and ز like *j*, whereas the Hindūs pronounce these two latter consonants like *j* and render them also accordingly by ज, which is not unfrequently done by the Moslims also.

The Arabic and Persian ف *f* is sounded by the Muhammadans as *f*, but by the Hindūs as *ph*, and rendered in their writings by ف.

§. 4.

II. The Sindhī vowel system.

We next subjoin a tabular survey of the Sindhī vowel system.

1) Simple vowels:

ا,	آ	ا	اي	ا	أ
अ,	आ	इ	ई	उ	ऊ
a,	ā	i (e)	ī	u	ū
		اي	او		
		ए	ओ		
		ē	ō		

2) Diphthongs:

آي	أو
ऐ	औ
ai	au

3) Nasalized vowels.

اَن	آَن	اِن	اَيْن	اُن	اُون
अं	आं	इं	ईं	उं	ऊं
ā	ā	ī	ī	ū,	ū
		اَيْن	اُون		
		एं	ओं		
		ē	ō		
		अَيْن	अُون		
		ऐं	औं		
		ai	au		



1) Simple vowels.¹⁾ The Sindhī uses all the vowels, common to the Sanskrit and Prākṛit; but it is to be noted, that i, when preceded or followed by h, or when closing a word, has the sound of short e (see Introduction §. 2. b). Ē and ō are in Sindhī, as already in Prākṛit, simple (and not Guṇa) vowels (see Introduction §. 2. d), and consequently always long (and not ancepts, as in Prākṛit).

As the Arabic is destitute of the sounds ē and ō, a great difficulty arises in Sindhī as well as in Hindūstānī, how to distinguish ī from ē, and ū from ō. The Indian grammarians have therefore invented the term of يَائِيَّ جَهُول yā-e majhūl, or the unknown يِي for the sound ē, and وَاوِ جَهُول vave majhūl, or the unknown و, for the sound ō; but at the same time no practical measures were taken, to mark off ē and ō by any diacritical sign, and the reader was left to help himself,

1) As we shall further on employ only the Hindustānī characters, we cannot enter here more minutely on the Sanskrit vowel system, and we refer therefore the student for nearer information to any Sanskrit grammar. We shall only make use of the Sanskrit characters in the course of this grammar, as occasion may call for.

as best he could. But as the distinction of ī from ē and ū from ō is somewhat difficult for a beginner, especially a European, and for the right understanding of the language very important, we have contrived to distinguish ē from ī by a perpendicular line, as: **کِی** kī, some, **کِی** kī, somewhat; and ō from ū by placing the sign **ـَ** above **و**, as: **تَوْن** tō, from-on; **تُوْن** tū, thou. In prints, destined for the use of natives, these distinctions may be dispensed with as more or less superfluous; but in prints, intended for the use of Europeans I have no doubt they will prove very serviceable and clear away many a stumbling block.

In Arabic writing the short vowels a, i, u are not expressed in the body of the consonants, but by mere marks, placed above or beneath the consonant, after which they are to be sounded; if the consonant happen to be an aspirate, the vowel mark is placed on the accessory **هـ**. The mark for a is **ـَ**, and is called **فَتْحَة** fath'ah (in Persian **زَبَر** zabar); the mark for i is **ـِ**, and is called **كَسْرَة** kasrah (in Persian **زِير** zīr, pronounced in India: zēr); the mark for u is **ـُ**, and is called **ضَمَّة** zammah (in Persian **پِش** pīš, pronounced in India: pēš) e. g. **فَنا** fana, **فِنی** fini, **فُنی** funu. But if a noun commence with a short vowel, **ا** (alif) must serve as base for the these vowels, the vowels themselves being considered only as auxiliary signs for the consonants, as: **اَنَا** ana, **اِنِ** ini, **اُنِ** unu. In Arabic initial **ا** is in these cases always provided with hamzah, as: **اَنْ**, **اِِنْ**, **اُِنْ**, but in Hindūstānī it is dispensed with, to which practice we shall also adhere in Sindhī.

The three long vowels: ā, ī, ū are expressed in the body of the consonants by the letters **ا**, **ي**, **و**, with the addition of the respective vowel points; in this case

ا, ي, و are called ساکین sākin, or quiescent, because they are not moved by a vowel of their own; e. g.: هَارِي hārī, a peasant; مَارُو mārū, a beater; مُورِي mūrī, capital (in trade) چِکَاٹُ čikāṭu, creaking. The same holds good with reference to the vowels ē and ō, which are not (originally) distinguished in writing from ī and ū, as: چِهَرُو čhērō, whetting.¹⁾

Long a, when initial, is expressed by ا and the sign ~ placed above it, as: اَدُّرُ ādaru, courtesy. This sign is called مَدَّه maddah, i. e. extension, and is properly an alif placed above horizontally. Long i and u, when initial, must be preceded by alif, to support the respective vowel point, as ي and و themselves are quiescent; e. g.: اِيَهو īhō, this very person; اُوَهو ūhō, that very person. The same is the case with ē and ō, as: اِيْدُو ēḍō, so large, اُوْدُو ōḍō, near.

ي and و when quiescent, should be provided with the sign jazm (ـَ), to indicate thereby, that they are not moved by a vowel of their own, as: اِيَهو, اُوَهو, اِيْرُو pīru; but this practice is generally neglected in Hindūstānī, as superfluous. If on the other hand ي and و be moved by a vowel put above or beneath them, they are no longer quiescent, but regular consonants, as: يَارُ yāru, friend; نِيَانُ niyānu, a tank; وَنُ vanu, tree; نِيَوَائِي nivāi, want of wind; وَوُ vāvu, formative of وَاءُ vāu, wind.

1) In some Arabic nouns final ي (generally without dots) is used with the power of alif, as: عِيسَى ʿisā, Jesus; ذِكْرِي ḍikrī remembrance. Note also the antiquated writing صَلَوَاتُ zalāt, prayer, تَوْرَاتُ taurāt, the Thōrah (pentateuch), which is falsely pronounced in India: taurēt.

2) The diphthongs ai and au.

The diphthongs ai and au are expressed in Arabic by a preceding fathiah and a following quiescent ي or و, which should be provided in this case with jazm, to prevent mistakes, as: **أَيْتَرُ** aiṭru, spinning wheel; **بَيْرَاقِي** bairāqī, an ascetic; **أَوْثَهُو** auṭhō, impure; **چَوْدھَارِي** čau-dhārī, round about. At the end of a noun no diphthong is admissible in Sindhī; compare Introduction, §. 1, 2.

3) The nasalized vowels or Anusvāra.

We have noticed already, that the simple dental n (ن) is now used in Sindhī before the letters of any varga indiscriminately, which in Sanskrit writing is commonly expressed not by the dental न, but by the sign called Anusvāra (ँ) e. g.: **कङ्गालु** (कंगालु) kangālu (properly: kaṅgālu) poor; **गङ्जो** (गंजो) gaṅjō, scald-headed; **नन्धो** (नंदो) nandhō, small; **रन्धु** (रंदु) randu, path; **बाम्ब** (बाम्भ) bāmbha, hag.

But besides this full nasal the Sindhī also uses the proper Anusvāra, which only communicates to the respective vowel a nasalizing touch, very extensively, and as both, full n and the nasalizing touch, which is communicated to a vowel, are expressed in Sanskrit writing by Anusvāra, and in Hindūstānī by the dental n (न), some confusion necessarily arises from this practice, to obviate which the following remarks should be carefully attended to.

α) Anusvāra (or ण) preceding another consonant must always be pronounced as a full nasal, if the vowel of the syllable be short, as: **पंधु**, **पन्धु** paṇḍhu, journey; but if Anusvāra precede 'h' in a short syllable, it is always to be pronounced as such, i. e. only a slight nasalizing touch is thereby communicated to the vowel,

as: **जहिं**, جَہِیْ jāhē; **मुंह**, مُنْهُ mūhu, mouth; in a few words, where full n precedes h, it must be rendered in Sanskrit writing by न, not by Anusvāra, as: **चिन्ह** cīnha, a sign; **थन्हाणु** thanhaṇu, to compress. In Hindūstānī writing no such distinction can be made, as there is only one (ن) at hand, which must serve as full nasal or Anusvāra, as the case may be; nothing is therefore left to the student, but to commit these few words to memory. We must repeat here, what has been remarked already, that the use of the Arabic characters offers great difficulties when applied to a Prākrit language of India.

b) Anusvāra preceding a consonant in a long syllable is to be pronounced as a full nasal, as: **बांठि**, بَانْٹِہ bāṇṭhe, ravenousness; **पींघ**, پِیْنگَہ pīngḥa, a swing; **कुंधु**, کُونْدُہ kūndhu, a young man; **वेंदो**, وِیْندُو vēndō, going; **लोबडु**, لَوْبَرُ lōmbaru, a male fox. But if the long vowels, provided with Anusvāra, be followed by h, s or v, they are to be pronounced with a nasalizing touch only, as: **थांहर**, تَہَانْہَر thāhara, steadiness; **मांसु**, مَانْسُ māsu, meat, **थांवरु**, تَہَانْوَر thāvaru, Friday; **मीहु**, مِیْہُ mīhu, rain; **मेंहि**, مِیْہِ mēhe, buffalo etc. Where full n precedes h in a long syllable, it must be rendered by न (in Hindūstānī writing a further distinction is impossible), as: **बान्ही**, بَانْہِ bānhī, a slave-girl, but: **बांह**, بَانْہَ bāha, arm.

c) At the end of a word Anusvāra always retains its proper nasalizing touch, be the final vowel short or long, as: **प्री**, پْرِی prī, friend; **भूं**, بْہُون bhū, earth; **मुंहिं** mūhē (Formative of the I. pronoun sing.); also in compound words, as: **भूंभूं**, بْہُون بْہُون bhū bhū, buzzing. This rule is based on the fact, that in Sindhī every

word must needs end in a vowel (which however may be nasalized).

d) Anusvāra, placed between two vowels, be they short or long, always retains its proper nasalizing sound, as: **अई**, **اَيْش** āī, and; **माइणु**, **مَائِنُ** māṇu, to measure; **आऊ**, **اَؤ** āū, I; **किआऊ**, **کِاؤ** kiāū, it has been done by them (compare: Introduction §. 4).

The same holds good with reference to Anusvāra, following a diphthong (see: Introduction §. 1, 2), as: **राँशो**, **رَؤشَو** raūšō, merriment (= rāūšō); **मैँठ**, **مَيْئِثَه** māiṭha, madder (= māiṭha).

In the Romanized transcription, which we shall add throughout this grammar, the two different sounds of Anusvāra are rendered in this way, that the sound of full n is always expressed by n, whereas the nasalizing touch, which is communicated to a vowel by Anusvāra, is marked by the sign ~ placed above it, as: **अंतु**, **اَنْتُ** = antu; but **आऊ**, **اَؤ** = āū.

We have already adverted to the great difficulties, under which the Hindūstānī labours to mark the original sound of Anusvāra, as it has only one n (and this the dental n) at its disposal. The difficulty is already great in Hindūstānī, and still greater in Sindhī, which is so much addicted to the use of nasalized vowels. In addition to what has been stated already, we beg to turn the attention of the student, as far as the Hindūstānī characters are concerned, to the following points:

Final **ن** has always the sound of Anusvāra proper (see under c) and need therefore not perplex the student, as: **मार्हण**, **مَارْهَن** mārhū, man; **ज़ालु**, **زَالِن** zālū, women; **आँ**, **اِاَن** iā, from this place, **तिआ**, **تِاَن** tiā, from that place.

Anusvāra, separating two short or long vowels (see under d) is rendered by **ن**, and can be recognized as

such by its position; in this case, to obviate all misconceptions, we have furnished the second vowel with hamzah, to point out thereby, that the following vowel is not to be read together with the preceding, but that ن closes the first syllable, as: اَنِى (اَنِى) ī-a, thus; تَنِى (تَنِى) tī-a, in that manner; گَئِى (گَئِى) gāū, cow. If the second vowel chance to be a long one, ى (without dots) provided with hamzah must precede the same, to serve as basis for the vowel point (see further on under: Hamzah), as: سَانِى سَانِى (ساڻي) sālī lord; هِنِى (هِنِى) hīō, mind; چِئِى چِئِى (چِئِى) čīāū, it has been said by them.

In such like instances, as exhibited under *a* and *b*, the Hindūstānī alphabet offers no means of distinguishing the full nasal from Anusvāra proper, as: بَانِى بَانِى bānhī, a slave-girl, بَانِى bāha, arm, and these difficulties can only be overcome by practice. In the old Sindhī alphabet and in that now in use no notice whatever is taken of these and such like intricacies.

§. 5.

On the other orthographic signs.

1) The sign ˉ (مَدَّة maddah, prolongation) is placed on initial alif, to render it long, as: اَئِى اَئِى ātharu, pack-saddle. In the midst and at the end of a word maddah is not placed on alif, if the preceding consonant be moved by fatliah, in which case alif is called سَاكِن sākīn, or quiescent, as: رَاِى رَاِى rā-jā, prince; مَالَا mā-lā, garland; but if the preceding consonant is provided with jazm (i. e. not moved by a vowel), alif must have the sign of maddah, as commencing a syllable, e. g.: قُرْآنُ qur-ānu, Qorān, not qu-rānu.

2) The sign ˆ (جَزْم jazm, abscission), placed above

a consonant denotes, that the consonant thus marked is not moved by a vowel, as: **وِلھو** vel-hō, idle; **مَرْدُ** mar-du, man; **سَرگي** sar-gu, heaven. In old Sindhi writings the use of jazm is hardly to be met with, as they preferred to provide such a mute letter with kasrah, the sound of which was hardly heard in pronunciation, as: **مَرِيْدُ** mari-du, instead of **مَرْدُ** mar-du, and served quite the purposes of jasm. We cannot adopt this system, as in many cases it will give rise to confusion and misconceptions.

3) The sign **تَشْدِيد** (tašdid) corroboration, placed above a consonant denotes, that the letter in question is to be doubled. In the old Sindhi writings the tašdid is hardly ever to be met with, as they were in the habit to express even an originally double letter by its simple base, e. g.: **کَم** kamu, business, instead of **کَمم** kammu. It is now used only in such instances, where the doubling of a consonant is rendered necessary in order to distinguish two in other respects identical words, as: **اُن** una, by him, and **اُنن** unna, wool.

4) The sign **هَمْزَة** (hamzah, i. e. punction) is used in the midst and at the end of words as a vicarious base for i; when two vowels, short or long, meet in a word, the second vowel must be supported by the base **ي**, furnished with hamzah, e. g.: **پِي** piu, father; **جِي** jue, the den of an animal; **هِنَر** hīara, now; **جُنِي** jūa, louse; **قَائِم** qā-imu, standing; **بھائِر** bhāura, brothers; **جِيئي** jī-u, life; **کُو** kuō, rat; **گھائِر** ghā-ū, wounding; **اِي** a-i, a goal etc.

A final short vowel, preceded by ā, ū, ō is usually supported by the sign hamzah alone, as: **بھاء** bhā-u, brother;

pō-e, after; هُوَ hū-e, sound. But if , be radical in a word, hamzah with its accompanying vowel is placed upon , as: نَانُو nāu, fame, Formative نَانَوِ nāva; گَنُونُ gāū, cow; مَارْهُنُو mārhūa, Formative of: مَارْهُونِ mārḥū, man.

In the Formative Singular of such nouns, which end in ī, hamzah is dropped for brevity's sake, as: هَنْدِي handī, a pot, Formative: هَنْدِي handia (instead of هَنْدِي); but in nouns like سَانِيِين sāī, lord, hamzah must be retained in the Formative, to prevent mistakes, as: سَانِيِينِ sāīa.

Note. The sign ~ (وَصْلٌ waṣl, conjunction) only occurs in Arabic phrases and constructions; it joins two words, the latter of which begins with alif, the accompanying vowel of which is dropped and the final vowel of the preceding word drawn over or rather joined to the following; e. g.: عَبْدُ الْمَلِكِ ʿabdu-lmaliki (instead of: عَبْدُ الْمَلِكِ); قَالَ أَسْمَعُ qāla-sma; (instead of: قَالَ إِسْمَعُ); بِسْمِ اللَّهِ bismi-llāhi.

The use of the so-called Tanvīn (i. e. َ, ِ, ُ, pronounced in Arabic 'un', 'an', 'in') in Sindhī is to be disproved of, as the Tanvīn is only a fanciful invention of the Arabian grammarians, and by no means fit to express the Sindhī nasalized short (and least the long) vowels.

SECTION I.

THE FORMATION OF THEMES IN SINDHI.

Chapter I.

The termination of Sindhi nouns.

§. 6.

In the formation of themes the relative position, which the Sindhī holds to the Sanskrit-Prākṛit on the one side, and to its modern sister-tongues on the other side, is most clearly delineated.

The peculiarity of the Sindhī, and at the same time the great advantage, which it possesses over the kindred idioms consists therein, that every noun, substantive, adjective, pronoun, participle and infinitive ends in a vowel. By this vocalic termination the Sindhī has preserved a flexibility, and at the same time a sonorousness, of which the other modern vernaculars are completely destitute.

After what has been remarked on the nature of the diphthongs in Sindhī (see Introduction §. 1), it may be easily gathered, that no Sindhī noun can end in a diphthong. A Sindhī noun may therefore end in a, i(e), u; ā, ī, ū, ō; no noun ever ends in ē, and those, which seem to do so, are not in the Nominative, but in the inflected case. A final vowel may also be nasalized, as: مَارْهُونَ mārhū, man, چَوْتَهُونِ čōthō, the fourth; پَرِی pri, friend, which is especially the case, if a word terminate in a long vowel, but this constitutes, after what we have said on the nature of Anusvāra, no exception to the general rule.

In the formation of themes the Sindhī has in the main followed the course pointed out by the Prākṛit, but it has created many new formations, independent and irrespective of the Prākṛit. The levelling process

of the modern idioms has already gained the ascendancy, and terminations, which the Prākṛit, though seized already by the same tendency, has as yet kept asunder, have been thrown together into one class in Sindhī.

The Sindhī has lost the neuter, which has been already discarded in the Apabhransha dialect of the Prākṛit, the immediate predecessor of the modern Sindhī. This, as it seems, has been the first step, to break the fetters of the old compact mother-tongue, and to initiate the levelling process of the present idiom.

Inasmuch as the Sindhī requires a vocalic termination for every noun, the distinction of the gender is not so perplexing as in the other dialects, which offer great difficulties in this point to the student. The terminations, which have been already fixed for the Prākṛit, have been mostly retained in the Sindhī, with the exception of neuter nouns, which have been, for the most part, transferred to the masculine terminations, less to the feminine.

I. The termination u.

1) Masculine themes in u.

By far the greatest number of nouns end in Sindhī in **u**, and are, with a few exceptions, masculine. This short final **u** corresponds to the Prākṛit termination **ओ** *ō*, which, according to the testimony of the old Prākṛit grammarians, has been already shortened to **u** in the Apabhransha dialect.¹⁾ To this class belong in Sindhī:

1) In Marāṭhī final **अ** (= Sindhī **u**) has on the whole become already quiescent; the same is the case in Bangālī, except when final **a** is preceded by a double consonant, in which case it is heard. In Panjābī, Hindī and Hindustānī final **a** has quite disappeared; for nouns like *piu*, father, *māū*, mother etc. are in Panjābī exceptional cases.

a) such nouns, as end in Prākṛit in ō (= Sanskrit final **ञ**), as: **نَر** naru, a man, Prāk. **णरो**, Sansk. **नर**; **كَهَر** gharu, house, Prāk. **घरो** (Sansk. **गृह**); **كَم** kamu, business, Prāk. **कम्मो**, Sansk. **कर्मन्**. To this class belongs also a number of adjectives (though the majority of them has retained the termination ō), as: **تَل** talu, hidden; **اَجَر** ajaru, imperishable; **اَجِيْتُ** aċetu, careless. Most of the adjectives, borrowed from the Arabic or Persian, assume this termination, as: **تَمَام** tamāmu, whole; **غَرِيب** yarību, poor etc.

b) such nouns, as end originally in u, as: **ء** vāu, wind (Sansk. **वायु** n.; **مَد** madu, liquor, Sansk. **मधु**) n.

c) such nouns, as end in Sanskrit in tā (crude form tr), Prāk. ā (by elision of t), or which add in Prākṛit the termination āro, as: **پِي** piu, father, Sansk. **पिता**, Prāk. **पिअ**; **بِهَاء** bhāu, brother, Sansk. **भ्राता**, Prāk. already **भादु** (in Sindhī again with elision of d); **بِهَتَار** bhatāru, husband, Prāk. **भत्तारो**, Sansk. **भर्ता** (see Varar. V, 31).

2) Feminine themes in u.

These are, comparatively speaking, few in number; to this class belong such nouns, as end in Sanskrit in u, and are feminine as: **شَيْء** f. thing, Sansk. **वस्तु**; **دِهِيْن** dhēṇu, a milk-cow, Sansk. **धेनु**; or such, as have shortened ū to u, as: **سَس** sasu, mother-in-law, Sansk. **श्वश्रू**; **وَج** vijū, lightening, Prāk. **विज्जू**, Sansk. **विद्युत्**.

In a few themes original ā has been shortened to u, the Sindhī following herein the levelling process no-

ticed under 1, *c* irrespective of gender, as: ماء māu, mother, Prāk. माआ, Sansk. माता; دھي dhiu, daughter, Prāk. already धीदा and धीआ, Sansk. दुहिता (see Varar. IV, 33; Lassen p. 172, note); نھي nūhu, daughter-in-law (Sansk. सुषा); quite exceptional is بهي bhēnu, sister, Prāk. बहिणी (Hindūst. بھي), Sansk. भगिणी. A number of nouns ending in u, which are feminine, we shall enumerate when treating of the gender of nouns; their origin is in many cases unknown.

II. The termination o.

Besides the nouns ending in u, those ending in ō are the most numerous in Sindhī; they are all without exception masculine. The old Prākrit termination ओ (ō) has been split in Sindhī into two classes, in one of which ō has been shortened to u and in the other of which it has been retained unaltered.

A strict rule seems not to have been attended to in settling these two terminations, but usage alone seems to have decided for the one or the other; in many instances both terminations are promiscuously used. It is worthy of notice, that many nouns, which end in Sindhī in ō, have retained the corresponding termination ā (masc.) in Hindī and Hindūstānī and to a great extent also in Marāṭhī, Bangālī and Panjābī, and similarly those nouns, which terminate in Sindhī in u, have dropped the corresponding vocalic termination (i. e. अ, a) in the dialects quoted.

Examples: ترو tarō, the sole of a shoe (Sansk. तल n.) گلو galō, the throat (Sansk. गल m.), whereas on the other hand گل galu, cheek, corresponds to the Sansk. गल m., لړکو lūrko or لړکي lūrku, a tear; سونارو sōnārō,

goldsmith (Sansk. सुवर्णकार); on the other hand لَهَارُ luhāru, blacksmith (Sansk. लोहकार).

In some instances the language has made use of these two different terminations to derive words of somewhat different meanings from one and the same base, as: چورو čūrō, powder, filings, and چورُ čūru, adj. powdered (both from the Sansk. चूर्ण); مَتھو mathō, the head, and مَتھُ māthu, the top (both from the Sansk. मस्त n.).

We may however lay down some rules, by which the Sindhī seems to have been guided in retaining the original Prākrit termination ō:

1) Adjectives, derived directly from the Sanskrit-Prākrit, have on the whole retained the ending ō, as: چَنکو čaṇō, good (Sansk. चङ्ग); مِٹھو miṭhō, sweet (Sansk. मिष्ट); کھارو khārō, bitter (but کھارُ khāru, s. m. potash, both being derived from the Sansk. क्षार); رُکھو rukhō, hard (Sansk. रुक्ख). In many nouns though both terminations are allowed as: اَدھرو adharō or: اَدھرُ adharu, helpless; نِدھرو nidharō or: نِدھرُ nidharu, wretched; اَبھرو abharō or: اَبھرُ abharu, poor.

Adjectives derived by secondary affixes from other themes generally retain the termination ō, as: جَتِکو ja-tikō, relating to a Jat (جَٹ); وَانِکو vānikō, belonging to a Vānyō (وَائِيو); رَسِيلو rasilō, juicy (from رَس); کھانْدِيرو khāndīrō, patient (from کھانْد). Excepted are the affixes اَن (Prāk. वन्तो, Sansk. वत्), as: دِياَوَان dayāvānu, compassionate; آل (आलु), as: دِياَل dayālu, the same as دِياَوَان; آر (आर), when forming substantives, as: دَهَنَارُ dhanāru, herdsman, whereas the affix ārō generally forms adjectives, as: سَگھارو saghārō, strong (from سَگھ).

2) Verbal nouns, which are derived from the root of verbs by lengthening the root-vowel, take the termination *ō*, as:

گهٽڻو *ghāṭō*, decrease, from گهٽڻ *kehṭan* to decrease.

ڇاڙهڻو *čārḥō*, increase, from ڇڙهڻ *čehṭan* to rise.

The termination *u* however is also in use, especially with such themes, in which the root-vowel is not lengthened, as:

مرڪڻ *marku*, boasting, from مرڪڻ *mārkṇ* to boast.

جهٽڻ *jhaṭu*, snatching, from جهٽڻ *jeṭṭan* to snatch.

3) Nouns of agency, which are derived from verbal roots by prolonging the root-vowel (if it be short) take likewise the termination *ō*, as:

واڏهڻو *vāḍhō*, carpenter, from واڏهڻ *vāḍṇ* to cut.

توبڻو *tōbō*, diver, from توبڻ *tōḇan* to dive.

ڇيرو *čirō*, sawyer, from ڇيرڻ *čirṇ* to split.

4) Some nouns of foreign origin change (original) final *ā* or *ah* to *ō* in Sindhī, as: بابو *bābō*, father, Hindūst. (turkish) بابا *bābā*; دروازو *darvāzō*, door, Pers. دروازہ *darvāze*.

5) All participles present and past end in *ō*, as: هلندو *halandō*, going; هليو *haliō*, gone; ماريندو *mā-rindō*, beating; ماريو *māryō*, beaten.

6) It is seldom the case, that an original final *ā* (fem.) has been changed to *ō*, and rendered thereby masculine, as: تارو *tārō*, star (Sansk. तारा *tārā* fem.); Hindī likewise तारा *tārā* masc. (Paṣtō: ستوري *stōrai* m.); in Marāṭhī it is both masc. and fem.

Note. If we turn to the cognate dialects, we find, that the Gujarātī comes nearest to the Sindhī in this respect; for nearly all the nouns, which end in Sindhī in *ō* and *u*, have retained

the termination *ō*. As the Gujarātī has preserved the neuter, it forms a regular neuter ending in **उँ** *ū* from masc. themes in *ō*, as: **कुतरं** a dog (in general), but **कुतरो** a male dog. This neuter termination we consider identical with the Sindhī vocalic termination *u*, with the only difference, that Anusvāra, as the sign of the neuter, has been added.

In Marāṭhī, Hindī and Panjābī, final *ō* of the Sindhī and Gujarātī has been changed to *ā*. The Panjābī and Hindī (Hindūstānī) have lost the neuter, but the Marāṭhī, which has preserved it, forms from the masc. termination *ā* a regular neuter ending in **ऐ** (*ē*), which is in its origin nothing else but another masc. termination with the addition of final Anusvāra, just as in Gujarātī (compare on this point: Lassen, Instit. linguae Prāk. p. 429, 14); e. g.: **केलें** n. a plantain, Hindī: **केला** m., **करणें**, inf. (properly a neuter verbal noun, as in Sanskrit), Sindhī **کَرَنُ** karaṇu (m.), Hindī **करना** karna (m.), Gujarātī: **करायું** (n.), as in Marāṭhī.

In Bangālī the termination *ā* (= *ō* of the Sindhī) is only to be met with in a few nouns, as: *gādhā*, ass, *ghōrā*, horse etc. (nouns like: *pitā*, *kartā*, do not come properly under this head, as they are Sansk. Nominatives); as a masc. termination of adjectives *ā* is unknown in Bangālī.

III. The termination *ū* (masc. and fem.).

Nouns ending in *ū* correspond generally to the Sanskrit-Prākrit termination *u*, which in Prākrit is lengthened in the Nom. Sing. to *ū*; those nouns, which end already in Sanskrit *ū*, retain this termination unaltered in Sindhī. Some feminine nouns, ending in *ū*, shorten their final *ū* again to *u*, adding at the same time one of the feminine terminations *i* (*e*) or *a*; e. g.: **سَائِرُ** *sāū*, upright (Prāk. **साउ**, Nom. Sing. **साऊ**, Sansk. **साधु**), Hindī **साधू** or **साधु**; **تَارُونُ** *tārū* m. palate, Sansk. **तालु** n. (Hindī **तालू**); **بُھُونُ** *bhū* f. earth (or: **بُھَنِي** *bhuē*), Sansk. **भू**; **جُونُ** *jū* f. louse (or: **جُنِي** *jūa*), Sansk. **यूक** (with eli-

sion of final k in Sindhi); آبرو ābirū, honor (or آبروء ābirūe) Pers.

Under this head fall many appellatives and adjectives, ending in ū, āū and ākū, corresponding to the Sansk. affixes uka (उक) and āku (आकु), as: تارو tārū, a swimmer (= tāruka), رهاكو rahākū or: رهاكو rahāū, inhabitant, كهتاو khatāū, profitable (from كهت f. profit).

In some nouns ending in ū, a more complicated contraction has taken place, as: مارهُون mārḥū, man, Prāk. माणुसो, Sansk. मानुष (n of the Prākrit interchanging with r, and स being exchanged for h); دارهُون ḍārḥū, pome-granate, Sanskrit दाडिम, Hindūstānī کچھون kačḥū, tortoise, Sansk. कच्छप (p = b = v = ū); وچھون vičḥū, scorpion, Prak. विच्छुओ, Sansk. वृश्चिक.

IV. The termination ā

Nouns ending in ā correspond generally to the Sanskrit-Prākrit termination ā (आ) and are all feminine, as: چنتا čintā, anxiety, Sansk. चिन्ता; हाचा hačā, murder, Sansk. हत्या; जात्रा jātrā, pilgrimage, Sansk. यात्रा; केमा khimā, patience, Prāk. खमा, Sansk. क्षमा.

There exists a small number of masc. nouns, now ending in ā, which must not be confounded with the preceding fem. nouns, as they are of quite a different origin; they are derived from Sansk. themes ending (in their crude forms) in an (अन्) and र (रच्), and in the Nom. Sing. in ā, as: राजा rājā, prince; आत्मा ātmā, soul; कर्ता kartā, the agent (in grammar). There are also a few foreign words, ending in ā, as: آشنا āšnā, an acquaintance, Pers. آشنا.

A few adjectives end likewise in ā (or ă) as: دَاتَا dātā, liberal; تَالَان tālā, exhausted etc.

V. The termination ă.

The vocalic ending ă is shortened from the preceding fem. termination ā, just as u has been shortened from ō. To this class belong in Sindhī:

1) such nouns, as end in Sanskrit and Prākṛit in ā, as: جِبْهَ jibha, tongue, Prāk. जीहा, Sansk. जिह्वा; نُّهَ nūha (besides نُهَ) daughter-in-law, Sansk. नुषा; دِهِي dhia (besides: دِهِي), daughter, Prāk. धीदा or धीआ; سَيْن sa-ina, sign, Sansk. सञ्ज्ञा; مِيْن miña, marrow, Sansk. मज्जा. Further a great quantity of nouns, the formation of which is peculiar to the Sindhī, and which may be derived from every verbal root. This formation corresponds exactly to the Sanskrit affix अङ् (ā), which is added to the verbal root, to form fem. nouns, as Sanskrit: भिदा, breaking, from भिद् etc. In Sindhī the derivation of such nouns from verbs is quite general, and the language acquires thereby a great facility to form verbal nouns, as: چَوَكْهَ čökha, investigation, Infin. چَوَكْهَن (root: چَوَكْهَ); گُڊْ guḍa, pounding, Inf. گُڊَن (root: گُڊْ). The Sindhī always falls back on the Prākṛit, especially in such nouns, as differ already from the Sanskrit, by dropping either a final consonant in Prākṛit or affixing a new vocalic ending, as: آسِيسَ āsisa, blessing, Prāk. आसिस, Sansk. आशिस.

2) The feminines of such adjectives, as end in the masc. in u, as: كُبْهَ kubha, fem. of كُبْهَ kubhu, unfortunate; سُجَانْ sujāna, fem. of سُجَانْ, well-knowing.

Only a very small number of adjectives ends originally in ă, which remain unchanged in gender, num-

ber and case, as: جَال jāla, or جَار jāra, abundant; جَام jāma, much, many.

3) Many nouns fluctuate, as regards their termination, between a or i (e), as both short vowels form the common fem. terminations in Sindhī, e. g.: نَار nāra or نَار nāre, woman; آرا āra or آره āre, affection; چھن čhana or چھن čhane, a pond; ریر rīra or ریر rīre, quarrel. From the adjectives, ending in u, the feminine may be formed in final a or i (e), as: آتور atōra, or: آتور atōre, what cannot be weighed, masc. چریت; آتور čaryata or چریت čaryate, mad, masc. چریت.

This accounts easily enough for the phenomenon, that such nouns, as end in Prākṛit in ī, have adopted in Sindhi the termination ā (simply exchanging one fem. termination for another), as: بهین bhēna (besides: بهین), sister, Prāk. बहिणी Sansk. भगिनी; دھر dhure, origin, Prāk. धुरा, Sansk. धुर. But, though the respective fem. terminations are often exchanged, the original gender is commonly strictly adhered to in Sindhī, and the case is very rare, that an original masc. noun has been changed to a feminine, as: بآپھ bāpha, fem. steam, Sansk. वाष्प masc. (in Hindī it has become likewise a fem.).

Note. As regards the cognate dialects, the Bangālī has throughout preserved the original fem. termination ā; the Marāṭhī too has remained more faithful to the Prākṛit, but it has already in many cases shortened ā to a, and then dropped it altogether (in pronunciation at least) as: जीभ jibh, tongue, वार vāt, way etc. In the other dialects long final ā has either been preserved, or it has been thrown off altogether (after having first been changed to ä).

As in Sindhī every noun must needs end in a vowel, such fem. nouns, as are borrowed from the Hindūstānī, frequently adopt the fem. termination 'a' in Sindhī, as: Hindūst. زمين (f.)

earth, Sindhī زمین zamīna; Hindūst. ملک (f.) property, Sindhī ملک milka. In a few nouns the gender has been changed, as: Hindūst. کتاب kitāb (fem.), Sindhī کتاب kitābu, masc.

VI. The termination ī. (masc. et fem.)

Themes in ī are in Sindhī of both genders; they are either masculine or feminine.

1) Masc. themes ending in ī.

The termination ī in masc. nouns corresponds:

a) To the Sansk. affix ī (= in), as: دھرمی dharmī, religious (Sansk. धर्मिन्), Nom. Sing. धर्मी; स्वामी svāmī, lord (Sansk. स्वामिन्); हाथी hāthī, elephant (Sansk. हस्तिन्).

b) To the Sansk. affix ika (इक = क), by eliding k and lengthening i to ī; e. g.: هاری hārī, a peasant, Sansk. हालिक); اوثی ōthī, a camel-rider (from اُنْه camel); تهیکری thēkirī, a seller of earthen ware (from تهیکر earthen ware).

c) To the Sansk. adjectival affix य y, by changing य to ī, as: پریں prī, friend, Sansk. प्रिय; ابھائی abhāgī, unfortunate, Sansk. अभाग्य.

d) To the Sansk. affix ईय iya, by eliding य, as: ہندی Hindī, Indian; سندھی Sindhī, relating to Sindh. With this class coincide all the Persian and Arabic adjectives, formed by the so-called ياءِ نِسْبَت or y of relation, as: فارسی fārsī, Persian; عربی arabī, Arabic; زخمی zaḡmī, wounded.

e) To Sanskrit masc. crudes, ending in i, which ge-

nerally have final i lengthened to ī in Sindhī, as: کَوِي kavī, poët, Sansk. कवि; کَلِيکَال kalī-kālu, the Kālī-period; in some nouns though original short i has been preserved, as: هَر hare, Vishnu (Hindī: हरि and हरी); پَئي pa-e, lord, master (= पति).

There remains a number of words in ī, which are masculine, the origin of which is unknown, as: بَلي belī, servant; بَاندِهي bāndhī, a log of wood floating in the river; مَانِجِهي mānjhī, a brave man.

Note. The Bangālī and Marāṭhī agree with the Sindhī in this respect, as Bang. svāmī, Marāṭhī hattī etc. On the other hand both idioms have retained the masc. termination i, as Bang. pati, lord, Marāṭhī kavi, poët. In Panjābī, Hindī (Hindūst.) final i of masc. themes is occasionally preserved, but more generally dropped, as har = hari; kav = kavi; or lengthened to ī, as in Sindhī, as kalī = kal, kali.

2) Feminine themes ending in ī.

a) Feminine nouns, which end in Sanskrit and Prākrit in ī, remain unchanged in Sindhī, as: نَدِي nadī, river, Sansk. नदी; سَتِي satī, a virtuous woman, Sansk. सती; رَانِي rānī, queen, Sansk. राज्ञी.

The Prākrit termination आ (fem.) is occasionally changed to ī in Sindhī, as: وَايِي vāi, speech, Prāk. वाआ, Sansk. वाच f.; in some nouns ī (Prāk.) is shortened to i (e), as: دِثِي dīṭhe, sight, Prāk. दिदी, Sansk. दृष्टि. Neuter nouns, which end in Sansk. in ī, may accept in Sindhī the fem. termination ī, as: دَहि dāhī, sour milk, Prāk. देहि, Sansk. दधि; مَکِهي mākhī, honey, Sansk. माक्षिकं, with elision of क.

b) The fem. termination ī corresponds to the Sanskrit-Prākrit affix ī, by which feminines are formed

from masculine themes. In Sindhī this termination is used to derive feminines from masc. bases ending in ō and u, as: **بھالی** bhalī, fem. good, from the masc. base **بھلو** bhalō; **گولی** gōlī, a slave-girl, from **گولو** a slave; **بانبھنی** bāmbhanī, the daughter or wife of a **بانبھن** or Brāhman.

c) The fem. termination ī is frequently applied to express littleness, smallness, neatness, as: **کاتی** kātī, a small knife, from **کاتو** kātu, a large knife; **ماتی** mātī, a small jar, from **ماتو** mātō, a large jar etc.

d) The fem. affix ī, which corresponds to the Sansk. abstract affix **ञि**, derives abstract nouns from adjectives and substantives, as: **چوری** čōrī, theft, from **چور** čōru, a thief; **بھالی** bhalī, goodness, from **بھلو** bhalō, good; **دوستی** dōstī, friendship, from **دوست** dōstu, friend.

VII. The termination i (ë) fem. (m.)

The ending 'i', which, with a few exceptions, denotes fem. nouns, corresponds to the Sanskrit-Prākrit termination ī; in others, again, it has been shortened from ī, in the same way, as final a from ā; e. g.: **بدھ** budhe, intelligence, Sansk. **बुद्धि**; **مَت** mate, opinion, Sansk. **मति**; **نار** nāre, woman, Sansk. **नारी**.

The termination i (e) is generally used to derive feminines from adjectives and substantives ending in u, as: **آچیت** acēte, thoughtless, masc. **آچیت**; **سدھر** sa-dhare, stout, masc. **سدھر**; **گدھ** gaḍahe, a jenny-ass, from **گدھ** a jack-ass; **پریت** parīte, a washerwoman, from **پریت** a washerman.

In some few nouns the original gender has been changed, as: **آگی** āgē, fire (fem.), Prāk. **अग्नि** (m.),

Sansk. **आमि** m.; **دیه** dēhe (fem.), body, Sansk. **देह** (m. and n.); in the cognate dialects both are alike fem.

It is further to be observed, that in Sindhī final i (e) very frequently interchanges with final ā, both vowels constituting the regular fem. terminations, e. g.: **آر** āre or **آر** āra, fondness; **گورے** gōre or **گورے** gōra, thunder etc. Among these we must also reckon forms like **دھر** dhure, origin, Prāk. **धुरा**, short final a having been exchanged for i (e).

In Sindhī, as well as in the cognate dialects, some few masc. nouns have retained the original Sansk. termination ī, as: **ہر** hare, Vishṇu, **رَسپت** rāspate, the planet Jupiter (Thursday) **پائی** pa-e, lord, husband (= **पति**); in others again ī has been shortened from ī, as: **کبھر** kēhare, lion, Sansk. **केशरिन्**, Hindī **केहर्** and **केहरी**; **سہائی** sahāe or **سہائی** sahāī, a helper.

To some nouns of foreign origin the termination i has also been added, as: **خدا** xudāe, God (Pers. **خدا**); **سیتھ** sēthe, a Hindī wholesale merchant (Hindūst. **سیٹھ**); **خضر** xidire, nom. prop. of a Pīr and fabulous prophet.

Some adjectives, mostly such, as have been borrowed from a foreign source, take also the termination ī (m. and fem.), as: **خوش** xušē, joyful (Pers. **خوش**); **شاد** šāde, delighted (Pers. **شاد**); **چورس** čaurase, four-square, Sansk. **चतुरस्र**.

Chapter II.

Primary themes.

§. 7.

With reference to the formation of themes the Sindhī conforms on the whole to the system of the Prākrit, inasmuch as Prākrit themes are directly received into the Sindhī with such modifications, as are peculiar to the Sindhī; but besides this the Sindhī has set up new formations of themes, whereby the inherited stock of vocables, be they of Ārian or non-Ārian origin, is peculiarly remodelled. As regards the themes taken directly from the Prākrit, we must refer to the Sindhī system of sounds in our Introduction, which alone can give the necessary clue as to the origin or derivation of a theme from the Prākrit; in the following we shall only treat of those themes, which have been formed either by modifying the old inherited stock, or by new rules altogether, irrespective of the Prākrit. Nouns of Arabic or Persian origin we shall exclude from our present investigation, as they have nothing in common with the genuine Sindhī forms, but are intruders, without which the Sindhī may well exist; they partake so far of the general laws of the formation of themes, that a vocalic termination is affixed to them, according to their respective gender, to render them susceptible of inflexion.

We shall divide the Sindhī formation of themes after the precedent of the Sanskrit into two classes, viz: that of primary and secondary themes, that is, such themes, as are directly derived from verbal roots, and such, as are derived from primary nouns, by means of affixes.

§. 8.

I. Formation of abstract nouns.

1) Themes in ä, ĩ (ě); u, ō (ī fem.)

a) Themes in ä are formed from the simple root of the verb (which in Sindhī, as well as in Sanskrit, is always monosyllabical, derivative verbs excepted) by dropping the Infinitive (verbal) affix **अनु**. In this way an abstract noun may be formed from every Infinitive of the language, exhibiting the abstract idea of the verb.

The affix ä corresponds to the Sansk. affix **आ**, which is added to the root of the verb (as: Sansk. **पूजा**, worship, from **पूज्** to worship) to form abstract nouns; in Sindhī final ā has been shortened to ä; see §. 6, V. e. g.:

جَاگَ jāga, wakefulness, Inf. جَاگَنُ jāgān to be awake.

مَرْهَ marha, pardon, Inf. مَرْهَنُ marhān to pardon.

پِرَ pirā, pressure, Inf. پِرَنُ pīrān to press.

سَگَ sāgha, strength, Inf. سَگَنُ sāgān to be strong.

In some roots 'a' is prolonged to ā and 'u' to ō, as:

جَهَاتَ jhāṭa, snatching, Inf. جَهَاتَنُ jhāṭān to snatch.

بَهُولَ bhōla, error, Inf. بَهُولَنُ bhōlān to err.

b) Themes in i (e) are formed in the same way as the preceding (i being only a variation of ä), with this difference, that the root-vowel must always be prolonged (viz: a = ā; u = ō; i = ē), e. g.:

گَهَاتَ ghāṭe, decrease, Inf. گَهَاتَنُ ghāṭān to decrease.

گَهَومَ ghōme, vagrancy, Inf. گَهَومَنُ ghōmān to wander about.

وِرَ vērhe, quarrel, Inf. وِرَنُ vērān to quarrel.

c) The termination 'u' corresponds to the Sansk. affix **अ**, which derives abstract nouns from verbal roots, with

or without prolonging the root-vowel; the same is the case in Sindhī, where the root-vowel either remains unchanged, or is prolonged. E. g.:

مَرَكُ marku, boast, Inf. مَرَكُنْ to boast.

لَاهُ lāhu, descent, Inf. لَهْنْ to descent.

بِهْرُ bhōru, crumb, Inf. بَهْرَنْ to crumble.

پَهْرُ phēru, turn, Inf. پَهْرَنْ to turn (v. n.).

d) Themes in ō are identical with those in u, both terminations interchanging very frequently (see §. 6, I. II.).

كَهَاتُو ghaṭō, deficiency, Inf. كَهْتَنْ to decrease.

چَارْهُو čārḥō, increase, Inf. چَرَهَنْ to rise.

جَهَكِرُو jhagirō, quarrel, Inf. جَهَكِرَنْ to quarrel.

ڏِيڪهارو ḍēkhārō, showing, Inf. ڏِيڪهارَنْ to show.

The masc. termination ō is occasionally exchanged for the fem. termination ī, with some slight alteration of meaning, as:

چَارْهِي čārḥī, ascent, Inf. چَرَهَنْ to ascend.

ڏِيڪهاري ḍēkhārī, showing.

2) Themes in aṇu, aṇō, anī, aṇe.

a) Themes in aṇu coincide in Sindhī with the form of the Infinitive, which, according to the testimony of the old Prākṛit grammarians, has already been the case in the Apabhraṇsha dialect, the Infinitive of which terminated in अणं (compare: Lassen, Instit. ling. Prāk. p. 469, 5).

The old Sanskrit Infinitive in तुम् (the Latin supinum) has been lost in the modern vernaculars (the Gujarātī Infinitive, which ends in वुं, is properly a neuter Gerundive, and the Bangālī infinitive, which ends in tē, is a past participle, used as a verbal noun) and

in its place the verbal noun in **अनं** is substituted, which in Marāṭhī has remained neuter (**एँ** ē), but which in Sindhī and the other dialects has been classed under the masculine termination. The affix **anu** is added directly to the verbal root in Sindhī, and forms abstract nouns, corresponding to our Gerunds; as:

دِسَنُ **dīsanu**, seeing, root: دِسَ.

هَلَنُ **halanu**, going, root: هَلَ.

مَرَنُ **maranu**, dying, root: مَرَّ.

The naked verbal root, as pointed out, is in Sindhī nowhere to be met with, but always ends in the Imperative, where alone its crude form comes to light, in a vowel, which is either u (in intrans. verbs) or i (e) (in transitive verbs). According to the final vowel of the Imperative the junction vowel of the Infinitive or verbal noun varies in Sirō, as: مَارِنُ **māriṇu** (to beat), لِيَتِنُ **lētāṇu**, to recline, but in Lār no regard is had to this circumstance, and all Infinitives (irrespective of their transitive or intransitive signification) terminate in **anu**.

b) Themes in **anō** (which is originally only a variation of **anu**) express in Sindhī more a lasting action, occupation or state; e. g.:

دِيَانَو وَتَهَانَو **dīanō vathanō**, giving and taking (debt and credit), besides: دِيَتْنُ وَتَهْنُ, which is also in use.

بِهَرِنَو **bharinō** (or **bharanō**) embroidering (literally: filling up).

مَانِنَو **māninō** (or **maṇanō**) betrothal (literally: asking [for a bride]).

Note. It is remarkable, that all the other dialects, with the exception of the Bangālī and Gujarātī, have retained this termination of the Infinitive, as: Marāṭhī **करणेँ** (ē being originally identical with ō, see Lassen §. 144, 2), Hindī (Hindūst.) **करना**, Panjābī: **karnā**.

c) More frequently than the termination *anō*, the feminine ending *anī* is used in Sindhī, serving at the same time to express smallness, neatness etc. of a state or action:

چَوَني čavanī, saying, Inf. چَوَنُ to say.

هَلَني halanī, going, gait (comely), Inf. هَلَنُ to go.

بَهَرَني bharinī, embroidery, Inf. بَهَرَنُ to fill.

وَدَهَني vadhanī, carpentering, Inf. وَدَهَنُ to cut.

Occasionally the termination *anī* is shortened to *anī* (*anē*), as:

گَهَني gehane, swallowing (besides: گِهَني), Inf. گِهَنُ to swallow.

The affix *anī* (or *inī*) joined to roots of causal verbs, signifies: expense for, wages for, as:

کَهَنَانِي khanānī, expense for carrying or lifting up (portage), Inf. کَهَنَانَنُ to cause to carry.

چَارَانِي čārānī, expense for grazing cattle, Inf. چَارَنُ to cause to graze.

دُهَارَانِي dhuārīnī, expense for washing, Inf. دُهَارَنُ to cause to wash.

3) Themes in ti.

This affix corresponds to the Sansk. affix **ति**, by which abstract nouns are derived from verbal roots, besides those, which are taken over directly from the Sanskrit. The junction vowel in Sindhī is *ā*, as:

کَهَپَتي khapate, expense, Inf. کَهَپَنُ to spend.

وَنَتي vanate, pleasure, Inf. وَنَنُ to please (act.).

آوَتِ جَاوَتِ āvate jāvate, income, expense (literally: coming, going); as Infinitives they are not used in Sindhī, but in Hindi.

چھاڌتِ čhaḍate, remission, Inf. چھڌنُ to remit.

هَلتِ halate, behaviour, Inf. هَلنُ to go.

4) Themes in aṭu, āṭu (ā—ū), āṭī (fem.).

These affixes correspond to the Sansk. Unādi-affixes **अनु, आनु** which Bopp has justly referred to the Infinitive affix **तु = तुम्**. This is borne out by their signification, which in Sindhī nearly coincides with that of the Infinitive, as:

گھیرتِ ghēraṭu, surrounding, Inf. گھیرنُ to surround.

چھمکاتِ čhimkāṭu, jingling, Inf. چھمکنُ to jingle.

بھنکاتِ bhunikāṭu	} humming, Inf. بھنکنُ to hum.
بھنکاءِ bhunikā-u	

(by elision of t.)

پھیراتی phērāṭī, giddiness, Inf. پھیرنُ to cause to turn.

Note. A feminine may thus be derived nearly from all masc. bases.

5) Themes in aṭru (or: iṭru).

The Sindhī affix aṭru (or iṭru) corresponds to the Sansk. affix **इत्**, and denotes an instrument, where-with any thing is done or executed. In Lār this affix is assimilated to aṭu (= aṭṭu) whereas in Sirō the original compound is preserved (only with transition of t into ṭ); the root-vowel is lengthened in some themes; e. g.:

واچترِ vājaṭru, a musical instrument, Inf. وچنُ to sound.

وهترِ vahiṭru, a beast of burden, Inf. وهنُ to labour.

6) Themes in ikō.

This affix corresponds to the Sansk. affix **अक** (the junction vowel 'a' having been changed to i in Sindhī),

which in Sanskrit forms nouns of agency, but in Sindhi also abstract nouns; as:

دَارِكُو dārikō, quarrelling, Inf. دَرَنُ dāṛṇu to quarrel.

پِٹِڪُو piṭikō, beating the forehead, Inf. پِٽَنُ piṭṇu to strike one's head in grief.

§. 9.

II. Formation of appellatives and attributives.

7) Themes in ō.

This affix corresponds to the Sansk. affix **ञक्** (final **क्** being commonly elided in Sindhi), and forms attributives from verbal roots, which imply habitual action or possession. The root-vowel, if it be short, must be prolonged, as in Sanskrit; e. g.:

وَادَّهَو vād̄hō, carpenter, Inf. وَدَّهَنُ vād̄ḥṇu to cut.

چِرَو čirō, sawyer, Inf. چِرَنُ čirṇu to split.

تَوَبَو tōbō, diver, Inf. تَبَنُ tḇṇu to dive.

گَهَوَزُو ghōrō, seeker, Inf. گَهَوَزَنُ ghōṛṇu to seek.

In some few instances the full Sansk. affix has been preserved, as:

گَائِڪُ gāiku, singer, Inf. گَائِنُ gāiṇu to sing.

8) Themes in ū.

This affix corresponds to the Sansk. affix **उक्** (final **क्** being elided in Sindhi and u lengthened) and forms verbal adjectives or attributives, implying a habitual or characteristical action or state. The root-vowel, if short, is commonly prolonged before the accession of this affix; as:

وَادَّهَو vād̄hū, increasing, Inf. وَدَّهَنُ vād̄ḥṇu to increase.

تَارُو tārū, a swimmer, Inf. تَرَنُ tṛṇu to swim.

وِہَرُہُو vēṛhū, a quarrelsome person, Inf. وِرَّهَنُ vēṛḥṇu to quarrel.

پھورُ phōrū, a robber, Inf. پھرنُ to rob.

گھومُ ghōmū, a vagabond, Inf. گھمنُ to stroll about.

Without prolongation of the root-vowel:

رہو rahū, inhabitant, Inf. رہنُ to stay.

سہو sahū, patient, Inf. سہنُ to bear.

9) Themes in āku, ākū, āū.

This affix denotes the same idea of a habitual state or action, as the preceding. It corresponds to the Sansk. affix **आकु** which is added to the verbal root either unaltered, or with final 'u' lengthened, or with elision of **क्** = ā-ū. In some instances the root-vowel is prolonged. E. g.:

رہاکو rahākū, } inhabitant, Inf. رہنُ to stay.
 رہاؤ rahā-ū, }

پياڪو piāku, drinker, Inf. پينُ to drink.

وِرچاؤ vircāū, wearisome, Inf. وِرچنُ to be wearied.

وِڪاؤ vēcāū, for sale, Inf. وِڪنُ to be sold.

پيتاؤ pētāū, ill-wishing, Inf. پتنُ to curse.

10) Themes in andō (and indō).

This affix corresponds to the Sansk. affix **अन्**, Prāk. **अन्तो** (in Sindhī with change of the tenuis into the media), and forms in Sindhī, like as in Sanskrit and Prākrit, present participles. According to the final vowel of the Imperative the participle ends in andō (Imperative u) or indō (imperative i); some participles are formed irregularly.

لاڱندو laḡandō, applying, Imper. لاڱ, Inf. لڱنُ to apply.

ڏسندو ḍisandō, seeing, Imper. ڏس, Inf. ڏسنُ to see.

بهيليندو bhēlindō, trampling, Imper. بهيل, Inf. بهيلنُ to trample.

تھیندو thīndō (irreg.), Imper. تھیٹی, Inf. تھینن to become.

Note. We advert to the fact, that all the other dialects have dropped the nasal in the Prak. affix अन्तो; the Panjābī has preserved it in a few forms, as: hundā, being, jāndā, going, but in the regular present participle the affix is always dā, with change of the tenuis into the media, just as in Sindhī. In Gujārātī the present participle ends in tō, as: लखतो lakhtō, writing; in Hindī (Hindūst.) in tā, as: likhtā, hōtā, being etc. Hinduī tu, as: लिखतु likh-tu, writing. The Marāṭhī has formed two present participial affixes from the Sanskrit affix अत्; one in tā, corresponding to the Hindī form, as: लिहिता, writing, with which affix the terminations of the substantive verb अस्मि coalesce into the forms tō, tōs etc.; the other in at or īt. The Bangālī has discontinued the use of the present participle (with the exception of a few Sanskrit participles ending in at) and only employs the same in conjunction with the substantive verb āchī, as: dēkhitēchi, I am seeing; but dēkhitē is by no means to be confounded with the Infinitive, as it is commonly represented in Bangālī grammars, it is the Locative form of dēkhit, and signifies literally: I am in seeing (the Locative of the present participle is similarly used in Sindhī and Hindī).

11) Themes in āru, ārū, ārō.

These affixes correspond to the Sansk. affix आरु, and form in Sindhī verbal nouns, which imply a habitual action or occupation; their number is not very considerable; as:

گھورارو ghōrārō, } a pedlar, Inf. گھورنن to seek.
 گھورارو ghōrārū, }
 پوجارو pūjārō, a worshipper, Inf. پوجنن to worship.
 پینارو pīnārō, a cotton carder, Inf. پیننن to card
 cotton.

پینارو pēnāru, a beggar, Inf. پیننن to beg.

12) Themes in ibō.

This affix corresponds to the Sansk. affix तथ्य, incredible as this may appear. In Sindhī त has been elided and vv (= थ्य) hardened to b (= bb). It forms now in Sindhī present participles passive, though its original use and signification has still been preserved in the formation of the future passive; as:

بُوسَاتِيبُو būsātībō, being choked, Inf. بُوسَاتِنُ to choke.
 دَرُوهِبُو drōhibō, being cheated, Inf. دَرُوهِنُ to cheat.
 جَهَلِيبُو jhalibō, being seized, Inf. جَهَلِنُ to seize.

13) Themes in inō.

We have in Sindhī two themes in inō, which are quite of different origin and signification.

a) The affix inō, added to such verbs, as end in the Imperative in u, corresponds to the Sanskrit affix अन्, which forms attributives and appellatives; in Sindhī the affix ana has been changed to inō; e. g.:

هَلِنُو halinō, going, Imper. هَلْ.
 مُرْكِنُو murkinō, laughing, Imper. مُرْكُ.
 چِهْرِكِنُو čhirkinō, shying, Imper. چِهْرُكُ.
 بَهْرِنُو bhurinō, crumbling, Imper. بَهْرُ.
 پِنِنُو pininō, begging, Imper. پِنُ.

Some of these attributives are also used substantively, and as such they are also susceptible of the fem. termination, as:

چِهْنِكِنُو čhinkinō, rattle, i. e. that which rattles.
 پِهْرِنُو phirinō, spooling-wheel, i. e. that which turns round.
 دِهَوَنُو dhāvane, a pair of bellows, i. e. that which blows (the fire).

b) The other affix inō or anō corresponds to the

Sanskrit affix **अनीय**, by which the future passive participle is formed in Sanskrit. Thus in Sindhi a Gerundive may be derived from every transitive verb by means of this affix, as:

मारِنो marinō, one who is to be beaten, Inf. मारु to beat.

दिन्नो dianō, what is to be given, Inf. दित्तु to give.

धुवानो dhuanō, what is to be washed, Inf. धुवु to wash.

रथानो rathanō, what is to be taken, Inf. रथेनु to take.

In the same way a gerundive is derived from causal verbs, as:

वराइनो varāinō, what ought to be returned, Inf. वराउ to return (act).

धुवारिनो dhuārinō, what ought to be caused to wash, Inf. धुवारु to cause to wash.

Note. In Hindī and Hindūstānī the Gerundive coincides with the Infinitive, with this difference, that the Gerundive is properly a masc. substantive, and therefore only a Gerund; very rarely the Infinitive is employed as a Gerundive proper (i. e. future passive participle), agreeing with its governing noun in gender, as in Sindhi. The Panjābī on the other hand quite agrees with the Sindhi in this respect, using the Infinitive as a regular Gerundive, agreeing with the governing noun in gender, number and case, like an adjective. The Marāṭhī forms the Gerundive by the affix **आवा** (आवी, आवे), which corresponds to the Sansk. affix **तव्य**, Prāk. **तव**; in Marāṭhī **त** has been elided and in its place 'a' lengthened, as: **करावा** faciendus, **मोडावा** dirumpendus. In a similar way the Gerundive is formed in Gujārātī by the affix **अवो** (= **तव**) as: **लखवो** scribendus. In Bangālī occurs no proper formation of a Gerundive, but the Infinitive (in distinction from the verbal noun) is generally employed to express the idea of a Gerund, like in Hindī, as: amākē jāitē hai, mihi eundum est; but many original Gerundive forms are borrowed directly from the Sanskrit, as: kar-tavya etc., the affix anīya is also in use.

14) Themes in iō or yō.

The affix iō or yō is used to derive perfect participles; it corresponds to the Sanskrit affix त्, Prākṛit already द्, and frequently altogether elided, for which reason y or i is inserted in Sindhī, to prevent the hiatus.

The perfect participle of transitive verbs always implies a passive signification, whereas that of intransitive verbs only expresses the idea of the Præterite.

In many instances the Sindhī has preserved the original Sanskrit-Prākṛit forms of the perfect participles, modified according to the laws of elision and assimilation current in Sindhī.

پَسيو pasyō (or پَسيو pasīō) seen, Inf. پَسَنُ to see.

جَهَلِيو jhalyō (or: جَهَلِيو jhaliō) seized, Inf. جَهَلَنُ to seize.

مَوْتِيو mōtyō (or: مَوْتِيو mōtiō), returned, Inf. مَوْتَنُ to return.

ڏِٿو ڏِٿhō, seen; Sansk. दृष्ट, Prāk. दिद्दो; Inf. ڏَسَنُ to see.

اُتو utō, said; Sansk. उक्त, Prāk. उक्त्तो; Inf. اُتَنُ to say.

Note. In reference to the formation of the perfect participles (the perfect participle active in वत् has completely disappeared from the grammar of the modern vernaculars) a great variation is to be noticed in the cognate dialects. The Panjābī, Gujārātī, Hindī and Hindūstānī quite agree in this point with the Sindhī, as Panjābī: ghallā, sent, Inf. ghalkhā; Gujārātī: lakhyō, written; Hindī (Hindūst.): likhā (without insertion of euphonic i or y in the place of elided t or d), Inf. likhñā.

The Marāṭhī differs considerably in this respect from the idioms mentioned; it forms the perfect participle by affixing ला to the root of the verb (with the junction vowel a or i, according to the intransitive or transitive signification of a verb). The first traces of this affix must be sought already in Prākṛit; the

Sansk. न has been changed in Prākṛit to the corresponding media द, and this again to ड (ḍ); see Lassen: Instit. linguae Prāk., p. 363. We have seen already (Intro. §. 6, 4) that ड is frequently changed to ड़ in the modern idioms, and this is again exchanged for ल; as: चालला gone, Inf. चाललें; मोडिला broken, Inf. मोडलें.

The Bangālī coincides in this point quite with the Hindī, as: dēkhā, seen (without insertion of euphonic i or y).

Chapter III.

Secondary themes.

§. 10.

Under this head we shall class all those themes, which are derived from other nouns by means of an affix. We shall pass again all those forms, which have been taken directly from the Sanskrit-Prākṛit, and only treat of those formations, which are peculiar to the Sindhī.

I. Formation of abstract nouns.

Abstract nouns may be derived either from substantives or adjectives, the affixes which the Sindhī uses for this purpose, agree all, more or less, with the primitive Sanskrit-Prākṛit affixes.

1) Themes in ī. (f.)

By the affix ī a very numerous class of abstract nouns is formed, which, after the analogy of the Persian, may be derived from any noun. The final vowel is always dropped before this affix, but in other respects the noun undergoes no change whatever.

The affix ī corresponds to the Sanskrit affix यं (n.); in Sindhī as well as in the other dialects the feminine

also occasionally to be met with, is only a variation of *te* (i having been lengthened to *ī*); as:

سَوْرَتِ sāvate, straightness, from سَوْرَتُونِ sāō, straight.

گھٹتی ghatitī, deficiency, from گھٹ ghaṭe, deficient.

Note. The affix *tī* is also used in Hindūstānī, as: کمّتی deficiency, from کم.

5) Themes in āne or āine. (f.)

These affixes form a numerous class of abstract nouns from adjectives implying colour or some other inherent quality. They correspond to the Sanskrit affix **इमन्**, which forms abstract masc. nouns. In Prākṛit the termination **अन्** may already be lengthened to **आण** (cf. Var. V, 47); in Sindhī **म** (m) has been elided, which is rather uncommon, and a feminine termination substituted for the masculine; the *i* of *iman* has been dropped = *āne*, whereas in the form *āine* *i* has been inserted after *ā*, to render the 'a' more prominent. E. g.:

آچھان ačhāne, whiteness, from آچھو ačhō, white.

وِکِران vėkirāne, breadth, from وِکِرُو vėkirō, broad.

وَدان vadāne, greatness, from وَدُو vadō, great.

The affix *āne* (*āine*) is very often exchanged for the affix *āī* (see 2.), and with many nouns both affixes are promiscuously used, as: کاران or کارائی blackness.

Note. In Hindī and Hindūstānī the affix *ma* (= **इमन्**) is rarely used, and no longer as a masculine; e. g.: garimā, f., importance. In Gujārātī the affix *ān* is used (as neuter) e. g.: ऊँडाण depth, from ऊँडो deep; the Marāṭhī and Bangālī have preserved the original Sansk. termination *mā* (as masc.). In Pan-jābī, as in Gujārātī, the form *ān* (m.) is used, as: उँचān, m., height, from उँचā, high.

6) Themes in pō, pā, pāī, pi; paṇu, paṇō; taṇu; āṭu.

These affixes form a very numerous class of abstract nouns from substantives and adjectives. We can see in

this instance, how the Sindhī has managed to derive from one and the same Sanskrit affix a whole series of abstract affixes, which at the first glance seem to have nothing in common.

The affixes pō, pa, pāi, pī are derived from the Sansk. abstract-affix त्वा tva, which is assimilated to प्प (see Introd. §. 15, D, b.); from this the Sindhī has formed the various terminations pā, pa, pāi, pī.

From the self-same affix त्वा, which has become त्व in Prākṛit (from an original त्वन), and which has been assimilated in the Apabhraṃsha dialect to प्प (see Lassen, p. 459, 9.) the Sindhī has derived the affixes paṇu or paṇō.

From the same source has also sprung the affix taṇu, but by a different process of assimilation, the semi-vowel v being assimilated to the preceding dental (cf. §. 15, D, b.).

Another form of assimilation is the affix āṭu (viz: tva = tta = ṭta = āṭa, the double consonant being cleared away by lengthening the preceding vowel), which is only rarely used.

The final vowels undergo various changes before the accession of the above mentioned affixes; final u is generally changed to 'a' or 'i', with the exception of the fem. nouns ending in 'u', which preserve 'u' (as radical) before all affixes; final ō is either weakened to 'a' or changed to ō; final ī is either shortened to 'i', or with a subsounding 'a' to 'ia', which is mostly the case before the heavy affixes paṇu, paṇō; final ū is shortened to 'u' with a subsounding 'a' (= ua) before the heavy affixes paṇu, paṇō; long ū though keeps now and then its place before them; before the lighter affixes pō, pa, pāi, pī final ū is shortened even to 'i' (for euphony's sake). Final short 'a' may be lengthened to ā, to distinguish the feminine themes from those ending in 'u'; but this depends on usage.

a) final u:

پَنَدِٔٲَٲَنُو pandītapānō, m. The 'duty of a pandit;
from پَنَدِٔٲُ.

چَہُوکِرَاتُ čōkirātu, m. The time of youth;
from چَہُوکَرُ čōkaru, a boy.

وَتَہُٲُ vathupa; f. assistance;
from وَتَہُ fem. laying hold of.

b) final ō:

نَنَدَہِٲَٲَٲِٲِ nandhapāi, f.

نَنَدَہِٲَٲَٲِٲِ nandhapānu, m.

نَنَدَہِٲِٲِٲِ nandhēpō, m.

Time of youth; from نَنَدَہُو
nandhō, small.



c) final ī:

وَاہِٲِ vāhipa, f.

وَاہِٲِٲِ vāhipō, m.

The duty of a وَاہِٲِ m. or watchman.

کَاٲَدَہِٲِٲِ kāndhiapa, f.

کَاٲَدَہِٲِٲِٲِ kāndhiapanu, m.

The office of a کَاٲَدَہِٲِ
kāndhī, one who gives
a shoulder in carrying
a corpse.

مُکَہِٲِٲِٲِ mukhitanu, the duty of a مُکَہِٲِ mukhī or
headsman.

d) final ū:

مَٲَٲِٲِٲِ mānhipō,

مَٲَٲِٲِٲِٲِ mānhuapano,

humanity, from مَٲَٲِٲِٲِ mānhū
man.

مِرُوٲِٲِٲِ mirūpanō, bestiality, from مِرُوٲِ mirū, wild beast.

e) final a:

رَاٲِٲِٲِ ranāpanu, widowhood, from رَاٲِ rana, a widow.

زَاٲِٲِٲِ zālapanu, womanhood, from زَاٲِ zāl, a woman.

Note. These abstract affixes are to be met with in all the cognate idioms. The Hindī and Hindūstānī use the affixes *pan*, *panā* and *pā*, corresponding to the Sindhī forms *paṇu*, *paṇō* and *pō*. The Gujārāthī: *paṇ* and *paṇū* (both neut.); the Marāṭhī: *paṇ* (n.) and *paṇā* (m.); the Panjābī: *puṇā*. The Bangālī comes nearest to the Sanskrit in this respect, having retained the original abstract affix *tva* unaltered.

7) Themes in *kāru*, *kārō*, *kāra*, *kāre*.

These themes fall under our consideration in this place not so much on account of their formation, as their signification, for we have here not to deal with an affix, but with an adjective, used to form compounds, and signifying: making, effecting. In Sindhī the original signification of **कार** has been already obliterated, and it is now used in the same way as an affix, to form a number of abstract nouns; e. g.:

لُچھڪارو *lučhikārō*, uneasiness, properly: that which makes لُچھ *lučha*, or being tossed about.

وَنڪارُ *vanakāru*, | wood, forest; properly: that which
وَنڪارُ *vanakāre*, | produces trees (وَن).

تھڊھڪارُ *thadhekāra*, cool temperature; properly: that which makes coolness (تھڊھ).

8) Themes in *kō* and *ō*.

The affix *kō* serves originally to derive adjectives, and corresponds to the Sansk. affix **इक**; but in Sindhī it is sometimes used (as the preceding affix **कार**) to form abstract nouns; the affix *ō* is identical with *kō*, *k* having been elided. E. g.:

لُچھڪو *lučhikō*, uneasiness; the same as: لُچھڪارو.

دھورو *dhūryō*, a duststorm; properly: that which makes sand (دھور).

§. 10.

II. Formation of appellatives, attributives and possessives.

9) Themes in ī.

This affix, which in Sindhī and the kindred idioms is so frequently employed, has sprung from three different sources:

a) The affix ī, corresponding to the Sanskrit affix इक्.

This affix forms attributives and appellatives of various significations; the root-vowel is generally lengthened before the addition of this affix, i. e. 'a' becomes ā; 'ī' : ē; 'u' : ō; e. g.:

اوثِي ōthī, a camel-rider, from اُتھُ ūthū, camel.

باکری bākiri, a seller of vegetables, from بَکَرُ bakaru, vegetables.

تھیکری thēkiri, a seller of earthen-ware; from تھیکرُ thēkiru, earthen-ware.

b) The affix ī, corresponding to the Sansk. affix ईय, इय.

This affix denotes in all the modern vernaculars descent or relationship. Before its addition to a noun a final short vowel is dropped, long ū is shortened to 'u', and ō is changed to ā. In some instances final short 'u' (shortened from ō) is changed to ā (= ō) and thus preserved; e. g.:

سِندھی sindhī, of Sindh, from سِندھُ f. sindhu, the country of Sindh.

ہندُو hindū, relating to a Hindū, from ہندُ hindū, a Hindū.

لاڑی lārī, }
لاڑائی lārāī, } of Lār, from لَارُ m. lāru, Lower Sindh.

سرائي sirāi, of Sirō, from سِرُو sirō, Upper Sindh.

- c) The affix ī, corresponding to the Sansk. affix इन्.
(Nom. Sing. ī.)

The Sindhī affix ī serves to form possessive nouns, like the Sansk. affix इन्; e. g.:

دَانْهي dāhī, complainant, from دَانْه dāha, complaint.

رَوْگي rōgī, sick, from رَوْگ rōgu, sickness.

مَالِي māli, gardener, Sansk. मालिन.

In such formations, as are peculiar to the Sindhī, a final short vowel may keep its place before the affix ī, as:

مَتِّي matai, tenacious of one's opinion or sect, from مَت make opinion or religion (final 'e' being exchanged for 'a', for euphony's sake).

10) Themes in āi.

The affix āi is only a variation of the affix ī (9, a), final 'u' and ō of such themes, as end in 'u' and ō being again changed before it to ā; nouns thus formed imply an occupation, habit or tendency, as:

بَاگائي bāgāi, gardener, from بَاگ bāgu, garden.

نِيچائي nēcāi, a maker of huqqah-snakes, from نِيچو nēcō a huqqah-snake.

جِهَگَرائي jhagīrāi, a quarreller, from جِهَگَرُو jhagīrō, quarrel.

11) Themes in ū.

The affix ū, corresponding to the Sansk. affix उक्, is added to substantives, by means of which, as in the primary formations, appellatives and adjectives are derived, denoting an habitual action or state. A final vowel is always dropped before the addition of this affix;

in some nouns the first vowel is lengthened at the same time; e. g.:

هَانُو hānū, injurious, from هَانِه hāne, injury.

وِيرُو vērū, revengeful, from وِيرِ vērī; enmity.

چَہَپَرُو čhāpirū, a mountaineer, from چَہَپَرِ čhāparī, a range of hills.

بَاکھَرُو bākhirū, a man of Bakhar, from بَاکھَرِ bākharī, a town of upper Sindh.

12) Themes in āū.

The affix āū is identical with the preceding, the only difference being that the final vowel of the theme is lengthened before the affix ū (fin. u = a = ā).

دھَرْمَاُو dharmāū, religious, from دھَرْمِ dharmī, religion.

شَرْمَاُو śarmāū, bashful, from, شَرْمِ śarmī, shame, modesty.

13) Themes in āō.

The affix āō is already so much corrupted, that its origin is scarcely recognisable; it corresponds to the Sanskrit affix मय, which forms adjectives, denoting "made of, consisting of." The labial m has been elided in this affix as well as in the abstract affix इमन्, and a has been lengthened in compensation thereof. The semi-vowel y has likewise disappeared, āō = āyō; the final Anusvāra is altogether euphonic and more or less optional; e. g.:

ہَیڈَرَاُو haidrāō, made of ہَیڈَرِ haidrī, turmeric.

جَاںبھَاُو jāmbhāō, made of جَاںبھِ jāmbhī, a kind of oil-seed.

لَوہَاُو lōhāō, made of لَوہِ lōhī, iron.

14) Themes in ō.

This affix corresponds to the Sansk. affix अ; it

forms adjectives and attributives in the largest sense. The final short vowel of a noun is always dropped before this affix, and ū and ī are shortened. The root-vowel either remains unaltered or is lengthened, viz: 'a' to ā, ī to ē and 'u' to ō; as:

سَكهَو saghō, strong, from سَكه sagha, strength.

وِنَكُو vingō, crooked, from وِنَكُ vingu, a crook.

بَهَكُو bhakuō, stupid, from بَهَكُو bhakū, a blockhead.

وِچَو vēcō, mediator, from وِچُ viču, midst.

بَارَوِچُو bārōcō, of a Beluch, from بَارَوِچُ bārōču, a Beluch.

اَوْتَهُو ōthō, of a camel, from اَوْتَهُ ūthu, camel.

گَاوُ gāō, of a cow, from گَاوُ gāū, cow.

Irregular formations are:

مَاهِيَو māhyō, of a buffalo, from مِينِه mēhe, a buffalo.

سَايَو saiō, hundredth (per cent), from سَو sau, hundred.

15) Themes in āru (aru), ārō; ālu.

These affixes correspond to the Sansk. affix आल (in Prākṛit likewise आल cf. Var. IV, 26), which forms possessive nouns. In Sindhī r and l are interchanged, and in some nouns āru has been shortened to aru. The root-vowel commonly remains unaltered, but in some nouns 'u' is changed to ō (i. e. 'u' takes Guṇa); as:

مِيَهَارُ mēhāru, or	} a buffalo keeper, from مِينِه mēhe,
مِيَهَرُ mēharu,		buffalo.

چَوْتِيَرُ čōtyaru, having a چَوْتِي čōtī, bundle of hair on the crown of the head.

دَهَنَارُ dhaṇāru, a herdsman, from دَهَنُ dhaṇu, a herd of cattle.

اَوْتَهَارُ ōthāru, a camel-herd, from اَوْتَهُ ūthu, camel.

جَوَالُ javālu, containing barley, from جَوُ jau, barley.

Some of these formations, with the affix ālu or ālō, are used in a substantive sense, their original possessive signification being more or less lost, as:

کھڑیال gharyālu, } a Gong; literally: containing or
 کھڑیالو gharyālō, } expressing the hour (کھڑی).
 دِیال dialu, candlestick; literally: having a light (دِئو).

جھڑالو jhurālō, cloudiness; literally: containing clouds
 (جھڑ).

16) Themes in īrō and īlō, or: ērō and ēlō.

These affixes correspond to the Sansk. ईर and ईल and form attributives, signifying: habit, quality or intensity; ērō and ēlo have sprung from the Prākrit affix illa (Var. IV, 25); e. g.:

کھانڈھیرو khāndhīrō, patient, from کھانڈھ khāndhe, patience.

هتھیلو haṭhīlō, obstinate, from هتھ haṭhu, obstinacy.

چھانڀيرو chhāvērō, } shadowy, from چھانڀو chhāva, shade.
 چھانڀيلو chhāvēlō, }

تھريلو tharēlō, of the Thar, having the custom of the Thar or desert.

چمیلو čamēlō, leathern, from چم čamu, leather.

17) Themes in iru.

This affix corresponds to the Sansk. affix ॠ (with the union-vowel i) and forms attributives and appellatives as well as possessive nouns; a final vowel, short or long, is always dropped before the addition of this affix; e. g.:

سندھیر sandhiru, a house-breaker, from سندھ sandhe, a hole in a wall.

جھاتِرُ jhātīru, a peeper, from جھاتي jhātī, looking through a hole.

چھينبھِرُ čhimbhiru, a rebuker, from چھينبھہ čhimbha, rebuke.

جھپِرُ jhapīru, one who snatches, from جھپو jhapō, a snatch.

پيتِرُ pētīru, a glutton, from پيتُ pētu, belly.

ويھِرُ vihiru, poisonous, from وھُ f. poison.

18) Themes in atu and ālū.

This affix has sprung from the Sanskrit affix **मत्** by elision of **म**; in some nouns 'a' has been lengthened, to compensate for the elision of m; it forms possessive nouns, just as in Sanskrit; e. g.:

بھريتُ bharyatu, a porter, from بھري bhari, a man's load.

پورھيتُ pōrhiatu, a labourer, from پورھيو pōrhiō, labour.

ڏيانياتُ ḍiānyātu, a debtor, from ڏياني ḍiānī, a debt.

19) Themes in ētō (itō).

The Sindhī affix ētō corresponds to the Sansk. affix **इत्**, denoting "to be provided with", to possess as one's own. The short i of the Sansk. affix has in Sindhī been produced to ē, on account of the accent; the final vowel is always dropped before this affix; e. g.:

ڀُترِيتو putrētō, having a son, from ڀُترُ paṭru, son.

ڊيھِيتو dhiētō, having a daughter, from ڊيھي dhia, daughter.

ڄوھِيتو jōētō, having a wife, from ڄوءَ jōe, wife.

بھائِيتو bhāitō, having a brother, from بھاءَ bhāu, brother.

20) Themes in āitō.

This affix is identical with the preceding in derivation and signification, the only difference being that final ō, 'u' and 'a' are changed before it to ā, as:

وَارَاتِنُو vārāitō, adj., at the right time, from وَارُو vārō, time.

سَجَاهَاتِنُو sajhāitō, adj., opportune, from سَجَاهُ sajhu, opportunity.

وَاتَاتِنُو vātāitō, having a road, from وَاثٌ vāṭa, a road.

21) Themes in ṛu and lu.

a) The affix ṛu corresponds to the Sansk. diminutive affix र्, and is affixed to adjectives and participles present, with some slight variation of the original meaning; when added to adjectives the root-vowel is now and then lengthened. Final 'u' and ō are changed to 'a' before the addition of this affix; ī remains unaltered.

كَهَابَرُ khābāru, left-handed, from كَهَبُ khābō, left.

سَاجَرُ sājaru, right-handed, from سَاجُ sājō, right.

كَهَسَرُ khasaru, sterile, from كَهَسُ khasu, not fully developed.

كَآچِيرُ kāčhirō, of the province of Kačh, from كَآچِي a Kāchī.

لِکھَنْدَرُ likhandaru, a writer, from لِکھَنْدُو part. pres. writing.

b) The affix lu is identical with the affix ṛu (r [r] = l) and turns preterite participles into simple adjectives; it is seldom found with adjectives, the signification of which it does not change materially.

وَيَالُ vialu, lost, from وَيُو viō, gone, lost.

دِثَالُ dīṭhalu, seen, from دِثُو dīṭhō, seen.

visūṛalu, simple-minded, from visūrō, simple-minded.

Similarly in Prākṛit the affix r or l (dimin.) is added to nouns and adjectives, without essentially altering their signification (cf. Varar. IV, 26), as Sansk. विद्युत् lightening, Prāk. विज्जू or विज्जुली; पीत yellow, Prāk. पीच्च or: पीच्चल.

The same affix ला we notice in the Marāṭhī, where it is added to preterite participles to turn them into real adjectives, as: चाललेला gone (from चालला); मोडिलेला broken (from मोडिला); the same holds good in Gujārātī, as: लखेलो, written (Adj.) (from लखो).

22) Themes in iryō.

The affix iryō is originally compounded of the diminutive affix र (= r) and the adjectival affix yō (य); it forms adjectives and attributives denoting inclination or hesitation; e. g.:

सद्विचिंतु सद्विचिंत्यो, half-wishing; literally: being somewhat disposed to wish.

गोचरिणो ghōriryō, a pedlar; i. e. one who is inclined to seek out.

परिचरिणो pēriryō, a walker; literally: disposed to travel afoot.

परामर्शितो paramatiryō, easily persuaded; literally: disposed to take another's counsel.

23) Themes in āku and ākū.

These Unādi-affixes, which else only occur with primary themes, are in Sindhī also used (but very rarely) in secondary formations, as:

जिहवारु jhērāku,	{	quarrelsome, from जिह्वो jhērō,
जिह्वारु jhērākū,		contention.

24) Themes in ikō.

This affix corresponds to the Sansk. affix क (in Sindhi with the addition of the union-vowel i) and forms adjectives, denoting relation, quality etc. A final vowel, short or long, is dropped before this affix; final ū alone is shortened to 'u' and takes the union-vowel 'a' instead of 'i'; e. g.:

وَإِپَارِکُو vāpārikō, mercantile, from وَإِپَارُ vāpāru, trade.

وَإِنِکُو vānikō, relating to a وَانِیو vānyō or shopkeeper.

هَارِکُو hārikō, relating to a هَارِی hārī or peasant.

مِرُوکُو miruakō, brutal, from مِرُو mirū, a wild beast.

25) Themes in iĉō or ēĉō.

These affixes have sprung from the Sansk. affix इक, and form adjectives denoting descent or origin. In Sindhi 'i' has been lengthened to ī or even to ē, and the guttural k has been exchanged for the palatal ĉ. The final vowel, short or long, is always cast off before these affixes; e. g.:

گوتھِچُو gōthēĉō, of the same village, from گوتھُ gōthū, village.

پَارِچُو pārēĉō, of the same quarter, from پَارُو pārō, quarter.

پَارِچُو pārēĉō, of the opposite side, from پار adv., opposite.

وِڙھِچُو vērhīĉō, of the jungle, from وِڙھُ vērhe, jungle.

26) Themes in ōkō.

This affix, which is added only to nouns or adverbs, denoting time, is identical with the affix क; the union-vowel ō is peculiar and not to be met with elsewhere; every final vowel, short or long, is dropped before it; e. g.:

وَرَهَوُكُو varehōkō, yearly, from وَرَهُ varehu, year.

رَاتَوُكُو rātōkō, nightly, from رَاتِ rāte, night.

هَانَوُكُو hānōkō, recent, from هَانِي hānē, now. adj.

كَالَهَوُكُو kālhōkō, of yester (day or night), from كَالِه kālha, yesterday, adv.

پَرَوُكُو parōkō, of last year, from پَرُ (fem.) last year.

A few other adjectives are formed by the same affix, with the further difference, that the root-vowel is lengthened, as:

چَاندَرَوُكُو čandrōkō, moonlight, from چَندَرُ čandru, moon.

27) Themes in āṇō (āṇu, inō), āṇikō.

This affix corresponds to the Sansk. affix **इन्**, and forms adjectives denoting relation or descent. It is remarkable, that the original union-vowel 'i' has been dislodged in Sindhī and a substituted in its place (compare with this such Latin forms, as: romānus, africanus). The adjectives, formed by the affix āṇō may moreover add the affix kō (with the union vowel 'i'), so that we thus have adjectives with a double affix, which do not materially differ from the simple forms in āṇō; e. g.:

چَوَرَانُو cōrāṇō,	} of a thief, from چَوُرُ čōru, thief.
چَوَرَانِيكُو čōrāṇikō,	

لُچَانُو lučāṇō, rascally, from لُچُو lučō, rascal.

دِهِيَانُو dhiāṇō, of a daughter, from دِهِي dhiā, daughter.

مِرُونُو miruāṇō, of a wild beast, from مِرُون mirū, wild beast.

بِهَآيَانُو bhāyāṇō, of a partner, from بَهَآي bhāi, partner.

In a few nouns a short root-vowel is lengthened, as:

چاندَراَنو čāndrānō,	} moonlight, from چَندَرُ čandru, moon.
چاندَراَن چاندَراَن čāndrānu,	
چاندَریَنو čāndrinō,	

28) Themes in ūṇō (ūṇikō).

a) This affix is identical with the preceding, but the union-vowel has been exchanged for ū; in signification there is no difference; e. g.:

سَیْثُہُونو sēthūnō, of a Sēth, from سَیْثِہ sēthe, a whole-sale merchant.

وَاطُونو vātūnō, oral, from وَاطِ vātu, mouth.

اَگُونو agūnō, preceding, from اَگِ agū, front.

کَالْہُونو kālhūnō, of yester (— day or night), from کَالِہ kālha, yesterday.

To the affix ūṇō the affix kō (ikō) may be super-added, without altering the signification in any way, as:

اَگُونِکُو agūṇikō, the same as: اَگُونو agūnō.

b) There is another affix ūṇō, which is joined to numerals, identical in form with the preceding, but of different origin. It is derived from the Sansk. noun गुण (quality), with elision of g in Sindhī and prolongation of ū. In Panjābī both forms, guṇā and uṇā, are in use, so that there cannot remain any doubt about its derivation.¹⁾ It forms adjectives from numerals, signifying: having such a quality, or: manifold, as:

ہِکُونو hēkūnō, single (having a single quality), from ہِکِ hēku, one.

پَنجُونو panjūnō, quintuple, from پَنجِ panja, five.

سَوْنو saūnō, hundredfold, from سَوِ saū, hundred.

1) Compare also the Persian گمانه, as: دُو گمانه twofold etc.

29) Themes in āṇī.

This affix, corresponding to the Sansk. affix **आयनि**, forms patronymics or nouns denoting descent; the short final 'i' of the Sansk. affix has been lengthened in Sindhī, as in other similar nouns. A final short vowel is dropped before this affix, likewise ō; final ī is changed to y (= i) and ū is shortened; e. g.:

مَحْمُودَانِي mahimūdānī, son or descendant of مَحْمُود mahimūdu.

آريَانِي āryānī, son of آري āri.

آدُوانِي āḍuānī, son of آدُ āḍū.

بَاگانِي bāgānī, son of باگو bāgō.

30) Themes in īṇō.

This affix corresponds to the Sansk. affix **ईन** and forms adjectives denoting relation or descent; as:

سَنِيْنُو sanīṇō, affianced, from سَنُ saṇu, connexion by marriage.

وَسِيْنُو vasīṇō, subjected, from وَسْ waṣ, power.

31) Themes in āṭhō.

This affix coincides with the Sansk. affix **आट** (with transition of ṭ into ṭh); it forms possessive nouns, as in Sanskrit; e. g.:

پَانِيَاْٹھُو pānyāṭhō, damp (containing water), from پَانِي pānī, water.

چَہَبَرَاْٹھُو čhābarāṭhō, containing چَہَبَرُ čhābaru, a kind of grass.

32) Themes in āsō (āsū).

This affix, corresponding to the Sansk. affix **अ**,

forms adjectives, denoting "to be full of", to be provided with"; as union-vowel *ā* has been inserted; as:

واریاسو vāryāsō, sandy, from واری vārī, sand.

مَواسُ mavāsu, full of pride, from مَو mau, pride.

33) Themes in hāru or hārō.

This affix is in Sindhī and in the cognate dialects added to verbal nouns (i. e. the Infinitive); it forms a kind of participle, which is commonly used as a substantive noun. In Marāṭhī it forms the participle future, as it implies at the same time the notion of some future act or state; in Sindhī too it is now and then used in a future sense. It is to be noted though, that the Marāṭhī affix is not एार, as commonly shown in Marāṭhī grammars, but आर; a like mistake is generally to be met with in Gujarātī grammars, where it is stated to be नार. In Marāṭhī and Gujarātī the form of the affix is clearly enough आर, corresponding to the Sansk. adjective कार, making, doing, with elision of क. In Sindhī, Hindī and Panjābī it is hār, which form is to be explained in this way, that initial क has been originally aspirated by the following र (which is very frequently the case in Sindhī), and then elided, leaving h (see Introd. §. 8). In Sindhī the form hāru, hārō, is only added to the Infinitive, in other themes the original form kāru has been retained unaltered; e. g.:

سِرَجَنَهَارُ sirjanahāru, the creator, Inf. سِرَجَنُ to create.

لِکھَنَهَارُ likhanahāru, a writer, or one, who is about to write; Inf. لِکھَنُ to write.

34) Themes in kāru, karu.

The original adjective form kāru (in Sindhī also shortened karu) is also (but rarely) in use; it forms adjectives and attributives from substantives; as union-vowel *ā* is inserted:

جھیراکارُ jhērākāru, } quarrelsome, causing quarrel,
 جھیراکرُ jhērākāru, } from جھیرُو jhērō, quarrel.

35) Themes in vānu.

The Sindhī has preserved in this affix the Nom. Sing. of the Sansk. affix वन् (= vān), and discarded the Prākṛit form वन्तो; the same is the case in the cognate dialects, with the exception of the Gujārātī, which uses the termination वन्. It forms adjectives, implying possession; e. g.:

دَيَاوَانُ dayāvānu, compassionate, from دَيَا dayā, compassion.

وَجَاوَانُ vijāvānu, learned, from وَجَا vijā, learning.

سِيلَوَانُ silavānu, virtuous, from سِيل silu, virtue.

36) Themes in vārō.

This is one of the most useful affixes of the modern vernaculars; it may be joined to any verbal noun or substantive, and denotes an owner or actor; this affix is most extensively used in Hindūstānī (vālā), where it is used as a substitute for different formations. It corresponds to the Sansk. affix वल, from which it has been derived by lengthening the root-vowel. It is to be observed, that وَارُو must be joined to the formative or oblique case of a noun.

گھارَوَارُو gharavārō, owner of a house, from گھارُ gharu, house.

گھارَنَوَارُو gharanevārō, owner of houses.

ڏيڻَوَارُو ḍiṇavārō, a giver, Inf. ڏيڻ ḍiṇu, to give.

وِچَوَارُو vičavārō, mediator, from وِچ viču, midst.

بِيرِيَوَارُو bēriavārō, boatman, from بِيرِي bēri, boat.

37) Themes in yō.

The affix yō, corresponding to the Sansk. affix य, forms adjectives from substantives, as:

بہاگيو bhāgyō, fortunate, from بهاي bhāgu, fortune; luck.

ويکيو vikevikhyō, a grumbling person, from ويکوي vikevike, grumbling.

جويو jōyo, effeminate, from جوہ (ژوہ) jōe, wife.

Chapter IV.

Formation of Diminutives.

§. 11.

The Sindhī evinces a great facility in forming different kinds of Diminutives; it surpasses in this respect all the kindred dialects, being able to derive diminutives from any substantive, adjective or even participle.

The one method, to express the idea of a diminutive, is, to substitute the feminine termination for the masculine, the feminine expressing generally: smallness, littleness, nicety, as: کات katu, m. a large knife, کاتي kātī, fem. a small knife (cf. §. 5, VI, 2, c).

An old diminutive formation has been preserved in a few straggling words, ending in oṭru (ōṭrō) or oṭu (ōtō); the same formation is still current in the Paṣtō (ōtai, ūtai), where diminutives are regularly derived by means of this affix. The origin of this diminutive affix is rather uncertain; e. g. Sindhī:

باهوتي bāhōṭī, a small fire, from باہ bāhe, fire; جاموتر jāmōṭru, the headman of a village (literally: a

little جَامُ jāmu or Jām, prince); دِيَّاتِي dīātī, a small light, from دِيَّو dīō, an oil-light.

Besides these formations the Sindhī uses for the purpose of forming diminutives proper two affixes, which are originally identical; viz.: ēro (= rō, the union-vowel 'i' having been produced to ē, on account of the accent), which is added to adjectives only, and rō, which is promiscuously joined to adjectives and substantives. Both these affixes correspond to the Sanskrit diminutive affix र r, from which the Sindhī, after its own peculiar method, has managed to form two separate diminutive affixes. The other diminutive affix of the Sanskrit, क k, is not in use in Sindhī, but is so in Hindī, Marāṭhī and Panjābī.

1) The affix ērō.

This diminutive affix is, as noted already, added to adjectives only and implies: somewhat more or less (as the case may be), rather, very; e. g.:

دِرِگھِرُو drighērō, somewhat long, adj. دِرِگھُو drighō, long.

تھوَرِرُو thōrērō, rather little, adj. تھوَرُو thōrō, little.

گھٹِرُو ghaṭērō, rather deficient, adj. گھٹِ ghaṭe, deficient.

2) The termination rō, fem. rī.

This diminutive affix is joined to substantives and adjectives, even to such, as have already received the affix ērō; it denotes smallness, littleness, deficiency, tenderness or contempt. In order to point out more effectually the idea of the diminutive, the feminine termination rī may be chosen, instead of the masculine. The Sindhī poets use the diminutives with great taste and delicacy, and know to give different shades to their pictures by their proper application. The final vowels

undergo the following changes before the addition of the affix *rō* (*rī*):

- 1) Final *u* (m.) is changed to 'a' or 'ī', with the exception of fem. nouns ending in 'u', which remain unaltered.
- 2) In the same way final *ō* is changed to 'a' or 'ī'.
- 3) Final 'a' remains unaltered.
- 4) Final 'ī' remains unaltered or passes (for euphony's sake) into 'a'.
- 5) Final *ī* and *ū* are shortened with a subsounding 'a' (as union-vowel).

Final 'u'.

پَندھَرَو pandharō, a short journey, from پَندھ pandhu, journey.

هَتِيرِي hatirī, a small shop, from هَت hatu, shop.

جَندَرَو jindurō, short life, from جَند jindu, life, fem.

وَجَرِي vijurī, a small flash of lightening, from وَجُ viju, fem., lightening.

Final *ō*.

هِنَرَو hīarō heart (endearing), from هِنو hīō, heart.

بھولَرَو bhōlirō, a small monkey, from بھولو bhōlō, monkey.

تھورَرَو thōrirō, } very little, from تھورو thōrō, little.
تھورِيرَرَو thōrērīrō, } extremely little.

Final 'a'.

دھيَرِي dhiarī, a little daughter, from دھي dhia, daughter.

Final 'ī'.

اکھِيرِي akhirī, a small eye, from اکھ akhe, eye.

گالھَرِي galharī, a short word, from گالھ gālhe, word.

Final ī and ū.

مندھیرؤ mandhiarō, a small churning staff, from مندھي mandhī, a churning staff.

بهتري bhaṭuarī, a small scorpion, from بهتر bhaṭū, a scorpion.

Chapter V.

Compound nouns.

§. 12.

I. Nouns compounded with a preceding particle.

- 1) Nouns compounded with the negative particles a, ana, nā, nir, ni, ma.

All these negative particles are of Sanskrit origin and used in the same way and in the same sense, as in the Sanskrit. The negative particle 'a' is only used with adjectives, ana chiefly with participles and Gerundives, rarely with adjectives; nā with adjectives, and the shortened form na with Gerundives and participial adjectives; nir and ni (with assimilated r), only with adjectives (and abstracts, derived from adjectives). We have not mentioned expressly the negative particle dur (दुर), which belongs to the same class, as it occurs in such formations only, as are borrowed directly from the Sanskrit and have already passed through the process of assimilation, usual in Sindhī, as: ڏڪالو ḍukālu, famine, Sansk. दुष्काल (see Intro. §. 16, B). For the sake of a general survey we have summed up here all the negative prefixes, though the nouns compounded with them belong to the subsequent classes of compounds, as far as their composition is concerned.

Prefix a: اَچِيتُ ačētu, thoughtless; thence.

اَچِيتَائِي acētāi, }
اَچِيتِي acētī, } thoughtlessness.

Prefix ana: اَنَاتِهِنُو anathianō, impossible.

اَنَپُچھُو anapučhō, unasked.

اَنَوِيسَاھُو anavēsāhō, unbelieving.

اَنَوِيسَاھِي anavēsāhī, s. f., unbelief.

Prefix nā: نَاكَارُو nākārō, useless.

نَاچَنکُو nācañō, unwell.

نَاچَنکَائِي nācañāi, illness.

Prefix nā: نَاتِهِنُو nathianō, impossible.

نَاتِهِنِي nathianī, impossibility.

نَاکھٹُو nakhaṭū, profitless.

Prefix ma: مَچھڈُو mačhaḍū, not giving up.

مَکھٹُو makhaṭū, profitless.

Prefix nir and ni: نِرْدَئِي nir-daī, unfeeling, Sansk. निर्देय.

نِر_آسُو nir-āsu, hopeless, Sansk. निराश.

نِد_دھَنکُو ni-dhanikō, masterless (دھَنِي).

نِپُترُو ni-putrō, sonless (پُتر).

2) Nouns compounded with the privative particles rē, without, and bē, without.

The privative particle rē, which is also used as a preposition, and as such always requires the Formative (oblique case), is derived from the Sanskrit pre-

position चते (Prākrit रिते = रिए, and contracted रे rē) without, excepted; bē is borrowed from the Persian and corresponds originally to the Sansk. prefix वि. These prefixes are in Arabic writing generally written separately and not joined to the noun, as:

- rē: ري كمو rē-kamō, useless.
 ري پانيو rē-pānyō, waterless.
 ري چيو rē-čayō, untractable.
 bē: بي سكهو bē-saghō, powerless.
 بي دينو bē-dīnō, irreligious.
 بي لاجو bē-lajō, shameless.

3) Nouns compounded with the particles of qualification su, well, ku, badly, and ava (au), away, from.

- su: سكال sukālu, good time = cheapness.
 سچيت sučētu, attentive.
 سپرين suprī, good friend = sweetheart.
 ku: كپت kupate, dishonesty.
 كپتيو kupatyō, dishonest.
 كنياء kuniyāu, bad justice = oppression.
 كڏهنگو kudhangō, ill-bred.

- ava (au): اَوڱن avagunū } vice.
 اَوڱن augunū, }
 اَوتر avatarū, } a bad landing place.
 اَوتر autarū, }

4) Nouns compounded with the possessive particle sa (shortened from the Sansk सह), implying “with”, “provided with”.

- سپهلو saphalō, fruitful.

سَبَّوَجْهُو sabōjhō, intelligent.

سَپُتْرُو saputrō, having a son.

II. Nouns compounded with a substantive, adjective or numeral.

The Sindhī generally follows in the formation of its compound nouns the rules of the Sanskrit, though the compounds cannot be formed in Sindhī in the same unlimited number, as in Sanskrit, the want of case-inflexions offering an essential obstacle. No compound can be formed from more than two nouns, a noun compounded of three words is a linguistic impossibility in Sindhī, as in such a compound all idea of coordination or subordination would be completely lost. We shall consider the compounds current in Sindhī under the received Sanskrit appellations.

- 1) So-called Tatpuruṣa compounds, or conjunction of two nouns, of which the former stands in a case-relation with the latter.

These compounds are rarely used in common conversation, but more extensively in poetical compositions. The former of the two nouns, which is dependent on the latter, must consequently be placed in the Formative, to express thereby its grammatical dependency. In reference to the method of writing these compounds there is no fixed rule; some of them, in which the idea of unity prevails so much, that they are considered as one word, are joined in writing accordingly; others again, in which the conjunction is more loose, are written separately; e. g.:

اُتَرِ وَاو utara-vāu, north-wind.

گھَرِ دھَنِي ghara-dhaṇī, master of the house.

مَتھِي کھَاؤ mathē-khāū, torturer, literally: eating one's head.

دِسَ نِڪَالَو dēsa nikālō, banishment.

ڪَرَن ٽِرُٽَرُو karane-ṭruṭrō; a lazy fellow; literally: broken of hands.

پَان بَهَرُ pāna bharū, selfish; literally: filling oneself.

A peculiar kind of compound is formed by an adjective joined to a substantive, which by the addition of the affix *vārō* (see §. 10, 3, b) is turned again into a possessive noun; the adjective must in this case agree with its substantive in gender, number and case. Such compounds are, as far as their signification is concerned, Bahuvrīhis, but according to their composition Tatpuruṣas; for the latter reason we have inserted them in this place; as:

بِي ديسَوارو biē dēsavārō, a foreigner (a man of another country).

تيڪهي سُرِٽِوارو tikhia-surtevarō, a man of sharp understanding.

چَنڪي پَهَوارو čaṇē pahavārō, a man of good counsel.

More poetical are compounds like:

وڌي دِلِ داتا vaḍia dile dātā, a munificent giver (a giver of a great heart).

2) So-called Dvandvas, or aggregation of nouns.

In the sense of the Sanskrit Grammar there are no Dvandvas in Sindhī. Two nouns are frequently joined in Sindhī, expressing one common idea, but grammatically they are treated as two separate words. In Sindhī, as well as in the other cognate dialects, two nouns are frequently joined together, of which the latter is without a proper meaning, and only added to render the sound more full; these compounds are called alliterations.

وَتَهْ پُجْ vāṭhu puṇu, f., hurry; literally: taking (وَتَهْ) arriving (پُجْ).

چَنکُو بَهَلُو čaṇō bhalō, very good; very well.

مَتَا سَتَا mata sata, exchange (مَتَا and سَتَا, both signifying exchange).

گَهَاتِ وَدِه ghāṭe vadhe, less or more.

جُھُرُو پُھُرُو jhuru phuru, rainy weather (جُھُرُو cloudiness; پُھُرُو drop).

اَجُ صُبَهَن āḷu subaḥā, in a day or two; literally: to-day, to-morrow.

بَاکَا شَاکَا baka šaka, prattle; بَاکَا talking, chatting, شَاکَا being a meaningless alliteration.

But more frequently than by aggregation the Sindhī joins two nouns by inserting the Persian copula *ō* (frequently nasalized = *ō̃*); the final vowel of the preceding noun is dropped before it and both words are joined into one and written accordingly; in some instances though the final vowel of the preceding noun keeps its place before *ō*. These compounds are Dvandvas in a grammatical sense, only the latter noun being subject to the laws of inflexion.

رَاتُوڊِيھُو rātōḍīhu, night and day.

ھَنْدھُوھَنْدھُو handhōhandhu, every place.

رَاتُو رَاتُو rate-ō-rate, every night; night by night.

پَرُو پَرُو parōpare, kind by kind = every kind.

The conjunction may also be effected by the Persian copulative particle *ā*, in the same way as by *ō*; this *ā* too is very frequently nasalized in Sindhī = *ā̃*; the final vowel of the preceding word always disappears before *ā* or *ā̃*; as:

مُكْهَامُكْهِي mukhāmukhī, meeting; literally: tête-à-tête.

مُكْهَامِيلُو mukhāmēlō, assembly; literally: face and meeting.

وِيرَاوِيرَا vērāvēra, adv., always; literally: time and time.
(وِيرَا).

3) So-called Karmadhārayas, or descriptive compounds.

The Sindhī is now too simple, to admit of new compounds of this kind; the common rule is, as in the other dialects, that the adjective precedes its substantive and agrees with the same in gender, number and case. Some remnants however of original Karmadhāraya compounds have been preserved in Sindhī, and what is still more remarkable, the Sindhī has formed some similar compounds out of its own resources, in which the adjective is joined to the substantive in its original (else not occurring) crude state. It is to be noted, that all compounds of this description are written in one word; e. g.:

مَهَاجَنُ mahājānu, a great merchant, Sansk. महाजन.

مَهَارَاجُ mahārāju, } a great prince.
مَهَارَاجُ maharāju, }

وَدَّاکْهَآوُ vadhakhāu, a glutton (great eater).

گَهَنَگْهَرُو ghanaghurō, well-wishing.

مَتْهَگْهَرُو mathaghurō, ill-wishing.

پَرَمَارْثُ paramārthu, benevolence.

پَرَالُو paralōku, the other world.

4) So-called Dviguṣ, or collective compounds.

This class of compounds, which is formed by a preceding numeral, is in frequent use in Sindhī; e. g.:

بَہَرِ bipaharī, midday; compounded of بَ bī, two
and پَہَرِ, a watch of three hours.

بَہَرِ bihare, a pair of water wheels.

چَوَماَسُو čaumāsō, a space of four months = the rainy
season.

چَوَواتُو čauvātō, a place, where four roads meet; li-
terally: having four roads.

پَنجَسَنانِ panjasnānī, washing of the five parts of the
body (= head, two hands, two feet).

بَارَہَمَاسِ bārahāmāsī, a year = a twelvemonth.

5) The so-called Bahuvrīhis, or relative com-
pounds.

This class of compounds, denoting possession or
relation, which again comprises all the four preceding
classes, by changing them into adjectives, is still very
numerous in Sindhi; for either original Bahuvrīhi com-
pounds are borrowed directly from the Sanskrit, or new
compounds are formed according to the same principles,
which are laid down in Sanskrit. The final noun re-
ceives generally the adjectival affix ō (see §. 10; 14);
in such compounds, as are taken directly from the Per-
sian, the final noun may remain unchanged, its relative
signification having been fixed already in Persian.

a) Bahuvrīhi formations from Tatpuruṣa
compounds.

رَتَوَرَنُو rata-varanō, having the colour of blood.

مَتَہْمُو matha-muhō, haughty; from مَتَہْ top, and مَہْ
(= مَنَہْ) mouth.

پِٹَارَتِہِ pētārthī, glutton; from پِٹُ pēṭu, belly, and

آرَتِہِ arthī, having an object; having the belly for
one's object.

- b) Bahuvrīhi formations from Karmadhāraya compounds.

وَدَّوَاتَوِ vaḍavātō, loquacious; literally: having a big mouth.

كَهَنَبَجُو ghaṇa-bijō, having much seed.

تِهَرَوِيرَمُو thōra-vēramō, having little delay = quick.

صَافِدِلِ sāfu-dile, having a pure heart; Pers.

خُوشِيَالُ xuš-xiālu, joyful; Pers.

- c) Bahuvrīhi formations from Dvigu compounds.

چَوَدَرُو čaudarō, having four doors.

بِمَنُو bimaṇō, containing two maunds.

بَارَهَنَمَاهُو bārahāmāhō, yearly = containing twelve months.

- d) Bahūvrihi formations from such compounds, as are preceded by an adverb or prefix.

سَپُتُرُو sapuṭrō, having a son.

سُچِيتُ sučētu, attentive.

کُمَتِيُو kumatyō, dishonest.

Chapter VI.

Gender of nouns.

§. 13.

It has been stated already, that the Sindhī has lost the Neuter; most of the original neuter nouns having assumed a masculine, a less number the feminine termination. The gender of a Sindhī noun is easily recognizable, as every noun must end in a vowel; some

terminations admit of no exceptions, others are common to both masculine and feminine nouns.

The termination ō is masculine without any exception; the termination ā is feminine without any exception; all the other terminations contain more or less exceptions.

1) The termination 'u'.

The termination 'u' is, according to its origin, generally masculine; but as original Sanskrit-Prākṛit themes, ending in 'u' and being of the feminine gender, have been mixed up with it, a number of nouns have retained the feminine gender. In some of them an original feminine termination has been dropped and 'u' substituted in its place; whereas the gender of the noun has been preserved; in others again no reason can be detected, why they have been treated as feminines in Sindhī, the masculine gender having been retained in the cognate dialects; some few of them are of unknown origin, on which we cannot venture any conjecture.

As a general rule we may state, that, abstracted from the termination, all nouns are feminine, which imply a female being, as: ماء māu, mother; دھئی dhiu, daughter; نُنھُ nūhu, daughter-in-law; سَسُ sasū, mother-in-law; بھینُ bhēnu, sister; دھینُ dhēnu, milk-cow; گائُونُ gāū, cow; with some of them the feminine termination 'a' is also in use, as: دھئی dhia, نُنھا nūha, بھین bhēna.

The following is a list of nouns ending in 'u', which are feminine:

اَچُ aju, f., to-day; Sansk. अद्य, adv., Hindī आज्, adv.

اَنسُ ansu, f., offspring; Sansk. अंश, m.; Hindī अंस्, m.

اَنگُ angu, or: اَنگھُ anghu, f., a rent, tear; origin unknown.

أَنْوُ āu, f., slimy excrement, origin unknown.

بَبْرُ bāburu, f., the acacia tree; Sansk. ववूर, m. Hindi बबूर, f.

بَرْكُ barkhu, f., shortened from بَرْكَهَتَ barkhata, blessing (Arab. بَرَكَة; in Sindhī k has been aspirated by the influence of r) pronounced as a good omen in beginning to count = one.

بِنْدُ bindu, f., semen virile; Sansk. विन्दु, m., Hindi बिन्द, m.

بَهْسُ bhasu, f., ashes; Sansk. भस्मन्, n.; Hindi भस्, m.

پَرُ paru, f., last year; Sansk. परत्, adv.

پُونَا پُونَا pūna-u, f., the day of the full moon; also پُونِي پُونَا-e; Sansk. पर्वन्, n.

تَاकु tāku, f., a leathern vessel; origin unknown.

تَنْدُ tandu, f., thread, wire; Sansk. तन्तु, m.; Hindi तात्, f.

تَهَرُ tharu, f., cream; origin unknown.

تَهْنُ thañu, f., woman's milk; Sansk. स्तन, m.; Hindi थन्, m.

تَرकु traku, f., the spindle of a spinning wheel; Sansk.

तर्कु; in Sindhī r has been pushed forward, to keep its place the more easily in conjunction with the cerebral; see Introd. §. 15, B, a.

جَرُ jaru, f., leech, afterbirth. Two words have been apparently melted into one. جَرُ leech, corresponds to the Hindūstānī زَلُو zalū (properly Persian), which has sprung from the Sanskrit जालुका; the final syllable kā has, as elsewhere, been cast off, but the original gender retained. جَرُ afterbirth, has been

shortened from the Sansk. **जरायु**, m., Hindūstānī **جیر** jēr (Greek: γῆρας). In Hindūstānī the gender of **جیر** seems to be doubtful, for Shakespear is silent about it; in Hindī it is considered masculine (Thompson, Hindī Dictionary).

جند jindu, f., life; borrowed from the Panjābī, where it is likewise fem.

جو jā-u, f., sealing-wax; origin unknown.

جوكهار jaukhāru, f., a salt, used in medicine; compounded of **جو** barley, and **كهار**, which see.

جهل jhilu, f., name of a plant (Indigofera pauciflora); origin unknown.

چپ čipu, f., or: **چپ** čipu, silence; taken from the Hindī, in which it is fem.

چل čilu, f., name of a vegetable; origin unknown.

چو ča-u, f., a jeweller's weight; origin unknown.

چهار čhāru, f., ashes; originally identical with **كهار**, Sansk. **क्षार**.

چهل čhilu, f., bark, peel; Sansk. **छलि** or **छली**; the original fem. termination i (ī) has been lost in this noun, but the gender retained; besides **چهل** the form **چهل** is also in use.

چيز čizu, f., thing; taken from the Hindūstānī (Persian) where it is fem.

دھات dhātu, f., root; metal. Sansk. **धातु**, m.; Hindī **धात** or **धातु**, m., but used as fem. in the sense of semen virile.

دadh ḍadhhu, f., ringworm; Sansk. **ददु**, m.; Hindī **दाद**, m.

سَرُو sara-u, fem., autumn, Sansk. शरद्, fem., Hindī शरद्, fem.

سُكَنْدْهُ sugandhu, f. (occasionally also masc.), perfume, Sansk. सुगन्ध, m., Hindī सुगन्ध, m.

سِنْدْهُ sindhu, f., the country of Sindh; the Indus; Sansk. सिन्धु, m.; Hindī सिन्धु or सिन्धु, m.

كَتْ katu, f., rust (occasionally also m.); origin unknown.

كَسْ kasu, f., verdigris; origin unknown.

كَهَارْ khāru, f., potash; Sansk. क्षार, m., n.; Hindī क्षार, m.

كَهَرْ kharu, f. (also masc.), oil-cake, Hindī खली, f., Sansk. खलं, n.

كَهَنْدَرْ khandru, f., sugar, Sansk. खण्ड, m.; Hindī खण्ड, m.

كَرْ garu, f., the mange; Sansk. खजु, f.

كَرْ garu, f., the pulp of any fruit; Sansk. गर्भ, m.

كَمْ gamu, f., name of a wild grass; origin unknown.

كَنُونْ gāū, f., cow; Sansk. गो, f.; Hindī गाइ, गो or गौ.

لِ limu, f. The nimb tree; the same as لِم, which see.

لَانُونْ lāū, f., devotion, love; Sansk. लय, m.; Hindī लय, f.

مَر maru, f., cerumen; Sansk. मलं, n.; Hindī मैल, f.

مَس masu, f., ink; Sansk. मसि, f.; Hindī मसि or मसी.

مِکْهُ mikhu, } f., marrow; Sansk. मज्जा, Hindī मज्जा, f.
مِنْج minu, }

مَيْل mailu, f., dirt; see مَر, with which it is identical.

نِ nimu, f., the nimb tree; Sansk. निम्बूक, m.; Hindī

नीम्बू or लीम्बू, m.

نَهْته nahatharu, f., whitlow, from نَهْ nahu, nail and ته, which see.

وَته vathu, f., thing; Sansk. वस्तु, n.; Hindī वस्तु, f.

وَته vathu, f., seizure; Sansk. वृत्ति (election); the aspiration of ṭh has been effected by r.

وِج viju, f., lightening; Sansk. विद्युत्, f., Prāk. विज्जू, f.

وِو vira-u, f., allowance, ration; Sansk. वर्तन, n., stipulated pay.

وِس visu, } f., world; Sansk. विषय, m.; Hindī विषय, m.
وِش višu, }

وَسو vasa-u, f., a cultivated place; Sansk. root: वर्षित, provided with rain (and therefore cultivated).

وِكه vikhu, } f., poison; Sansk. विषं, n.; Hindī बिस
وِह vihu, } or बिस्, m.

وِنس vansu, f., lineage; Sansk. वंश, m.; Hindī बंस्, m.

هَنْج hanju, } f., a wild goose; Sansk. हंस, m.; Hindī
هَنْجِه hanjhu, } हंस्, m. (see Introd. §. 11, 2.)

هِنْد hindu, f., India; originally an Arabic-Persian word, derived from the province nearest to the Persians, i. e. सिन्धु (by change of s into h); Hindūstānī:

هِنْد, m.

هِنْدِ hinu, f., assa foetida; Sansk. हिङ्गु, m.; Hindī

हिङ्ग or हीङ्ग or हिङ्गु, m.

Under this head we must class all the imitative sounds, which end in 'u', and which are considered fe-

minines, because their final 'u' is not subject to inflexion; the same may be stated of some Dvandvas, which consist properly of two Imperatives, ending in 'u', and which are likewise treated as feminines, being exempt from the laws of inflexion.

اَءُ وَاُ aĉu vañu, f., coming going (Imper.).

جَهْنُوْ جَهْنُوْ jhāu jhāu, f., grumbling (imitative sound).

چَوْ چَوْ ča-u, ča-u, f., } talking (Imper.).
چَوْ وَتْ ča-u, vaṭu, f., }

تَّؤُ تَّؤُ t̃au t̃au, f., gabbling (imitative sound).

وَتْهُ پُجُوْ vaṭhu puju, f., hurry (Imper.).
etc. etc. etc.

2) The termination ū.

The termination ū is generally masculine; there are however some exceptions, the gender of which is regulated either by original Sanskrit usage, or by the practice of the cognate dialects. The imitative sounds, ending in ū or ũ, are all treated, on account of their inflexibility, as feminine. Such exceptions are:

اَبِرُوْ ābirū, f. (also: اَبِرُوْ ābirūe), honour; Hindūstānī
آبِرُوْ, f. (Pers.)

اَئْبُونِ āũ, f., pride, egotism; identical with the I. personal pronoun of the Sing. J (Panjābī: haũ, f.).

بَهُوْ bhū, f., earth (also: بَهِيْ bhue); Sansk. भू, f.

تَرُوْ tarū, f., a fine cord of camel's hair (root: تَرَنْ, to pass through).

جُونِ jũ, f., louse (also: جُوْ jua); Hindī जूँ, f., Sansk. यूका, f.

چَکْجُونِ čamajũ, f., a kind of louse, adhering to the skin (چَمْ).

رُونُ rŭ rŭ, f., imitative sound; the hum of a spinning wheel.

كُوكُ kŭ-kŭ, f., imitative sound, by which a dog is called.

گَنُ gāu, f., cow; the same as گَنُونُ.

لُونُ lŭ, f., small hair on the limbs (also: لُنِي lŭa); Sansk. लोमन्, n.; Hindī लोम्, m.

وَهْرُ vahū, f., daughter-in-law; Sansk. वधू, Hindī बहू.

3) The termination ā.

The termination ā comprises, according to its origin, as we have seen, mostly feminine nouns; there are however a few masculine nouns, ending in ā, the gender of which is, in most cases, already fixed by the signification of the noun itself, or by the language, from which the noun in question is taken; such exceptions are:

رَاجَا rājā, prince; Sansk. Nom. राजा, m.

لَالَا lālā, master; lord; Hindī लाला.

كَرْتَا kartā, the agent (in grammar); Sansk. Nom. कर्ता.

آتْمَا ātma, soul; Sansk. Nom. आत्मा, m.

مَآخُولِيَا māxūliya, melancholy, Arab.; Hindūstānī, masc.

دَیَوَاتَا dēvatā, Deity; Hindī देवता, f.; Sanskrit देवता, f.

4) The termination ī.

The termination ī is, as stated already, divided between masculine and feminine nouns, yet so, that the feminine prevail considerably in number. All nouns denoting a male being (man or beast) are of course masculine, whereas nouns, denoting a female being, inanimate objects or abstract qualities are femi-

nine; contrary to this general rule the following nouns are masculine:

آسِرِي āsirī, a large kind of tamarisk tree.

بَاندِهِي bāndhī, a log of wood floating in the river.

بُندِي bundī, the muzzle of a gun-barrel.

بَهَاجَتِي bhaṇṇatī, name of a plant (*Desmochaeta lap-pacea*).

پَاكِي pākī, razor (by the Hindūs used as fem.)

پَانِي pānī, water.

پَكْهِي pakhī, bird.

تَهْدِي thuḍī, the lower stalk of a plant.

تِکِي tikī, a cake.

چَهَٹْهِي chathī, a religious ceremony, performed on the sixth day after childbirth.

دَوْگِي dōgī, a thick stick.

دَهَرِي dharī, a coloured edge to a cloth.

سُرْجَمُکْهِي surjamukhī, sunflower.

کُنْدَلِي kundalī, horoscope.

کَهَارِي ghārī, a stripe left unfinished.

کَهْٹِي ghīṭī, a lane, alley.

لَاڈِي lāḍī, the ropes of a boat.

مُشْتَرِي muṣṭarī, the planet Jupiter.

مُنْدْهِي mundhī, head.

مُوتِي mōṭī, pearl.

وَانْکِي vāngī, a stick with ropes hanging from it, to carry water pots, etc.

5) The termination i (ë).

The termination 'i' (ë) is, with that of ä, the regular feminine ending in Sindhī. There are however a few masculine nouns, ending in 'i', which are mostly borrowed from foreign languages. As in conformity with the Sindhī laws of sound no word can end in a silent consonant, the quick and hardly perceptible sound 'i' (ë) has been added to some words, which end originally in a silent consonant, to render them susceptible of inflexion; to some foreign nouns too, which end in ā, the short vowel 'i' has been added, for euphony's sake, which however may interchange with 'u' in some cases.

أَحْمَدِ ahmade, Nom. prop.

خُدَاة xudāe, God (Pers.).

خِزِرِ xizire, Nom. prop. of a fabulous prophet.

رَا rā-e (or: رَا), prince; Hindī राइ.

سَيْتِه sēthe, a Hindū wholesale merchant; Hindī.

قَيْسَرِ qaisare, Cæsar.

In some few instances original final ë of the Sanskrit has been preserved, without having been lengthened, as is usually the case in Sindhī, as:

پَتِي pa-e, lord (also: پَتِي patī); Sansk. पति.

وَرَسْپَتِ viraspate, the planet Jupiter; Sansk. बृहस्पति.

هَرِ hare, Viṣṇu; Sansk. हरि; Hindī हरि or हरी.

In others again original ī has been (contrary to the usual rule) shortened to i, as:

کِهَرِ kēhare, lion, or: کِيسَرِ kēsare, Sansk. केसरी.

کُو kūe, street, besides: کُوِي kūī, Pers.

سَهَا sahāe, helper, besides: سَهَائِي sahāī.

Others again are to be taken as Bahuvrīhi com-

pounds, in which final i (ě) may be preserved (see §. 12, 5. 6.), as:

صَافِدِلِ sāfudile, a sincere man = having a pure heart.

أَدِهَوَادِهْ adhō-adhe, half-sharer = having half and half.

Chapter VII.

Formation of the Feminine from masculine bases.

§. 14.

The formation of the feminine from masc. nouns agrees in the main with Sanskrit and Prākṛit usage. In some instances feminine derivatives have been taken directly from the Sanskrit or Prākṛit, subject, of course, to the peculiar assimilating process of the Sindhī, as; رَانِي rānī, queen, Sansk. राज्ञी (see: Introd. §. 14, b.). Such like formations we shall pass by in the following remarks and only attend to the laws still current in Sindhī.

The Sindhī possesses in some cases separate words, to express the idea of the feminine, so that the process of deriving the feminine from the masc. base is superseded. These instances however are restricted to nouns, implying relationship, and the names of the commonest domestic animals, where the language has preferred to create separate words, instead of deriving them from the corresponding masc. base; as:

بِهِنَ bhēna, sister; بَهَاءَ bhāu, brother.

دِهِي dhia, or دِهِي dhiu, پُتْرُ putru, son.

daughter;

ماءَ māu, mother; پِي piu, father.

وَهُو vahū, daughter-in-law; جَاتْرُو jātrō, son-in-law.

دَآچِي dācī, a female camel; دَآگْهَو dāghō, a male camel.

گاؤ ga-ū, cow;

ڈانڈ ڈāndu, ox.

مہنہ mēhe, a female buffalo;
فالو falo;

سان sānu, a male buffalo.

From other masc. bases the Sindhī forms regularly a feminine, as far as this is admissible; some nouns are only extant in the feminine, the masculine being out of place or having disappeared from the language.

1) Formation of the Feminine from masc.
nouns in 'u'.

From substantives ending in 'u' the Sindhī forms the Feminine by changing 'u' into ī or ĩ (ë); with adjectives the termination 'ī' (e) or 'a' may be optionally used. In the case of the substantives the use of the termination ī or 'ī' (e) is more or less optional, but in some of them one or the other is preferred.

چھوڪري čhōkarī,

چھوڪر čhōkare,

} girl, from چھوڪر čhōkaru, boy.

گاڏھ gaḍahe, jenny-ass, from گاڏھ gaḍāhu, jack-ass.

پرت partē, washerwoman, from پرت partu, washerman.

دھير dhīra or دھير dhīre, firm, from دھير dhīru,
adj. m.

Besides this common formation of the feminine another method of forming the same by means of the affixes nī, ni, ānī, āñi, is in use, which are however only added to nouns denoting human beings, castes, occupations etc. very rarely to names of animals or to adjectives.

All these affixes correspond to the Sansk. affix आनी (= न, see Bopp, Compar. Gram. §. 840), as: इन्द्राणी the wife of Indra etc. In Sindhī the original affix ānī (with change of the dental to the cerebral) has either been preserved, or ā (see Bopp sub loco) has again

been cast out, and only *nī* (*ne*) added. All these affixes are joined to the feminine termination (*i*, seldom to *ā*), as:

جَتْنِ jāṭine,	}	the wife of a جَت Jat.
جَتْنِي jāṭinī,		
جَتْيَانِي jāṭy-ānī,		
گَاهِنِ gāhine,	}	a female singer; masc. not in use.
گَاهْيَانِي gāhyānī,		
بَرُوچَانِي ¹⁾ bārōcānī, the wife (or female) of a بَرُوچ or Beluch.		

شِينِه شِيْنِه sīhane, lioness, from شِيْهُ sīhu, lion.

چُهُونِ čhūṭine,	}	swift, from چُهُونُ čhūṭu, adj. m.
چُهُونِي čhūṭinī,		
چُهُونْيَانِي čhūṭyānī,		

2) Formation of the Feminine from masculine nouns in *ō*.

From masc. nouns ending in *ō* the feminine is formed by changing *ō* into *ī*, as:

چِهَوْرِي čhōrī, a female orphan, from چِهَوْرُو čhōrō, orphan, m.

گُولِي gōlī, a slave-girl, from گُولُو gōlō, a slave m.

Besides this feminine termination the affixes *nī*, *ni*, *ānī*, *āni* are also in use with nouns denoting caste, trade or occupation, as:

لَنگِهِنِ langhine,	}	the wife (or female) of a لَنگِهُو langhō or drummer (by caste).
لَنگِهِنِي langhinī,		
لَنگِهْيَانِي langhyānī,		
لَنگِهْيَانِي langhyāine,		

1) After a Palatal short *i* is frequently cast out.

3) Formation of the Feminine from masculine nouns in ū.

Masc. nouns ending in ū form the feminine by the affixes nī or ñi, with the union-vowel i, by which final ū is dislodged; final ū may also be shortened to 'u', which serves at the same time as union-vowel, e. g.:

هِنْدِيّ hindinī,	} the wife (or female) of a هِنْدُو, Hindū.
هِنْدِيّ hindine,	
or:	

هِنْدُونِيّ hindunī	}
هِنْدُونِ hindune	

The affixes ānī or āñi are also in use, before the addition of which final ū is always shortened to 'u', as:

هِنْدُوَانِيّ hindu-ānī,	} a Hindū female.
هِنْدُوَانِ hindu-āñe,	

4) Formation of the Feminine from masculine nouns in ī and i.

From masc. nouns ending in ī and 'i' (e) the feminine is formed by means of the affixes nī, ñi or ānī; final ī is shortened to 'i', and serves thus as union-vowel; as:

كُورِيّ kōrinī,	} the wife (female) of a كُورِي kōrī,
كُورِي kōrine,	
كُورِيَانِي kōryānī,	
سَيْتِهِي sēthinī,	} the wife (female) of a سَيْتِه sēthe,
سَيْتِهِي sēthine,	
سَيْتِهِيَانِي sēthyānī,	
a Hindū wholesale merchant.	

Nota. The cognate dialects form the feminine from masc. nouns in the same way as the Sindhī, by changing either the

masc. termination to the feminine, or by adding one of the above-mentioned fem. affixes.

The Hindī and Hindūstānī approach the Sindhī very closely in this respect; they form the feminine either by substituting the feminine termination ī, as: لڑکی larḳī, girl, from لڑکا larḳā, boy, برہمنی brāhmanī, the wife (or female) of a Brāhman, from برہمن brāhman; or by adding one of the affixes an, in, ānī, to the masc. base, as: سُنارَن sunāran (or sunārīn), the wife of a سُنار sunār, goldsmith; شیرنی šērni, a lioness, from شیر šēr, a lion; مہترانی mehtarānī, the wife (daughter) of a mehtar, or sweeper.

The same law holds good in Gujārātī; either the feminine termination ī is substituted for the masculine, as: کُتاری a female dog, from کُتارو a male dog, or the feminine affixes एण्, णी or आणी are added to the masc. base, as: वाघेण् a tigress, from वाघ tiger; ऊंदणी, a female camel, from ऊंद a male camel; धणिआणी mistress, from धणी lord.

The formation of the feminine is quite analogous in the Panjābī; for the masc. termination is either changed to the feminine, as: घोṛī, a mare, from घोṛā, a stallion, or the feminine affixes अण्, णी, āṇī are added to the masc. base, as: uskaṇ, a slanderous woman, from uskaṇī, a slanderous man; ऊँṇī, a female camel, from ऊँṭ, a male camel; mugalāṇī, the wife (or daughter) of a mugal.

The Marāṭhī forms the feminine from nouns in 'a' (quiescent) or ā by substituting the fem. termination ī, as: मुगली, girl, from मुगला boy; दासी, a slave-girl, from दास a slave; in nouns ending in 'a', the Sansk. fem. termination ā is occasionally to be met with, as: शूद्रा or शूद्री the wife of a शूद्र. Besides these two fem. terminations the affix īn or īṇ is to be found in nouns ending in 'a' (quiescent) or ī, as: वाघीण, tigress, from वाघ, tiger, पापीण a sinful woman, from पापी a sinner; धनीन् mistress, from धनी master.

The Bangālī stands nearest to the Sanskrit with regard to the formation of the feminine; it substitutes the fem. terminations ā or ī for those of the masculine, as: tanyā, daughter, from tanya, son; puttrī, daughter, from puttra, son. Adjectives or nouns of agency, ending in ka ('a' being quiescent) form their feminine always in kā, as: kārīkā, doing, from kārak, m., gāyakā, a female singer, from gāyak, a male singer. Nouns in ī (= in) form their feminine by the affix nī, as: hattinī, a female elephant, from hattī, a male elephant; likewise patnī, mistress, from pati, master. Also the use of the affix ānī or āni is strictly in accordance with Sanskrit practice, as: ācāryānī, the wife of an ācārya.

We find thus, that all the north-Indian vernaculars of Sanskrit origin fully agree in the formation of the feminine.

SECTION II. THE INFLEXION OF NOUNS.

Chapter VIII.

I. Formation of the Plural.

§. 15.

The crude form of a Sindhī noun is always identical with its Nominative Singular, the Nominative Singular having no longer a case-sign in any of the modern Arian tongues.

The Sindhī possesses no definite or indefinite article, as little as the Sanskrit or the Prākrit; if the one or the other is to be expressed for distinctness' sake, a demonstrative or indefinite pronoun (or the numeral "one") is placed before a noun. There is no longer a Dual in Sindhī, neither in Pāli nor Prākrit, nor in any of the modern Sanskritical tongues; we have therefore only to describe the formation of the Plural (Nominative), according to the respective terminations of nouns.

1) Nouns ending in ũ.

Nouns ending in ũ are, as we have stated already, for the greatest part masculine, a few of them only being feminine. According to their respective gender the Plural is formed, as follows:

a) Plural of masculine nouns ending in ũ:

These nouns form their Plural by changing ũ into ā, as: کھو khūhu, a well, Plur. کھو khūha, wells; ڙو varu, husband, Plur. ڙو vara. If final 'u' be preceded by short 'a', a euphonic v is inserted in the Plural, as: ڙو ra-u, weed, Plur. ڙو rava, weeds. But if final 'u' be

preceded by any other vowel, but short 'a', the insertion of v is optional, as: **كَهَاء** ghāu, a wound, Plur. **كَهَاو** ghāva or: **كَهَاء** ghāa, wounds; **دَيَّر** dēu, a god, Plur. **دَيَّر** dēva or: **دَيَّر** dēa, gods; but when a long vowel, preceding final ū, is nasalized, the insertion of v becomes necessary, as:

تَهَانُ thāu, a dish, Plur. **تَهَانَو** thāva, dishes.

The following two nouns form their Nom. Plural in an irregular way:

بِهَاء bhāu, brother, Plur. **بِهَائِر** bhāura or: **بِهَائِر** bhāuru, brothers.

پِي piu, father, Plur. **پِيَر** piura, fathers.

Both these Plurals point back to the Prākṛit forms **भाञ्जरा** (Nom. Sing. **भाञ्जरो**) and **पिञ्जरा** (Nom. Sing. **पिञ्जरो**), and are therefore, properly speaking, not irregular (cf. Varar. V, 35).

Annotation. We have already noticed (§. 5, I.), that the Sindhī termination ū is shortened from the Prākṛit **ओ**; in Prākṛit nouns ending in ō form their Plural in ā, which has been shortened in Sindhī to ā.

The cognate idioms agree with the Sindhī in this respect. In Hindī and Hindūstānī, this class of nouns, having already dropped the terminating short vowel in the Singular, throw the same off in the Plural likewise, i. e. they remain unaltered in the Plural. The same is the case in Marāṭhī and Panjābī; the Gujārāṭī alone adds the Plural termination ō.

b) Plural of feminine nouns ending in ū.

These nouns form their Plural by changing final ū into ū̄, as:

وَتھُ vathu, a thing; Plur. **وَتھُون** vathū̄, things; **وِج** viju, lightening; Plur. **وِجُون** vijū̄, lightnings.

The following nouns have, besides their regular Plural, also an irregular one, as:

بَهِينَ bhēnu, sister (or: بَهِينَ bhēna); Plur. بَهِينُونِ bhēnū or: بَهِينَرُ bhēnarū, بَهِينَرُونِ bhēnarū, sisters.
 مَاءَ māu, mother; Plur. مَائُونِ māū, or: مَائِرُ māiru, مَائِرُونِ māirū, mothers.

دَهِئِ dhiu (or: دَهِئِ dhia), daughter; Plur. دَهِئُونِ dhiū, or: دَهِئَرُ dhiaru, دَهِئَرُونِ dhiarū, daughters.

نُھُ nuhu (or: نُھُ nuha), daughter-in-law; Plur. نُھُونِ nuhū or: نُھَرُ nuharu, نُھَرُونِ nuharū, daughters-in-law.

In the levelling process of decomposition these fem. nouns have adopted the same affix ara (or for euphony's sake: ira), as the irregular Plurals of masc. nouns, and as feminines they have lengthened the same also to arū.

Annotation. In Pāli fem. nouns ending in 'u' remain either unchanged in the Plural, as: yāgu, sacrifice, Plur. yāgu, or ō (the Sansk. Plural affix अम्) is added to them (with inserted euphonic 'y') as: yaguyō; the latter is also the case in Prākṛit, as: bahū, wife, Plur. bahūō, or the affix ō may be again shortened to 'u', as: bahūu. In Sindhī this Plural affix 'u' has been contracted with final 'u' (ū) into ū, and at the same time nasalized = ū̃.

2) Nouns ending in ō (ō̃).

These form their Plural by changing final ō into ā, as: وَاڏھو vādhō, a carpenter, Plur. وَاڏھَا tōbō, a diver, Plur. تَوْبَا tōbā, divers. If final ō be nasalized, which is frequently the case, the nasal is also preserved in the Plural, as: چَوَٿھون čōthō̃, the fourth, Plur. چَوَٿھان čōthā̃.

If final ō be preceded by short 'a' (or nasalized: ā), a euphonic v is inserted between them in the Plural, as: تَٽو taō, a pan; Plur. تَٽَا tavā, pans; نَٽون nāō̃, new; Plur. نَٽَانِ nāvā̃; but if final ō be preceded by any other

vowel, the insertion of *v* is optional, as: कु॒ओ kuō, mouse, Plur. कु॒आ kuā or: कु॒व कु॒वā; मि॒ओ mēō, fisherman, Plur. मि॒आ mēā or: मि॒व मि॒वā; ग॒हा॒ओ ghā-ō, a fish-net, Plur. ग॒हा॒आ ghā-ā or: ग॒हा॒व ghāvā.

We have repeatedly adverted to the fact, that the Prākṛit termination *ō* has in Sindhī either been shortened to 'u', or retained unaltered; the formation of the Plural of the latter description of nouns is quite in accordance with Prākṛit usage (Sing. *ō*, Plur. *ā*).

Annotation. In the cognate idioms the masc. termination *ā* has been substituted instead of *ō*. In Hindī, Hindūstānī, Marāṭhī and Panjābī masc. nouns ending in *ā* commonly change the same in the Plural to *ē*, a Plural termination, which is already in use in the inferior old Prākṛit dialects (see: Lassen, Instit. Ling. Prāk. p. 430). The Gujarātī differs in this respect, as masc. nouns ending in *ō* add to the Plural termination *ā* the affix *ō*, as: च॒हो॒करो॒, a boy, Plur. च॒हो॒का॒रो-ō; a similar formation of the Plural is already ascribed to the Māgadī dialect of the Prākṛit; cf. Lassen, p. 399.

3) Nouns ending in *ū*, *ũ*.

Nouns ending in *ū* or, as it is more common, in *ũ*, be they masc. or feminine, remain unchanged in the Plural, as: वि॒च॒हूँ vičhũ, m., scorpion, Plur. वि॒च॒हूँ vičhũ; गा॒ũ gaũ, fem., cow, Plur. गा॒ũ gaũ, cows.

In Pāli, masc. themes ending in 'u', lengthen the same in the Nom. Plural to *ū*, as bhikkhu, a beggar, Plur. bhikkhū; and such masc. themes, as end in *ū* in the Nom. Sing., remain unchanged in the Plural, as: abhibhū, a chief, Plur. abhibhū (contracted from abhibhuvō). In Prākṛit masc. themes ending in 'u' lengthen their final vowel always in the Nominative Sing., to which in the Nom. Plural the affix *ō* (= अ॒स्) is added, as: वा॒ũ, wind, Nom. Sing. vāũ, Nom. Plur. vāũō, winds. This Plural affix *ō* may in Prāk. be again shortened to 'u', and in the modern dialects it is dropped altogether. In Sindhī *ū* is usually nasalized = *ũ*.

Annotation. In Hindī, Hindūstānī, Marāṭhī and Panjābī masc. nouns ending in ū, remain unaltered in the Plural; but fem. nouns add in Hindūstānī the Plural termination ā̃, as jōrū, a wife, plural jōrūā̃, the Prākṛit Plural affix ō being changed to ā, ā̃. The Gujārātī keeps close to the Prākṛit in forming the Plural of masc. nouns ending in ū, by adding the Plural affix ō, as: hindū, a Hindū, Plur. hindūō.

4) Nouns ending in ā (ā̃).

These are, as noticed already (§. 13, 3) for the most part feminine; they form their Plural by adding the Plural affix ū̃, as:

هَآ hačā, f., murder; Plur. هَآئِ hačā-ū̃, murders.

The Plural of these nouns corresponds to the Prāk. Plural termination ā-ō or ā-u, ō (or shortened 'u') being added to final ā of the Singular (see Lassen p. 307). In Sindhī the Prāk. Plur. increment ō has been changed to ū̃, and at the same time nasalized.

Few nouns ending in ā are masculine; they remain unaltered in the Plural, as: لَالَا lālā, master, Plur. لَالَا lālā, masters.

The Prākṛit Plural increment ō (ā-ō) has first been shortened to 'u', and then been dropped altogether in Sindhī.

Annotation. In Hindī and Hindūstānī fem. nouns ending in ā (ā̃) form their Plural by adding the increment ē̃, as balā, misfortune, Plur. balāē̃. This ē̃ corresponds to the Prākṛit affix ō, which in the inferior Prākṛit dialects is frequently changed to ē (cf. Lassen, p. 398, 408). Those masc. nouns, the final ā of which does not correspond to the Sindhī ō, remain likewise unaltered in the Plural. — In Panjābī fem. nouns ending in ā add either ī̃ or iā̃, the Plural increment ī̃ being a change from the Hindī ē̃, and iā̃ from the Prākṛit affix ō, with euphonic 'i' or y. A few masc. nouns remain likewise unaltered in the Plural, as ātmā, soul; pitā, father etc. — The Gujārātī entirely agrees with the Prākṛit, adding simply ō to the fem. nouns in ā, as: mā, mother, Plur. mā-ō. — In Marāṭhī fem. nouns ending in ā do not undergo any change in the Plural, as: mātā, mother, Plur. mātā;

some masc. nouns, falling under this head, remain likewise unaltered in the Plural.

5) Nouns ending in ā.

These nouns being all feminine, form their Plural by changing final 'a' either to ū (as in Lār); or to ā̃ (as in Sirō); تَرَ tara, nostril, Plur. تَرُون tarū or: تَرَان tarā, nostrils.

These nouns have been, as noted already, shortened from Sanskrit-Prākṛit bases ending in ā; they either drop final 'a' before the Plural increment ā̃ (= Prāk. ō), or restore the original ā and drop the Plural increment ō = u, nasalising at the same time the final long vowel.

Annotation. This class of nouns is wantig in the cognate idioms, where final 'a' has become silent; e. g. Hindūstānī: jībh, f., tongue, Plural: jībh-ē̃, the Plural being made up by the increment ē̃ = Prāk. ō. — Panjābī: bāh, f., arm (Sindhi:

بَاه bāha), Plur. bāhā̃; Marāṭhī: jībh, f. Plur. similarly: jībhā. The Gujarātī is consequent in adding simply the Plural increment ō to fem. bases, ending in a quiescent consonant, as: sājh, f., evening, Plur. sājhō.

6) Nouns ending in ī (ī̃).

a) Masculine nouns ending in ī remain unaltered in the Plural:

بَیْلِ bēlī, a servant, Plur. بَیْلِي bēlī, servants; پَرِي prī, friend, Plur. پَرِي prī, friends.

In Prākṛit masc. nouns ending in ī form their Plural by adding the increment ō, which has been shortened to 'u' and then cast off altogether in Sindhī.

b) Feminine nouns ending in ī add in the Plural the increment ū̃, shortening before this affix the preceding long ī, which may also, for euphony's sake, be changed to y; as: گُولِي gōlī, a slave-girl, Plur. گُولِيُون gōliū̃, gōliyū̃, gōlyū̃; نِهَائِي nihāī (or: nihāī̃), a potter's kiln, Plur. نِهَائِيُون nihāyū̃.

Feminine nouns in ī add in Prākṛit likewise the affix ō, which may be shortened to 'u'; in this case final 'u' has in Sindhī been lengthened to ū and nasalized at the same time, to distinguish the Plural of the feminine nouns from that of the masculine.

If final ī be preceded by any letter of the palatal class or by 'h', it is commonly dropped before the Plural affix ū, as: مَنجِي manjī, a stool, Plur. مَنجُون manjū, stools; مَنجِي, f., manjhī, a buffalo, Plur. مَنجُون manjhū, buffaloes.

Annotation. In Hindī and Hindūstānī fem. nouns follow the method of the Prākṛit in forming their Plural, with the only difference, that the Prāk. Plural increment ō is changed to ā, and this again nasalized, as čhurī, knife, Plur. čhurīā. Masc. nouns in ī do not differ from their Singular. The Panjābī quite accords with the Hindī, fem. nouns in ī adding the Plural termination ā, as dhī, daughter, Plur. dhīā, the masc. nouns in ī remaining unaltered in the Plural. The same may be remarked of the Marāṭhī. The Gujārātī stands nearest to the Prākṛit in this respect, all nouns, be they masc. or feminine, adding simply the Plural affix ō.

7) Nonns ending in ī (ë)

a) Fem. nouns ending in 'ī' (e) form their Plural by adding the Plural affix ū, as: رَاتِ rāte, night, Plur. رَاتُون rāteū, nights. — If 'ī' be preceded by a palatal or h, it disappears before the Plural termination ū, as: مِيه mēhe, buffalo, Plur. مِيهُون mēhū, buffaloes.

جُو jōe, wife, forms its Plural either regularly, as: جُويُون jōyū, or irregularly, as: جُويرُ jōiru, جُويرُ jōhiru, or جُويرُون jōirū, wives.

b) Masc. nouns ending in 'ī' (e) remain unchanged in the Plural, as: سِيته sethe, a wholesale merchant, Plur. سِيته sethe.

Annotation. In Hindī and Hindūstānī, as stated already, final 'i' has been dropped, and such nouns, as end in Sindhī in 'a' or 'i', use there one common Plural increment, viz.: ē. In Gujārātī and Panjābī final 'i' has likewise disappeared in most cases, and ō and ā are respectively added as Plural terminations. In Marāṭhī fem. bases ending in 'i' remain either unchanged in the Plural or have final 'i' lengthened to ī. The lengthening of final 'i' in the Plural is more in accordance with Pāli and Prākṛit usage (e. g. Pāli: ratti, night, Plur. rattī or rattiyō; Prāk. rattī-ō or: rattī-u). Masc. bases ending in 'i' remain similarly either unaltered in the Plural, or (according to some Pandits) lengthen the same to ī (as in Pāli and Prākṛit).

II. Formation of cases; case-affixes.

§. 16.

Properly speaking there is no longer a declension in Sindhī, nor in any of the modern languages of the Ārian stock; there are only a few remnants of the ancient Sanskrit, Pāli and Prākṛit case-inflexions, all the other cases being made up by means of case-affixes or postpositions.¹⁾

If we compare the modern Ārian dialects with the Pāli and Prākṛit, we perceive at once the great deterioration, the modern idioms have undergone in this respect; for while the Pāli and Prākṛit have as yet preserved all the cases of the Sanskrit, with the exception of the Dative, which has already become scarce in Pāli and has been discarded altogether in Prākṛit, its functions being shifted to the Genitive, the modern idioms have lost nearly all power of inflexion and substituted in lieu of flexional increments regular adverbs, which we generally term postpositions. The same process we can notice in the modern Romanic tongues, where after the loss of the Latin declensional inflexions, prepositions have been substituted to make up for the lost cases.

1) In poetry postpositions may also be placed before the noun, they govern, as the rhythm may require.

The great distinctive feature of the declensional process of the modern Ārian dialects, with the exception of the Bangālī, consists in the fact, that there are properly only two cases of a noun, the absolute or crude form, corresponding throughout to the Nom. Singular, and the Formative case, to which the various adverbs or postpositions are added, which serve to make up for the lost case-terminations. This latter case has been generally called the oblique case by European grammarians, but we prefer to call it the Formative (after the precedence of Dr. Caldwell).

The number of declensions, if they may be termed thus, depends therefore in Sindhī, as well as in the cognate idioms, on the various methods, in which the Formative is made up; for the case-signs remain the same, as well for the Singular as the Plural, since they are, as we shall presently see, originally either (Sanskrit) prepositions or adverbs.

We shall now first investigate the remnants of the ancient case-terminations in Sindhī and the adverbs or postpositions, which have been substituted for such cases, as have lost their original inflexions. In the arrangement of the cases we shall follow the common order, which has been instituted by the old Sanskrit grammarians, in order to facilitate the intercomparison.

1) The Nominative case of the Singular and plural we may pass over, since they have been noticed already.

2) The Accusative case of the Singular and Plural has been dropped in Sindhī, as well as in all the other kindred idioms. This has been already the case in the inferior Prākṛit dialects, and is expressly mentioned of the Apabhraṃśa, the mother of the modern Sindhī (see: Lassen p. 459).

We must keep this fact constantly before our eyes, that in Sindhī, as well as in its sister-tongues, there is no such thing (in a grammatical sense), as an Accusative

case, the Accusative being now throughout identical with the Nominative. If we find therefore generally stated in European grammars, that the postposition **کھی** khē, or **کو** kō in Hindūstānī serves to denote also the Accusative case, we have, in the strictly grammatical sense of the word, to repudiate such an idea. We shall see under the Dative case, what the origin of that postposition is, and that will satisfactorily explain the syntactical peculiarities of the modern Indian tongues, which use such and similar postpositions, where we use either the Dative or the Accusative.

3) The Instrumentalis is not distinguished by any case-affix or postposition in Sindhī, but differs from the Nominative Sing. only by the change of the final vowel (where such a change is admissible). The Instrumentalis is in the Singular and Plural identical with the Formative (which see further on). From thence it would follow, that the Instrumentalis is originally the Genitive, which may be rendered very probable by the Instrumentalis of the Plural.

Annotation. The Hindī and Hindūstānī use as Instrumental case-affix **nē**. In Hinduī (see Garcin de Tassy, *Rudiments de la langue Hindouī*, 26, 99) we meet further the affixes **nē**, **nē**, **nī** and **na**, and in the Plural (a)n or **nē**, **nē**, **nī**, as in the Singular. In Panjābī we find the instrumental affix **nai**, or **na**, or only **ī**, or the Formative is promiscuously used for the Instrumentalis, just as in Sindhī. In Gujarātī we meet with **ē** as Instrumental affix. The Marāṭhī uses for the Instrumentalis Sing. the affix **nē**, and for the Plural **nī**. As to the origin of these various instrumental affixes there can hardly be a doubt. The Sansk. instrumental case-inflexion of the Singular **nā**, **na** (see Bopp, *Comp. Gram. I*, §. 158) has been used as a separate adverb in Hindūstānī and Panjābī (not in Marāṭhī, where it coalesces with the noun as a regular inflexion), or even been abbreviated to **ī** or **ē** (n being originally only a euphonic addition to the instrumental affix **ā**), as partly in Panjābī and in Gujarātī. In the Instrumentalis Plur. the Marāṭhī uses also (besides **nī**) the affix **hī**, corresponding to the Prāk. Plur. instrumental affix **हिं** or **हि**; see Lassen, p. 310. In Ban-

gālī tē is used as instrumental affix, which is originally identical with the Ablative affix तो = तस्.

4) The Dative case has totally disappeared from the Prākṛit and its functions have been assigned to the Genitive. We find therefore in the modern idioms the greatest discrepancy as to the method, in which the Dative case is provided for. In Sindhī the affix کھی khē is used, as well for the Singular as the Plural, being placed after the Formative Singular or Plural of a noun: as گھر کھی ghara khē, to a house, گھران کھی gharane khē, to houses. In poetical language the postposition کن kane or: کن kane is also used instead of کھی khē, which are apparently derived from the same source, as کھی, only by a different process of assimilation (cf. the Hindī: kan, kane, Hinduī कह).

Annotation. The Bangālī uses as Dative affix kē, the Hindī and Hindūstānī kō (dialectically also pronounced 'kū' in the Dekhan), the Hinduī (according to Garcin de Tassy) also kō, kaū, kah, kāh, kahā and even hi.

Dr. Caldwell, in his Comparative Grammar of the Drāvidian languages has attempted to vindicate the Hindūstānī kō for the Drāvidian languages of the South; he says (p. 225): "In the vernaculars of northern India, which are deeply tinged with Scythian characteristics, we find a suffix, which appears to be not only similar to the Drāvidian, but the same. The Dative-Accusative in the Hindī and Hindūstānī is kō, or colloquially kū; in the language of Orissa ku, in Bangālī ki, in Sindhī khi, in Shingalese ghai; in the Uraon, a semi-Drāvidian Kōle dialect, gai, in the language of the Bodos, a Bhūtan hill tribe, khō, in Tibetan gya. The evident existence of a connexion between these suffixes and the Drāvidian Dative case-sign ku, is very remarkable. Of all the analogies between the North-Indian dialects and the southern, this is the clearest and most important, and it cannot but be regarded as betokening either an original connexion between the northern and the southern races, prior to the Brahmanic irruption, or the origination of both races from one and the same primitive Scythian

stock." If this case-sign *kō* or *kū* then be the clearest and most important analogy between the North-Indian vernaculars and the Drāvidian tongues, we shall see presently, that there will be no analogy whatever between them, though at the first sight the identity of both seems to be past any doubt. In the first instance the fact speaks already very strongly against such a supposition, that the Marāṭhī, which is the closest neighbour to the Drāvidian tongues, has repudiated the use of *khē*, *kā* or *kō*, and employed a Dative-affix, the origin of which we hope to fix past controversy. We shall further see, that the Gujarātī and Panjābī have also made up for the Dative case by postpositions, borrowed from the Sanskrit, without the slightest reference to the Drāvidian languages, and we may therefore reasonably expect the same fact from the remaining Arian dialects. It would certainly be wonderful, if those Arian dialects, which border immediately on the Drāvidian idioms, should have warded off any Drāvidian influence on their inflexional method, whereas those more to the north should have been "deeply tinged with Scythian characteristics." Fortunately we are able to show, that such an assumption is not only gratuitous, but irreconcilable with the origin of the above mentioned Dative-affixes.

We derive the Sindhī *khē*, the Bangālī *kē*, from the Sanskrit Locative कृते, 'for the sake of', 'on account of', 'as regards'. This will at once account for the aspiration of *k* in Sindhī; for this is not done by chance, but by a strict rule (see Introd. §. 1, e, note); in Bangālī *r* does not exercise such an influence on the aspiration of a preceding or following consonant, and therefore we have simply *kē*. The Sanskrit form कृते becomes in Prākṛit first किते, then (by the regular elision of *t*) किए, and contracted *kē*, and in Sindhī, by reason of the elided *r*, *khē*. The Hindī and Hindūstānī form of this adverb *kō* we derive in the same way from the Sansk. कृतं which is used adverbially with the same signification as the Locative कृते. In Prākṛit already, and still more so in the modern dialects, the neuter has been merged into the masculine; we have therefore first कितो, thence किओ, and contracted को, *kō*. We can thus satisfactorily account for the various forms: *khē*, *kē* or *kō*. That the proposed derivation of these adverbs does not rest on a mere fancy, is further proved by the Sindhī particle *rē*, 'without', which is derived in the same way from the Sansk. Locative झृते, Prākṛit रिने = रिए, and thence contracted

rē (ria). It remains now for us to notice briefly the somewhat deviating forms of the Hinduī, as exhibited by Garcin de Tassy. In **को** kō and **कौ** kaū a euphonic Anusvāra has been added, to which the modern tongues have taken a great fancy; kaū is only a different pronunciation for kō, ō changing in Hinduī very commonly to au. The forms **कह** kah, or with euphonic Anusvāra **कंह** kāh or **कहं** kahā, present again another proof for the correctness of the proposed derivation of these adverbs. For we have in **कह**, **कंह**, **कहं** (Hindī also: kán, kanē, with a full nasal, and in consequence thereof with ejection of h) the same basis as in **कों** and **कौं**, only the assimilating process has been different. The vowel **चु** r, when joined to a consonant, can, according to Prākṛit usage, be resolved either into 'i' (as in **किते**) or into 'a' (as: **कतं** for **कृतं**) (see Varar. I, 27; Lassen p. 116, 2, a; Introd. §. 1); in consequence of the inherent r the following consonant is aspirated (as in Sindhī: kk = k), so that we get the form **कथं**; this aspirated थ is again elided, so that h only remains (see Lassen p. 207; Introd. §. 8), and thus we have the forms **कह**, **कहं**. With the other alleged form **हि** hi, the matter stands different; we compare this Hinduī Dative affix with the Apabhraṃśa Genitive affix **हे**, the Genitive, as noted already, supplying in Prākṛit the place of the Dative (as to the analysis of this **हे** see Lassen p. 462 and 466).

The Marāṭhī uses two affixes to make up for the Dative, which are joined to the crude form by the so-called union-vowel, viz: **स**, s and **ला** lā. The first of these two, s, is identical with the Prāk. Genit.-Dative case termination **स्स** ss = Sansk. **स्य** sy, so that we have here the remnant of an ancient Sanskrit-Prākṛit case-inflexion. The latter one, lā is more doubtful as to its origin. Lassen has already started a conjecture (see Instit. Ling. Prāk. p. 55, 99) as to the origin of this affix; he derives it from the Sansk. **आल** = **आलय** 'place habitation', signifying the place, where the action rests. We cannot endorse this derivation, as the Marāṭhī case-affix is not **आल** āla, but **ला** lā and we cannot see any reason, why initial long ā should have been transferred to the back of this particle. We would compare the Marāṭhī Dative affix lā with the Sindhī postposition

lāe, 'on account of', 'for the sake of', 'for', Hindūstānī لِيْہِ līē, both of which are derived from the Sansk. root ला (रा) to give (Sindhī: لَاتِنُ lāinu, to apply). This seems to me to be borne out by the modern Persian Dative-Accusative particle رَا rā, which as yet is very scantily used in the old Pārsī, and which, according to Spiegel's Pārsī grammar (p. 55) does not denote properly a Dative case, but originally signifies 'for the sake of', 'on account of'. The same particle we find also in the Paṣtō, لَ lah, which corresponds to the modern Persian particle را. — In Bangālī we meet also (besides kē) especially in poetical language a Dative affix rē, which I do not hesitate to identify with the Marāṭhī ला and the Hindūstānī līē.

In Gujārātī the Dative-affix is nē, which we identify with the Sansk. preposition नि, Greek ἐν, Latin in. The Pan-jābī uses as Dative affix nū, in which we likewise recognise the Sansk. preposition अनु, 'toward', 'to'.

5) The Ablative case is formed in Sindhī by the affix اَن ā, which is always connected with the base itself and never written separately. The Sindhī shows itself thus fully conscious of the origin of this case-termination, which corresponds exactly to the Pāli-Prākṛit Ablative case-termination ā, which originates from the Sanskrit ablative आत् by the elision of final t (see Lassen p. 352, 304); in Sindhī the final long vowel has again been nasalized, as in so many other instances. In the Singular final 'u', 'ō', 'a' are dropped before the affix ā, as: گھراَن gharā, from a house, nom. گھرُ gharu, a house; دَرَان darā, out of a defile, nom. دَرُو darō; زَبَانَن zabānā, from the tongue, nom. زَبَان zabāna, tongue. Those nouns, which end in the Singular in ī (ī) and ū (ū), shorten the same before the affix ā, as: نَوْرَتَان nōrīā, from a rope, nom. نَوْرِي nōrī, a rope; مِرْوَان miruā, from a wild beast, nom. مِرْوَن mirū, a wild beast.

Nouns in 'ī (ē) generally retain their final vowel before the affix ā̃, but they may also drop it, as: **پھرتان** phureā̃, from (by) a robbery, nom. **پھر** phure, a robbery; **نیرتان** nirtā̃, out of thought, with reflexion, nom. **نیرت** nirte, thought. Nouns in ā either nasalize the same in the Ablative, or, more commonly, use the postposition **کہان** khā̃ etc. In the Plural the Ablative affix ā̃ is joined to the full Formative in -ne, as: **گھرینان** gharane-ā̃, from houses, **میروانان** miruane-ā̃ (**میرنیان**), from wild beasts etc.

Besides this common Ablative affix ā̃ we find in Sindhī also such forms, as: **اُون** aū (**اُون**), contracted: **و** ō (**اُون**), and even **ؤ** ū (**اُون**). In the more ancient idiom, as used by the Sindhī poets, the Ablative Singular generally ends in ā-ū. All these various Ablative affixes are derived from the Prākṛit Ablative **आदो** (see Lassen p. 302, 304, 599), which becomes (by the elision of d) āō, or shortened: āu.

The Sindhī uses also the postposition **کہان**¹⁾ khā̃, **کہاون** khaū, **کہون** khō, to express the idea of the Ablative; all these and other postpositions require the Formative of a noun. Other postpositions, which are used to make up for the Ablative, see under the list of postpositions.

Annotation. Nearest to the Sindhī comes the Marāṭhī in this respect, which uses as Ablative-case terminations the affixes

1) The postposition **کہان** khā̃ etc. is derived from the same source, as **کہی**, with the only difference, that the Ablative termination ā̃, aū etc. has been added. The same is to be said of the Ablative postposition **کانان** kanā̃, derived from **کن**, by the same process.

ūn and hūn, occasionally also tūn. In Bangālī and Panjābī we find the Ablative affix *tē* (though in Panjābī a regular Ablative termination *ō* is also to be met with), which has sprung from the Prākṛit Ablative termination **तो** *tō*; similar to it is the Gujarātī Ablative affix *thī*, which has been aspirated. In Hindī we find also *thī*, but most in use is *sē*, apparently identical with the Prākṛit Genitive termination **हे** (see Lassen p. 462).

6) The Sanskrit Genitive-case termination **स्य**, in Pālī and Prākṛit **स्स** *ss*, has been lost in all the modern tongues, with the exception of the Bangālī, where *ss* has been hardened to *r*. All the other dialects have taken to a new way of forming the Genitive, of which we find already some traces in the old Vedic language: the noun, which ought to be placed in the Genitive case, is changed into an adjective by an adjective affix, and thence follows, as a matter of course, that this so-called Genitive, which is really and truly an adjective, must agree in gender, number and case with its governing noun as all other adjectives.

The Sindhī employs for this purpose the affix **جو** *jō* (fem. **جي** *jī*), corresponding to the common adjective affix *kō* (= Sansk. **क**), with transition of the tenuis (*ċ* = *k*) in to the media (*j*), very likely to establish thereby some distinction between these two originally identical affixes. In Sindhī this adjective affix **جو** *jō* is always written separately, whereas the common adjective affix *kō* is joined to the base, as in Sanskrit (see §. 10, 24); it follows always the Formative Sing. or Plur. of a noun, as: **گھار جو دھانی** *ghara jō dhanī*, the master of the house, **گھارن جو دھانی** *gharane jō dhanī*, the master of the houses; **مُرس جي جوہ** *mursa jī jōe*, the wife of the man; **مُرسن جون جوڻيون** *mursane jū jōyū*, the wives of the men. In poetry **سندو** *sandō*, 'belonging to', is used quite in the same way, as **جو**, as:

پَریان سَنَدِی پَارِ ڌِي priyā sandē pāra ḍē, towards the direction of the friends.

Annotation. The Marāṭhī uses as Genitive case-affix चा, with transition of the guttural क into the corresponding palatal, as in Sindhī, yet without changing the tenuis into the media. The Hindī and Hindūstānī have preserved the original Sanskrit adjective affix क, without changing it into the palatal kā; in Hinduī we meet also with the affix ko and kau. The Panjābī and Gujarātī seem to make an exception from what we have just stated. In Panjābī the Genitive case-affix is dā, in which we recognise the Prāk. Ablative affix दो dō (= तम्), turned into a Genitive affix. This Panjābī Genitive case-affix will clear up the Paṣtō Genitive prefix ڏ da, being identical with it in origin. The Gujarātī employs as Genitive case-affix nō, which is another adjective affix, corresponding in signification with क and used in Sindhī (see §. 10, 27), to form adjectives in the same way, as kō (on the origin of this affix nō see Bopp's Comp. Gram. III, §. 839).

7) The original Sanskrit Locative termination 'i' has been preserved in Sindhī, though the Locative can now only be distinguished in masc. bases ending in 'u', as: هَندِهَ handhe, in a place, nom. هَندُ handhu; مَٽِهَ mathe, on the top, nom. مَٽُ mathu, the top. In nouns, ending in any other vowel, but 'u' (masc.), the Locative must be expressed, for perspicuity's sake, by an adverb or postposition, requiring the Formative of a noun, as: کَوٽھِي مِينِ kōṭhia mē or: کَوٽھِي مَنجھِي kōṭhia manjhe, in a room. In poetry the Formative of any noun is commonly used also as Locative, without a postposition.

Annotation. In Marāṭhī the Locative affix 'i' has been lengthened to ī and at the same time nasalized = ĩ. Besides this we meet also with the Locative termination आंत, which is originally the Sansk. Ablative, used as a Locative. In Bangālī the Locative ends in ē (i), as in Sindhī, or is expressed by the affix tē. In Panjābī the Locative is generally ex-

pressed by adverbial postpositions, though the Locative itself has not been altogether lost; we find there the affix *ī*, as in *Marāṭhī*, or *ē*, which are always joined to the base of a noun. In *Gujarātī* the Locative is either expressed by the affix *ē*, or by the help of postpositions. In *Hindī* and *Hindūstānī* the Locative, as a distinctive case, has been quite lost and must always be expressed by postpositions. Still some vestiges of it are lingering in the so-called participles absolute, as: *hōtē*, or with the emphatic *hī*, *hōtēhī*, in being.

Some other idiomatic phrases, as: *أُس دِن* *us din*, on that day etc. point also to an original Locative.

8) The Vocative is expressed in *Sindhī* by prefixing one of the interjectional particles: *ē*, *hē*, *hō* or *yā*, and, when speaking to an inferior, *rē* (fem. *rī*) or *arē*.¹⁾ The final vowel of a noun in the Vocative either undergoes a change or remains unaltered. In the Vocative Singular masc. nouns ending in 'u' change the same to 'a', as: *ای میہار* *ē mēhāra*, o buffalo-keeper! nom. *میہار* *mēhāru*; those ending in *ō* change the same to *ā*, as: *ای سُمیرا* *ē sūmirā*, o *Sūmirō*! those ending in *ū*, *ī*, 'i' remain unaltered, as: *ای پُنھڑ* *ē Punhū*, o *Punhū*! In the Vocative Plural nouns ending in 'u' (m.) have the termination *ō* or *ā*, as: *ای یارو* *ē yārō* or: *یارا* *yāra*, o friends! (nom. sing. *یار*); those ending in *ō* terminate in the Vocative Plur. in *ā*, *ō* and *au*, as: *ای مَنگتا* *ē mangatā*, o beggars! or: *مَنگتو* *mangatō*, *مَنگتو* *mangatau* (*مَنگتو* *mangata-u*), Nom. Sing. *مَنگتو* *mangatō*; those ending in *ū* (*ū*) terminate in *ō* or *ā*, before which affixes the preceding *ū* (*ū*) must be shortened, as: *ای واٹاہو* *ē vātāhuā* or *ای واٹاہو* *ē vātāhuō*, o travellers! Nom. Sing. *واٹاہو* *vātāhū*; those ending in *ī* terminate in the Plural

1) About the origin of *rē*, *rī*, *arē*, see Dr. Caldwell's *Compar. Grammar of the Dravidian languages* p. 440.

in ā, ō and au (a-u), shortening at the same time the final ī of the base, as: **اِي كِيچَا** ē kēcīā, **اِي كِيچُو** ē kēcīō, or: **اِي كِيچَاو** ē kēcīau, o Kēcīs! Nom. Sing. **كِيچِي** kēcī, an inhabitant of Kēc (in Beluchistān); occasionally 'ah' is added in the Vocative Singular, as: **حَامِيَه** hāmiah, o protector! and in the Vocative Plural final ā is even lengthened to 'āhu' for the sake of the rhyme, as: **پَرِيَاهُ** priyāhu, o friends! those ending in 'ī' (e), add in the Vocative Plural simply the affix ō or ā: **اِي سِيْتِهَو** ē sētheō, or: **اِي سِيْتِهَا** ē sētheā, o wholesale-merchants! Nom. Sing. **سِيْتِه** sēthe.

Feminine nouns ending in 'u', 'a', ā, ī, 'ī' (e) in the Nom. Singular, remain unaltered in the Vocative Sing.; in the Plural the Vocative is likewise identical with the Nominative. The few fem. nouns, which end irregularly in the Nom. Plural in 'u', as: **بِهِنَرُو** bhēnarū, sisters etc., retain likewise their final 'u' in the Vocative Plural, as: **اِي بِهِنَرُو** ē bhēnarū, o sisters! when ending in ū, they drop in the Vocative final Anusvāra, as: **اِي دِهَرُو** ē dhiarū, o daughters! Nom. Plur. **دِهَرُون** dhiarū.

The Vocative may also be used without any interjectional prefix, as: **مَارْهُا** mārhuā, o men!

§. 17.

III. The Formative.

The Formative or oblique case, though in Sindhī throughout identical with the Instrumentalis, is by itself no case, but represents merely the euphonic change of the final vowel of a noun previous to the accession of any flexional particle or postposition, by means of which

the various cases are made up. The changes, which the final vowel of a noun undergoes before the accession of any adverbial postposition, are on the whole the same as those before any other affix. In Sindhī the postpositions do not coalesce with the noun itself, the language still being conscious of the fact, that it has to deal with original adverbs. We have hinted already, that the Formative is originally the Genitive; it would be rather difficult, to prove this in reference to the Formative of the Singular, but that the Formative of the Plural originally represents the Genitive Plural, is borne out by the Prākṛit and the kindred modern idioms. In Prākṛit the Genitive Plural ends in **आण, ईण, ऊण**, in the Apabhraṇṣa dialect **अहं, इहं, उहं**, thence the Sindhī Formative Plural **ā, ē, or -ne**.

Though the Formative be, in all likelihood, the Genitive of the Prākṛit, the adjectival affix **جو** has been added to it, to turn it into an adjective, the modern idioms once having taken this course to supply the Genitive. From thence it was only a consequent step, to use the ancient Genitive as the base, to which all the other declensional postpositions were added, i. e. the Genitive was turned into the Formative.

1) The Formative of nouns ending in 'u'
(masc. and fem.)

α) Masculine nouns ending in 'u' change final 'u' in the Formative Sing. to 'a', as: **دَاسُ** dāsu, a slave, Form. **دَاسَ** dāsa; **دَاسَ جَو** dāsa jō, **دَاسَ کَہی** dāsa khē etc. If final 'u' be preceded by a short 'a', the insertion of euphonic v becomes necessary, as: **رَوُّ** ra-u, a weed, Form. **رَوَّ** rava; the same is the case, when final 'u' is preceded by a long nasalized ā, as: **تَہَاؤُ** thāu, a dish, Form. **تَہَاوُ** thāva. But if final 'u' be preceded by any other

vowel, the insertion of euphonic *v* is optional, as: **وَاء** vāu, wind, Format. **وَاو** vava or **وَاء** vāa; **دِيَو** dēu, a demon, Format. **دِيَو** dēva or **دِيَو** dēa; when final 'u' however is preceded by short or long 'i', no euphonic insertion is required, as: **دِيَو** dīu, a mound, Format. **دِيَو** dīa; **وِي** vīu, a meadow, Format. **وِي** vīa; **جِي** jīu, life, Format. **جِي** jīa.

The following nouns ending in 'u' retain their final 'u' unaltered in the Formative Singular:

پِي piu, father; Format. **پِي** piu jō etc.

بِهَاء bhāu, brother, Format. **بِهَاء** bhāu khē etc.

but **پِي** pīu, sweetheart, **بِهَاء** bhāu, price, are regular.

The Formative Plural ends either in *ā*, *ē* or -ne, as: Nom. Sing. **پَهْل** phulu, a flower; Nom. Plur. **پَهْل** phula; Format. Plur. **پَهْلَان** phul-ā, **پَهْلِين** phul-ē, or: **پَهْلَان** phula-ne. The Formative in *ā* and *ē* is generally used without a following postposition, and that in -ne more with a following postposition, as being more sonorus; but in poetry the one or other form is used as required by the metre.

Those nouns, which form their Plural irregularly, as: **بِهَاء** bhāu, brother, Nom. Plur. **بِهَائِر** bhāura or: **بِهَائِر** bhāuru; **پِي** piu, father, Nom. Plur. **پِيَر** piura, derive their Formative Plural either from the Nominative Singular or the Nominative Plural, as: **بِهَائِي** bhāune or: **بِهَائِرِن** bhāurane; **پِيْن** piune or, **پِيَرِن** piurane; the contracted form of the Formative (i. e. *ā*, *ē*) is never used with them.

b) Feminine nouns ending in 'u' remain unaltered in the Formative Sing., as: **مَاءَ** māu, mother, Format. **مَاءَ جَوِ** māu jō; in the Formative Plural the long ū of the Nom. Plur. is shortened before the Format. termination -ne, as: **وَجٍ** viju, lightening, Nom. Plur. **وَجُونِ** vījū, Format. Plur. viju-ne.

Those fem. nouns, which have, besides their regular Plural, also an irregular one, derive their Formative Plur. from either form, as: **بَهِينُ** bhēnu, sister, Nom. Plur. **بَهِينُونِ** bhēnū or: **بَهِينَرُ** bhēnarū (**بَهِينَرُونِ** bhēnarū); Format. Plur. **بَهِينِ** bhēnune or: **بَهِينَرُنِ** bhēnarune.

2) The Formative of nouns ending in ō (ō).

Nouns ending in ō change the same in the Formative Sing. to ē, as: **مَتَهُو** mathō, head, Format. **مَتَهِي** mathē. If final ō be preceded by 'a' or ā, a euphonic v may be inserted, as: **دَاوُ** daō, the glare of the sun, Format. **دَايِ** daē or: **دَاوِي** davē; **نَاوُ** nāō, felt, Format. **نَايِ** nāe or: **نَاوِي** nāvē; if ō be preceded by any other vowel, no insertion of euphonic v takes place, as: **دَاوُ** dāō, lamp, Format. **دَايِ** dāē; **چَاوُ** cūō, perfumed oil, Format. **چَايِ** cūē. If a noun end in a nasalized ō (= ō̃), the Anusvāra is retained in the Formative, as; **نَاَنَثُونِ** nāō̃, the ninth, Format. **نَاَنَثِي** nāē̃.

If ō be preceded by y, it is commonly dropped in the Formative, as:

پُورَهيَوُ pōrhyō (or pōrhiō), labour, Form. **پُورَهي** pōrhē.

رُوپَیَوُ rūpayō, rupee, Format. **رُوپَیِ** rūpāē.

The Formative Plural ends either in *ā*, *ē*, the termination of the Nomin. Plural (*ā*) being dropped before them, or in *-ne*, final *ā* of the Nom. Plural being shortened to 'a' before it; as: *كُلْهَو* kulhō, the shoulder, Nom. Plur. *كُلْهَا* kulhā, Form. Plur. *كُلْهَان* kulhā, *كُلْهَيْن* kulhē, or: *كُلْهَيْن* kulhane; *كُوَو* kūō, rat, Nom. Plur. *كُوَا* kūā, Format. Plur. *كُوَان* kūā, *كُوَيْن* kūē, or: *كُوَيْن* kūane.

3) The Formative of nouns ending in *ū* (*ū*).

Nouns ending in *ū* change the same in the Formative Singular to *ua*, as: *وَآهَو* vāghū, crocodile, Format. *وَآهُوا* vāghua. If final *ū* be nasalized (= *ū̃*), the Anusvāra is commonly retained in the Formative, as: *وِجْهُون* vičhū, scorpion, Format. *وِجْهُونَا* vičhūa.

The Formative Plural ends either in *u-ā*, *u-ē*, or *u-ne*, *ua-ne*, long *ū* and *ū̃* being shortened before the terminations of the Formative, as: *رَهَو* rahū, a resident, Nom. plur. *رَهَو* rahū, residents, Format. Plur. *رَهَوَان* rahūā (or: *رَهْتَان*), *رَهْتَيْن* rahuē, *رَهْن* rahune, *رَهْنَيْن* rahuane; *مِرُون* mirū, a wild beast, Nom. Plur. *مِرُون* mirū, wild beast, Format. Plur. *مِرُونَان* miruā, *مِرُونَيْن* miruē, *مِرُون* mirune, *مِرُونَيْن* miruane.

4) The Formative of nouns ending in *ā* (*ā*).

Nouns ending in *ā* remain unaltered in the Formative Sing., as, *آكِيَا* f., *āgyā*, command, Format. *آكِيَا* *āgyā*; *رَاجَا* rājā (m.), king, Format. *رَاجَا* rājā; in the Formative Plur. they end (according to the termination

of the Nomin. Plural: ā-ū) in u-ne, as: أَكْيَاشٍ agyā-
une; also رَجَائِي rājātune, masc.

5) The Formative of nouns ending in 'a'.

Nouns ending in 'a' remain unchanged in the Formative Sing., as: كَامَ kāma, a beam, Format. كَامَ kāma; in the Formative Plur. they terminate (according to their Nom. Plural) either in ā (ē) or u-ne, as: كَامَانِ kāmā, كَامِي kāmē, كَامِي kāmune.

6) The Formative of nouns ending in ī (î).

a) Masc. nouns ending in ī change the same in the Formative Sing. to i-a, as: مَالِي māli, a gardener, Formative مَالِي mālia. Those nouns, which have final ī nasalized (= î), retain the Anusvāra in the Formative, as: پَرِي prī, friend, Format. پَرِي prīa. The Formative Plural ends either in i-ā (yā), i-ē (yē), or in i-ne, ia-ne (yane), iu-ne (yune), as: مَالِيَانِ māliā, مَالِيَانِ māliē; مَالِي māline, مَالِيَانِ māliane (مَالِيَانِ), مَالِيَانِ māliune (مَالِيَانِ).

b) Feminine nouns ending in ī change the same likewise in the Formative Sing. to i-a, as: تَوْبِي tōpī, a hat, Format. تَوْبِي tōpia; the Formative Plural also quite agrees with that of the masc. nouns, as: تَوْبِيَانِ tōpiā, تَوْبِيَانِ tōpiē, تَوْبِيَانِ tōpine, تَوْبِيَانِ tōpiane, تَوْبِيَانِ tōpiune. Such fem. nouns, as have dropped final ī in the Nom. Plural (cf. §. 15, 6), drop the same also in the contracted form of the Formative Plur., as: مَنَجِي manjī, a stool, Nom. Plur. مَنَجُونِ manjū, Format. Plur.

مَنْجَان manjā, مَنْجِين manjē; but: مَنْجِيَانِ manjiane, مَنْجِيُونِ manjiune are also in use. Some other nouns also, in which final ī is not preceded by a palatal, drop 'ī' in the contracted form of the Formative Plural, as: كَوْرِيْنِ kōrē, in scores, from كَوْرِي kōrī, a score.

7) The Formative of nouns ending in 'ī' (e).

Nouns ending in 'ī' (fem. and masc.) remain unaltered in the Format. Sing., as: بَهِتِ bhitī, f., white, a wall, Format. بَهِتِ bhitī; كِبْهَرِ kēhare (m.), a lion, Format. كِبْهَرِ kēhare. In the Formative Plural of fem. nouns the same terminations are employed as with fem. nouns ending in ī, as: بَهِتِيَانِ bhitīā, بَهِتِيَانِ bhitīē, بَهِتِي bhitīne, بَهِتِيَانِ bhitiane, بَهِتِيَانِ bhitiane. In the Formative Plural final 'ī' is frequently dropped altogether, especially in poetry, but only in the contracted form of the Formative, as: بَهِتِي bhitī, in (different) ways, from بَهِتِ bhitī, habit, manner.

The Formative Plural of masc. nouns ends in -ne, the contracted form ā, ē hardly ever being in use with them, as: كِبْهَرِيْنِ kēharine.

جَوَّ jōe, wife, which forms its Plural either regularly جَوِّيُونِ jōyu, or irregularly: جَوِّيَرُ jōiru, جَوَّ جَوَّ جَوَّ jōhiru, has in the Format. Plur. either جَوِّيُونِ jōyune or: جَوَّ جَوَّ جَوَّ jōhirine.

§. 18.

We let now follow, for the sake of perspicuity, a survey of the Sindhī declensional process. As the Genitive affix جَوَّ jō is originally an adjective affix, by

means of which the noun is turned into an adjective, dependent on the governing noun in gender, number and case, we premise the inflexion of **جو**, which, according to its terminations **jō** and **jī**, is inflected after the manner of nouns ending in **ō** and **ī** (fem.). As stated already, **جو** always requires the Formative of a noun, as all postpositions.

SINGULAR.

<i>Masculine.</i>	<i>Feminine.</i>
Nom. جو jō.	جِي jī.
Form. جِي jē.	جِي jē; جِي jia.
Vocat. جَا jā.	جِي jī.

PLURAL.

Nom. جَا jā.	جُون jū; جُون jiū.
Form. جِي jē; جِن jane.	جِي jē; جِن jine; جِن june; (جِن jiane; جِن jiune.)
Vocat. جَا jā.	جُون jū; جُون jiū.

In poëtry the diminutive form **جَرَو** jarō, **جَرِي** jarī is occasionally used instead of **جو**, as:

كَالْهَ قَرِيبِينَ لَدِئْوَ أَجْ تَنْهَن جَرِي وَارَ

Yesterday (thy) relatives have departed (this life);
to-day it is thy turn. Golden Alphabet II, 4.

In the same way as **جو** jō the adjective **سَندَو** sandō (belonging to, own) is very frequently used in poëtry, and inflected regularly, as:

SINGULAR.

<i>Masculine.</i>	<i>Feminine.</i>
Nom. سَندَو sandō.	سَندِي sandī.
Form. سَندِي sandē.	سَندِي sandia.
Vocat. سَندَا sandā.	سَندِي sandī.

PLURAL.

	<i>Masculine.</i>	<i>Feminine.</i>
Nom.	سَندَا sandā.	سَندیون sandiū.
Form.	{ سَندن sandane, { سَندین sandē.	{ سَندین sandine; سَندیَن san- { دیانہ; سَندیُن sandiune.
Vocat.	سَندَا sandā.	سَندیون sandiū.

I. DECLENSION.

Nouns in u (masc. and fem.)

a) Masc. nouns in 'u'.

SINGULAR.

Nom.	دَہُ dēh-u, a country.
Format.	{ دَہُ dēh-a.
Instrum.	
Gen.	دَہُ dēh-a jō etc.
Dative.	دَہُ dēh-a khē.
Accusat.	دَہُ dēh-u (دَہُ dēh).
Locat.	دَہُ dēh-e, or: دَہُ dēha mē etc.
Ablat.	دَہُ dēh-ā; دَہُ dēh-ō; دَہُ dēh-ū.
	دَہُ dēh-aū; دَہُ dēh-āu or: دَہُ dēha khā etc.
Vocat.	دَہُ dēh-a; دَہُ dēh-a.

PLURAL.

Nom.	دَہُ dēh-a, countries.
Format.	{ دَہُ dēh-ā; دَہُ dēh-ē; دَہُ dēha-ne.
Instrum.	
Gen.	دَہُ dēhane jō etc.
Dative.	دَہُ dēhane khē.

Accus.	ذِيَهَن كَهِي dēh-a (ذِيَهَن كَهِي).
Locat.	ذِيَهَن مِين dēhane mē etc. (ذِيَهَن dēh-ē).
Ablat.	ذِيَهَن كَهَان dēhane-khā etc.; ذِيَهَن كَهَان dēhane khā etc.
Vocat.	ذِيَهَو dēh-ō; ذِيَهَا dēh-ā.

An irregular noun.**SINGULAR.**

Nom.	پِي pi-u, father.
Format.	} پِي pi-u.
Instrum.	
Genit.	پِي جَو piu jō etc.
Dative.	پِي كَهِي piu khē.
Accus.	پِي pi-u (پِي كَهِي).
Ablat.	پِي كَهَان piu khā etc.
Vocat.	پِي pi-u.

PLURAL.

Nom.	پِيَر piu-ra, fathers.
Format.	} پِيَر piu-ne; پِيَرَن piura-ne.
Instrum.	
Dative.	پِيَرَن كَهِي piurane khē; پِيَرَن كَهِي piurane khē.
Accus.	پِيَرَن كَهِي piura (پِيَرَن كَهِي).
Ablat.	پِيَرَن كَهَان piurane-khā etc.
Vocat.	پِيَرَن كَهَان piurane khā etc.
Vocat.	پِيَرَو piur-ō.

1) In poetry an additional vowel may be joined to the final ā of the Vocative, for the sake of the metre, as: وَنَاءَ vāṇāu, oh ye trees, instead of وَنَا vāṇā; وَنَاهَا vāṇāha, وَنَاءَا vāṇāa. Sh. Maṣṣūrī, III, 6. 7. 8.

پهري پنهن جي بهان پسان ملڪ ملير جو

Having returned to my own cowpen, may I see the country of Malir. Sh. Um. Mār. I, 13.

وساڻچ مڙ ڏر ڪهي پڻج منده مري

Forget not (thy) husband; o woman (rather) die! Sh. Um. Mār. II, 6.

ڪاري منهن قيام ڏينهن آئون تهان منجهان عاين

May I be of a black face (literally: in a black face) on the day of the resurrection from amongst the sinners. Maj. 731.

پرڏيهان پنڊه ڪري هلي آيو هت

Having made a journey from a foreign country he has come hither. Sh. Sōr. I, 2.

پهتيا پير فقير جا سيرون تهئا سي

Wounded were those feet of the poor woman from the journey (سير). Sh. Ābirī VI, 6.

ڏڙڏ ديوانو دهايو چريو لاه چتاء

The thief, the mad man, the stranger, the fool take out of thy mind. Maj. 291.

آءُ اوراهون سڀرين پري وڻج مڙ پيئي

Come near, o sweetheart, do not go away, my friend! Sh. Ābirī X, 3.

سڏه سنڌي سڃاين جي ڪو ڏيڻ اينئي

If one give me thus intelligence of my friends. Maj. 733.

دوس دوسنيان ڏور ڪري تهو ڏيا ڏيڪهاري

Having separated the friends from the friends he shows compassion. Sh. Sōr. I, Epil.

أَتَهَيُّوْا دِيَجَا مَ وَهَوْ وَنَجُوْا دَرَبَ كَهَنِي

Stand up, ye physicians, do not sit down, go off with your medicines! Sh. Jam. Kal. I, Epil.

b) Feminine nouns in 'u'.

SINGULAR.

Nom.	وِجْ vij-u, lightening.
Format.	وِجْ vij-u.
Instrum.	
Genit.	وِجْ جُو vijū jō etc.
Dative.	وِجْ كَهِي vijū khē.
Accus.	وِجْ كَهِي vij-u (وِجْ كَهِي).
Ablat.	وِجْ كَهَان vijū khā etc.
Vocat.	وِجْ vij-u.

PLURAL.

Nom.	وِجُون vij-ū.
Format.	وِجُون vijū-ne.
Instrum.	
Genit.	وِجُون جُو vijune jō etc.
Dative.	وِجُون كَهِي vijune khē.
Accus.	وِجُون كَهِي vij-ū (وِجُون كَهِي).
Ablat.	وِجُون كَهَان vijū-ne-ā etc.; وِجُون كَهَان vijune khā etc.
Vocat.	وِجُون vij-ū.

An irregular noun.

SINGULAR.

Nom.	مَاء mā-u, mother.
Format.	مَاء mā-u.
Vocat.	مَاء mā-u.

PLURAL.

Nom. مَائُونِ mā-ū; مَائِرُ mā-i-ru; مَائِرُونِ mā-i-rū,
mothers.

Format. مَائِنِ māu-ne; مَائِرِنِ māiru-ne.

Vocat. مَائُونِ mā-ū, مَائِرُ mā-i-ru.

لَنُؤْنَ سِينِ اُنْهِي لَدِ كِي ذَ رَسَانِي كِيچَ كهي

Having risen with love depart; nothing (else) will bring thee to Kēc. Sh. Ma;ḍ. II, 10.

پَرِينِ وَنْجَ مَ پَرِئْ يَهْزِي مَوْتِي چيسِ ماءَ

O friend, do not go to a foreign country, said to him again his mother. Maj. 83.

هَوْتُ هَلَنْدِينِ كَهْتَتُو اَنكُهِنِ چَاژهي اَنكَ

The sweetheart has been won by those, who set off, placing rent upon rents (i. e. in their clothes). Sh. Ābirī, VII, 7.

بِهِينَرِ اَنُونِ بهُزِي مُونِ سَنَكِ سُنْجَانِي ذَ كِئُو

O sisters, I am simple-minded; by me unknowingly a marriage has been contracted. Sh. Ābirī V, 16.

II. DECLENSION.

Nouns in ō (ō).

SINGULAR.

Nom. مِيرَاكُو mērāk-ō, crowd.

Format. }
Instrum. } مِيرَاكِي mērāk-ē.

Genit. مِيرَاكِي جُو mērāk-ē jō etc.

Dative. مِيرَاكِي كهي mērākē khē.

Accus. مِيرَاكِي كهي (مِيرَاكُو) mērāk-ō.

Ablat. مِيزَاڪَن mērāk-ā etc.; مِيزَاڪِي کِهَان mērākē khā.

Vocat. مِيزَاڪَا mērāk-ā.

PLURAL.

Nom. مِيزَاڪَا mērāk-ā, crowds.

Format. }
Instrum. } مِيزَاڪَان mērāk-ā; مِيزَاڪِيَن mērāk-ē; مِيزَاڪِيَن mē-rāka-ne.

Genit. مِيزَاڪَن جُو mērākane jō.

Dative. مِيزَاڪَن کِهِي mērākane khē.

Accus. مِيزَاڪَا (مِيزَاڪَن کِهِي) mērāk-ā.

Ablat. مِيزَاڪَن کِهَان mērākane-ā etc.; مِيزَاڪَن کِهَان mērākane khā etc.

Vocat. مِيزَاڪَا mērāk-ā; مِيزَاڪُو mērāk-au; مِيزَاڪُو mērāk-ō.

تِهَانُو بَهَرِي مَچَ مُوَتَمِين بَهَاگِي ڏَنَانِشِين

Having filled the dish with many pearls she gave it to the lucky one (بَهَاگِيُو). Māj. 714.

هَاتِهِي جِي هِينُو وَهِي تَه بَه كَهَنُو مُلُهَ كَهُوَزَان

The elephant, though he walk slowly, is yet of greater price than a horse. Sh. Shīha Kēd. I, 2.

اُنَهِي دِيَوَانَا دُورِ تَهِيئَ هَانِي هِتَ مَ وَيَه

Get up, o mad one! be off! do not sit now here! Maj. 249.

سِرَه سَنَوَان لَاجُو نَنَوَان مُهَانَا سَنَدَن مِيرَ

The sails are straight, the ropes are new, their chiefs are the Muhānōs (fishermen). Sh. Sur. I, 12.

كُتِّهَلِ كَجَاوَنِ مِينِ جَاڑِهِي هَوَتَ هَلَايُو

Having lifted the killed one (fem.) into the paniers (كَجَاوَنِ), the friend has driven off. Sh. Ābirī X, Epil.

كُلَّهِنَّانِ كَوْرِيْنِ عَاشِقَ عَبْدُ الْطِيفِ چَرِي

The lovers scoop out (their head) from the shoulders, says Abd-ul-Latīf. Sh. Kal. I, 7:

تَرِي تَنْ پَنَاسِ پَاسِنُونِ پَانِي وَهِي

In the bottom she (i. e. the boat) has got holes; from the sides water flows in. Sh. Sūr. III, 6.

III. DECLENSION.

Nouns in ū (ū).

SINGULAR.

Nom. رَهَاكُو rahāk-ū, an inhabitant.

Format. رَهَاكُو rahāk-ua.

Instrum. رَهَاكُو rahāk-ua.

Ablat. رَهَاكُو rahāk-ā; رَهَاكُو كِهَانِ rahākua khā etc.

Vocat. رَهَاكُو rahāk-ū.

PLURAL.

Nom. رَهَاكُو rahāk-u, inhabitants.

Format. رَهَاكُو rahāk-ā; رَهَاكُو rahāk-ē;

Instrum. رَهَاكُو rahāk-ā; رَهَاكُو rahāk-ē;

رَهَاكُو rahākua-ne or: رَهَاكُو rahāk-ū-ne.

Ablat. رَهَاكُو rahāk-ā etc.; رَهَاكُو كِهَانِ rahākune khā etc.

Vocat. رَهَاكُو rahāk-ū; رَهَاكُو rahāk-ā.

دَارُو جَا دَانَا دِنَمِ هَوَتَ هَتَهِنِ سَانِ

Grains of medicine have been given by me to the sweetheart with (my) hands. Sh. Kōhiārī IV, 9.

بَهْجَاجِمْ پُنَهَنِيْ كَهِي هِيْ پِيَادِرِي پَانْدِهِي

Cause to come to Punhū this foot-traveller (fem.).
Sh. Kōh. IV, Epil.

دَهَوْلِيَا مَارُو مُون سِيْن پَرَجِي شَال پَنُوَهَارَ

O darling Mārū, would that the Paūhārs would be reconciled with me! Sh. Um. Mār. I, Epil.

سَجِي جِيهِي سُون مُنِه نَه پِيئي مَارَهْثِيْن

Truth like gold has not fallen into the mouth of of the people. Sh. Jam. Kal. VIII, 7.

مِرْتَان مَوْرَان پَكَهَنَان وَايِي پِي مَهْهُدُ

By wild beasts, by ants, by birds, by (any) other speech be not misled. Sh. Kal. I, 16.

مِيْنْدَهَا دَهْثِي نَه مَارُئي مَحَلِيْن مَارْتَان دَهَارَ

Mārui does not wash the braids in the palaces, away from the Mārūs. Sh. Um. Mār. III, 5.

جِي مَكْنِي مَكَارُو نَه دِنُو تِي پُر كِيُون پَارِيُون

By those cows, by which not a drop was given, the pots have been filled. Haz. Sār. V, 47.

مَتَان رَهو مَارَهْثَا نَنَكَر جِي آدَهَارَ

Do not remain, o people under the protection of Nangar (i. e. Taṭṭha)! Verses of the Māmūis.

Note. It is a poetical license, if a noun is not inflected in the Formative for the sake of the rhyme, as:

اُوچو تُون آكَاس تِي آن بهُونُو مَتَهِي بَهُون

High above the sky art thou, I am a wanderer upon earth (بَهُون instead of بَهْنِي). Sh. Sōr. I, 3.

IV. DECLENSION.

Nouns in ā (ā).

a) feminine.

SINGULAR.

Nom.	هَچَا hač-ā, murder.
Format.	} هَچَا hač-ā.
Instrum.	
Ablat.	(هَچَان hač-ā); هَچَا کِهَان hačā khā etc.
Vocat.	هَچَا hač-ā.

PLURAL.

Nom.	هَچَاڻُون hačā-ū, murders.
Format.	} هَچَاڻُون hačāu-ne.
Instrum.	
Ablat.	هَچَاڻُونِ hačāune-ā.
Vocat.	هَچَاڻُون hačā-ū.

b) masculine.

SINGULAR.

Nom.	رَاڄَا rāj-ā (رَاڄَا rājā), a king.
Format.	} رَاڄَا rāj-ā.
Instrum.	
Ablat.	رَاڄَا کِهَان rājā khā etc.
Vocat.	رَاڄَا rāj-ā.

PLURAL.

Nom.	رَاڄَا rāj-ā, kings.
Format.	} رَاڄَاڻِي rājāu-ne.
Instrum.	
Ablat.	رَاڄَاڻِي rājāune-ā; رَاڄَاڻِي کِهَان rājāune khā etc.
Vocat.	رَاڄَاڻُو rājā-ō.

كَانْهِي وَاتَّ جِيجَا تِي جَتْنِ سَانَ

There is no way with those Jats, o aunt! Sh.
Hus. VI, Epil.

سَو تَان تَوْتِي سَانُ جَنْهِن لِي جَفَاثُون كَرِين

That one is with thyself, on whose account thou
causest thyself troubles. Sh. Ābirī III, 5.

V. DECLENSION.

Nouns in ā.

SINGULAR.

Nom. سَدَه sadh-a, wish.

Format. }
Instrum. } سَدَه sadh-a.

Ablat. سَدَهَانَ sadh-ā; سَدَهَ كَهَانَ sadha khā etc.

Vocat. سَدَه sadh-a.

PLURAL.

Nom. سَدَهَانَ sadh-ā; سَدَهُون sadh-ū, wishes.

Format. }
Instrum. } سَدَهَانَ sadh-ā; سَدَهِين sadh-ē; سَدَهْنِ sadhu-ne.

Ablat. سَدَهْنِ سَدَهُون sadhune-ā; سَدَهْنِ كَهَانَ sadhune khā etc.

Vocat. سَدَهَانَ sadh-ā; سَدَهُون sadh-ū.

سَاهَرُ جِي صَلَاحَ بَارِ لَنَكَهَايسِ بَا جَه سَانَ

By the counsel of Sāharu (the buffalo-keeper) I have
been made to pass the whirlpool with the mercy (of God).
Sh. Suh. II, 2.

وَحَدَاتَانِ كَثَرَتْ تَهِي كَثَرَتْ وَحَدَتْ كُدْ

From the unity multiplicity has sprung; multiplicity
is all unity. Sh. Kal. I, 15.

وَهْ مَهْ مُنْدَه بَهْنَبَهَرِ مِين هَنْ پُجَنْدِئَن هَانَ

Sit not, o lady! in Bhambhōru, thou wilt now come
up to him. Sh. Hus. VIII, 3.

لُكْهُونَ لَكِن كُوسِيُون ڌَاڌَهَا تَپِي ڌِيْنَهَ

Hot winds blow, oppressively hot are the days.
Sh. Dēśī III, Epil.

اَکَرِ اَوْطَاقِن مِیْن کَہتھو رِیُون کَہتھن

In the men's sitting rooms is aloe-wood, on the couches musk. Sh. Mūm. Rānō II, 3.

VI. DECLENSION.

Nouns in ī (ĩ).

a) Masculine nouns.

SINGULAR.

Nom. سَانِي sān-ī, companion.

Format. }
Instrum. } سَانِي sān-ia.

Ablat. سَانِيَّ سَانِيَّ sāni-ā; سَانِيَّ كِهَان sāniā khā etc.

Vocat. سَانِيَه sāni-ah) سَانِي sān-i).

PLURAL.

Nom. سَانِي sān-ī, companions.

Format. }
Instrum. } سَائِنَان sāni-ā (سَائِيَان sāniy-ā); سَائِيَيْن sāni-ē;

سَايَا سَايَا-ne (سَايَا سَايَا-ne); سَايَا سَايَا-ne
(سَايَا سَايَا-ne); سَايَا سَايَا-ne.

Ablat. سَانِيَانِ sānyane-ā etc.

Vocat. سَانِيَا sāni-ā; سَانِيُو sāni-ō.

پیرین ہیٿہ پرئی جي آنئون وڇھایان وارَ

Under the feet of (my) friend I spread out my hair. Maj. 231.

تَذْهِنَ قَاصِيَّ جَيُّو قَيْسَ كَهِي مَنَان لَاهِين مَرْمُ

Then said the Qāzī to Qaisu: dropp bashfulness from (thy) mind. Maj. 183.

كَنَا نَارِنِ حَامِيَه هَانِ يَجَائِمِ هِيئِ

From the women, o protector! deliver now this man. Sh. Sōr. I, 9.

پیرین آئون نَد پُجِنِي ڌِيَه پريان جو ڏور

On (my) feet I cannot arrive; the country of (my) friends is far off. Sh. Khambh. I, Epil.

کامُون ڦههجاھ کهنئون کهرجنو اوڻها

Cut off wands, many are necessary for you, o ye camelmen! Sh. Ābirī XI, 7.

حَالِ مُنْهَن جو ههڙو ڀسو ته پرياه

My condition is such, as ye see, o friends! Maj. 441.

b) Feminine nouns.

SINGULAR.

Nom. کُولِي gōl-ī, a slave-girl.

Format. }

Instrum. کُولِي gōl-ia.

Ablat. کُولِيَان gōli-ā; کُولِي کَهاَن gōlia khā.

Vocat. کُولِي gōl-ī.

PLURAL.

Nom. کُولِيُون gōliy-ū (کُولِيُون gōli-ū; کُولِيُون gōly-ū).

Format. }

Instrum. کُولِيَان gōli-ā; کُولِيُون gōli-ē; کُولِي گُولِيَان gōlia-ne (gō-

lya-ne); گُولِيُون gōliu-ne; گُولِي gōli-ne.

Ablat. گُولِيَانِيَان gōliane-ā etc.

Vocat. گُولِيُون gōli-ū.



تَذِيْهِنَ بَايِّيَ چِيُوَ بَانَهِيَّ كَهِي تَهْ اَتَهِي اُنْه پَلَانِ

Then said the lady to her slave-girl: having risen saddle the camel! Maj. 738.

دُكْهِي دُكْهْ وَسَارِ سِيْمَ پَهْتِي كِرِ سَسْئِي

O afflicted one, forget (thy) grief; break in pieces (thy) bed, o Sacuī! Sh. Maṣḍ. VI, 6.

كُوْذِيُونِ كُوْلَارِيْنِ جُونِ چِيْتِي سَانِ چُنْدِيْنْدِي

The kernels of the golārōs (*coccinea indica*) will I pick with a snap of the fingers. Sh. Um. Mār. II, Epil.

بُكِي دِيْنْدَا بَاچَه جِي دِهَارِي نَارُونِ

They (i. e. the physicians) give a pill of mercy, having seen the pulses (نَارِي). Sh. Jam. Kal. II, 18.

رَانِي وَرِي رُوَه كُونْدَر لَتَهَا كُوْلِيْنِ

To the queens pleasure has returned; the griefs of the slave-girls have been taken off. Sh. Dēsī, Chōṭ. 3.

سَرْتِيُونِ سَاهُ سَنْدُوْمِ تَهْتُو حَوَالِي هُوْت جِي

O companions, my soul has been confided to the protection of my sweetheart. Sh. Dēsī VII, 11.

VII. DECLENSION.

Nouns ending in ǝ (i).

SINGULAR.

Nom. گَالِه gāl̄h-e, story (fem.).

Format. }
Instrum. } گَالِه gāl̄h-e.

Ablat. گَالِهَن گāl̄he-ā; گَالِهُون gāl̄h-ō etc.

Vocat. گَالِه gāl̄h-e.

PLURAL.

Nom.	گالھئون <i>gālhe-ū</i> , stories.
Format.	گالھئون <i>gālhe-ā</i> ; گالھئین <i>gālhi-ē</i> ; گالھئین <i>gāl-</i>
Instrum.	
	hea-ne; گالھئین <i>gālheu-ne</i> ; گالھئین <i>gālhi-ne</i> .
Ablat.	گالھئین <i>gālhine-ā</i> etc.
Vocat.	گالھئون <i>gālhe-ū</i> .

میان مون کھی میہت جی کو ڈیکھاری واٹ

O friend, may some one show me the way to the mosque! Maj. 131.

گاکان ونج مہ کیڈھین رانا تو نہ رھاء

From Kāke do not go anywhere! it is not right for thee, o Rānō! Sh. Mūm. Rān. I, Epil.

تان منج محمد کارنی یرتون منجھان نینھ

Acknowledge then Muhammad, the intercessor, out of thought and love (نرت). Sh. Kal. I, 2.

آیل ان نہ رسھان ہنجھون جی ہارین

آئو آب اکھن مین تہا ڈھ کھی ڈیکھارین

O mother, I do not trust them, who shed tears, Having brought water into their eyes they show a sandhill. Sh. Jam. Kal. I, 20.

مینھون پان مرادیون تھدھا چرن تھر

ساری آچٹو سامھیون ڈنن کھیر بھر

The self-willed buffaloes graze the cool deserts, Having come in front of the cow-house they give fresh milk. Sh. Sār. IV, 14.

دِيڪِين دَوِگَ ڪَڙهَن جِتَ ڪُنِين ڪَنڪُو نَ لَهِي

In the caldrons the limbs boil, where in the eddies a grain does not sink. Sh. Kal. II, 27.

جِلْدَ سُونَهَارَا سَبُهِيَن پَرِيَن بِنَا مُصَحَفَا مَوچارَا

Volumes beautiful in all ways, and other elegant books. Maj. 141.

مَتِيُون مَوٿَن سَنديُون ڪا ڪِيُون ڪي نَ ڏِئوم

O sisters, give me by no means counsels to return! Sh. Dēsi VII, 6.

b) Masculine nouns.

SINGULAR.

Nom. ڪِيَهَرِ kēhar-e, lion.

Format. }
Instrum. } ڪِيَهَرِ kēhar-e.

Ablat. ڪِيَهَرَئان kēhare-ā etc.

Vocat. ڪِيَهَرِ kēhar-e.

PLURAL.

Nom. ڪِيَهَرِ kēhar-e, lions.

Format. }
Instrum. } ڪِيَهَرَئان kēhare-ā; ڪِيَهَرَئِين kēhari-ē; ڪِيَهَرِن kē-hari-ne.

Ablat. ڪِيَهَرَئان kēharine-ā etc.

Vocat. ڪِيَهَرَئو kēhare-ō.

اِيئِي ڪِيَسَرِ جِي ڪَارِ جِنِي هَاتِي ڪهي هَنهُ هَنِي

This in the business of the lion, that he strikes his hand into the elephant. Sh. Šīha Kēd. 7.

Chapter IX.

Adjectives.

§. 19.

The Sindhī adjectives and participles have the same terminations as the substantives and may therefore be classed under the same heads as the substantives.

The general rule, that the adjective must agree with its substantive in gender, number and case, holds good in Sindhī likewise.

In reference to the gender no exception takes place; but if an adjective or participle be referred to two preceding substantives, the one of which is masculine, the other feminine, the adjective or participle follows in the Plural masculine, as:

نَرُ ۛ مَادِي سِرْجِيَا اَنَهَسِ

He created them male and female. Gen. I, 27.

With regard to the number the following exception takes place. When an adjective precedes a noun in the inflected case of the Plural, it may remain in the inflected case of the Singular, as:

کُوژَن نَبِيْن کَهي to false prophets, or: کُوژَن نَبِيْن کَهي

The same is the case, when an adjective precedes a noun in the Vocative Plural, the adjective being then commonly put in the Vocative Singular, as:

اي سِنْدِيَهَا مَاژَهَا ۛ Sindhī men! instead of: اي سِنْدِيَهِي مَاژَهَا

But it does not fall under this head, when an adjective or participle is referred to a preceding substantive followed by the postposition کَهي khē; for in this case there exists no grāmmatical connexion between the adjective and substantive, but the adjective is used absolutely as:

أُنْهَنِ بِنَهِي بَهَائِنِ كَهِي سَبُنْدَر مِين جَارُ وَجَهَنْدُو دِتْهَانِثِينِ

He saw those two brothers throwing their net into the sea. Matth. IV, 18.

دُونْگَرَنِ كَهِي اُونْچُو بَهَائِنِ

I thought the hills high.

As to the case it may be observed, that adjectives, which end in ī and ū may remain uninflected, when immediately followed by a substantive in the Formative, as:

مَه سِج پَنْدَهَرُو دِيرُو مَارَهْنِ سَاتَه مِين

Do not make a journey in the caravan of vindictive men!

بِنَهِي كَهِي بَهُون پَرِين دِپْجَارَنِ وَرُوهُ

To both the helpless there was in many ways pleasant conversation. Maj. 198.

An adjective, following a substantive, may be put in the Ablative case, whereas the preceding substantive is only put in the Formative, as:

جُو دِيَه دَاڈَانَان آئِيُو دِنْمِ تَنْهِنِ طَعْنُو

He who has come from the grand-father's country, has given me a reproach. Sh. Um. Mār. II, 2.

When an adjective precedes or follows a noun in the contracted form of the Formative Plural, it assumes the same form, as:

بُجْهَرِين مَارَهْنِين كَهِي جَهْدِي هَلْ

Wicked men forsake.

كَهَوْرِيَانِ كَهْنِينِ¹ بَهَيْثِينِ سَنْدِي بَاجَه بَيْنِ

I seek in many ways the mercy of others. Sh. Jam. Kal. V, Epil. I.

1) كَهْنِينِ is contracted instead of كَهْنِينِ.

کاندین تاندين ٻاٻرين ڇڻان مَرُ پيئي

By the burning coals of the thorn and babul tree
I am indeed roasted! Sh. Jam. Kal. III, 3.

Adjectives precede, as a rule, their substantives, as:

ماڙهون پنهن جي ننڍهي اکي سان جڳتڙ تهو ڏسي

Man sees with his small eye the world.

ڇنگو سرهو سگندو ٻورُ منجهس پئو آهي

Good, fragrant, sweet-smelling food was contained
therein.

An adjective may also follow its substantive, especially when the adjective contains more syllables than its substantive, as:

تارا منڏه جي ڏينھ ڪهان انجا تائين پنهن جن سنڌهن

تههين ڪهان پهريو نه ڪري پوري پهري مين آهن

The stars from the day of beginning are, without
having deviated from their fixed intervals, in full turning.

Two and more adjectives very frequently follow their substantive as:

دوس مٿها دلدار عالم سبه آباد ڪرين

O sweet and charming friend, make the whole earth
blooming! Sh. Sār. IV, 12.

خداءَ ڄاڻو ڏاهي اهڙا بهيد پنهن جي ڪلام منجه

وڃوريآ آهن

By the knowing and wise God such secrets have
been explained in his word.

To adjectives, as well as to substantives, very frequently an emphatic *ī* accedes in all cases, signifying 'very', 'quite', 'truly', without altering in any way the termination of the adjective (the feminine Singular of adjectives ending in *ō* alone being excepted; see §. 20, 2), as: *اَوچِتوئي* *ōcitōī*, quite accidental; *غارِيبِي* *yarībēī* (Sing. fem.) very humble.

اَكِثِينِي پَندهَ جو سَاتِهِي گر سَانَبَاهُ

O companion, make preparation of the very instant journey! Golden Alph. I, 1.

§. 20.

Formation of gender.

With reference to the derivation of the feminine from masculine nouns the general rules, which have been laid down in Chapter VII, §. 14, are equally applicable to adjectives. Some minor points, in which adjectives differ in this respect from substantives of the same termination, will be noticed under the following heads.

1) Adjectives ending in 'u'.

These change the masc. termination 'u' either to 'e' (i) or to 'a', as:

نِدھَرُ *nidharu*, helpless, fem. *نِدھَرِي* *nidhare* or: *نِدھَارَا* *nidhara*.

اَدھَر نِدھَر اَبھَرِي اَسُونھِين اَنھِيَان

Forlorn, helpless, wretched, unacquainted I am!
Sh. *Ābiri* VIII, 1.

Some adjectives of Sindhī origin, but more so those borrowed from the Arabic or Persian, remain without any change of gender, number and case, as: *سَرَسُ* *sarsu*,

plentiful (s.); گَدُ gaḍu, mixed (s.); سَهْمُ sahiḡu, easy (s.); عَبَثُ abaṡu, vain (a.); تَمَامُ tamāmu, whole (a.); خُبُ ḡubu, good (p.); دُرُسُ dursu, right (corrupted from دُرُسْتُ (p.)); مَاتُ mātu, done for (p.); پَشِيمَانُ pašimānu, ashamed (p.); حَيْرَانُ ḡairānu, bewildered (a.); هَلَكَ halāku, killed (a.); صَافُ sāfu, clean (a.); مَعْلَمُ maʕlimu, known (corrupted from مَعْلُومُ (a.)), etc. etc.

مَرَنَان اِگي جي مُئا سي مري تهنن نہ مَات

Those who have died before dying, they are not done for when dead. Sh. Maṡḡūrī IV, 7.

جو ويڃن جي واتِ دارو تهنن دُرُسُ ڪيا

By the medicine, which is in the mouth of the physicians, they have been made whole. Sh. Jam. Kal. II, 17.

وڙڙڙو جن ورنِ سين پُونديون تَتِ پَشِيمَانُ

Those who have looked about with men, will there be put to shame. Maj. 266.

2) Adjectives ending in ō (ō).

These change the masc. termination to ī (ī); as: کُورُ kūrō, false, fem. کُورِي kūrī; نئون nāō, new, fem. نائي nāl.

When an adjective or participle ends in yō (or iō), being preceded by a consonant, the y (i) is dropped before the fem. termination ī, as: ڏکيو ڏukhyō or: ڏکھيو ڏukhiō, pained, fem. ڏکھي ڏukhī; ڪيو kiō, done, fem. ڪي ki; but پيو piō, fallen (Part. perf. from پُونُ) makes its feminine پيئي pēī, not pī. When yō however is preceded by a vowel, the feminine is formed regularly

in yī, as: چَيَوُ čayō, said (Part. perf. from چَوْنُ), fem. چَيِي čayī; کَيَوُ kayō, made (another form of the part. perf. of کَرْنُ), fem. کَيِي kayī; آيو ayō, come (part. perf. from اچْنُ), fem. آيِي āyī; but the y may just as well be dropped in such like forms, as: čaī, kaī, āī etc.

When the emphatic ī accedes to the feminine Singular, then the masc. termination ō is changed to yāī in the Nominative, as: مُنُو munō, blunt, with the emphatic ī in the feminine: مُنِيَايِي muniyāī; but the other cases of the feminine are quite regular, and hardly ever found with an emphatic ī.

پَسُو لَچَ لَطِيفُ چَڻِي کِيڏِي کهي ککهن

Look, says Latif, what credit (is given) to pieces of straw! Sh. Suh. VIII, 1.

جي پسي منهُ مِهَارَ تَ سِکھِيَايِي سَڄِي تَهِي

If she sees the face of the buffalo-keeper, she becomes quickly well. Sh. Suh. Čhōt. 5.

3) Adjectives ending in ū (ū).

These do not change their termination in the feminine, as: سَهُ sahū, masc. and fem., patient; وِڙهُ vērū, masc. and fem., quarrelsome.

4) Adjectives ending in ā (ā).

These are comparatively few in number and admit of no change of gender, as: ڏَاڻَا ḍātā, masc. and fem., liberal; تَالَان tālā, masc. and fem., worried. The greater number of them is indeclinable, as: صَفَا safā, pure (a.); فَنَا fanā, extinct (a.); پَهَان phā, tired; جُڏَا juḍā, separate (p.).

5) Adjectives ending in ă.

They admit of no change of gender and are all indeclinable¹⁾, as: وَدھیک vadhika, excessive; سُنْج suṇja, empty, barren; دھَار dhāra, separate, or compounded: دھَارودھَار dhārōdhāra; جَال jāla or جَار jāra, much; جَام jāma, much.

جِيٽِي سَبھڪنھن جِيٽِي سِين دَرَسَن دھَارودھَار

(His i. e. God's) life is with the life of every one; but the aspect is quite different. Sh. Kal. I, 24.

سِرَ جُدا دھَر دھَار دَوَک جَنھين جَا دِيک مِين

Whose heads (are) asunder, the trunks separated, the limbs in the caldron. Sh. Kal. II, 24.

6) Adjectives ending in ī (ī).

These remain unchanged in the feminine, as: بَارِي bārī, carrying a burden, masc. and fem.; سَوَادِي sa-vādī, savoury, masc. and fem.; some are only used in the feminine.

7) Adjectives ending in e (i).

They do not differ in the feminine, like those ending in ī; as: چَوَرَس čaurase, masc. and fem., square. Most of them are indeclinable, chiefly those of foreign origin, e. g.: سُدھ sudhe, pure; دَدھ dadhe, wrong; مُکھ mukhe,

1) Stack exhibits in his Sindhi Grammar the paradigm سَکھَر sakhara and inflects it in the Formative Plural; but in his Dictionary he gives سَکھَرُ sakharu, which is the proper termination. I have never met with an adjective ending in 'a', inflected in any way, for the cardinal numbers پَنج panja five etc. can hardly be classed under this head.

supreme; خوش *xuše* (p.), pleasant (generally pronounced short and partly also written خوش); شاد *šāde* (p.), joyful; برآبر *barābare* (p.), abreast, right; بجاء *bajāe* (p.), performed.

The feminine affixes *nī*, *ne*, *ānī* (*yānī*), *āine* (*yāine*) are occasionally used with adjectives ending in *u*, *ō*, *ū*, *ī*, if some inherent quality, habit or occupation of living beings is to be marked out (the details see Chapter VII, §. 14), as: غریبِ چھوگر *yarī-bine čhōkare*, a girl (habitually) humble; سادھنی رن *sādhunī rana*, a (thoroughly) virtuous widow; هوڈیانی ڈاچی *hōḍiyānī ḍācī*, an obstinate (female) camel.

We subjoin here a survey of the inflexion of adjectives.

1) Adjectives ending in 'u'.

SINGULAR.

	<i>Masculine.</i>	<i>Feminine.</i>
Nom.	اُچیت <i>ačētu</i> , thoughtless.	اُچیت <i>ačēta</i> ; اُچیت <i>ačēte</i> .
Format.	اُچیت <i>ačēta</i> .	اُچیت <i>ačēta</i> ; اُچیت <i>ačēte</i> .
Vocat.	اُچیت <i>ačēta</i> .	اُچیت <i>ačēta</i> ; اُچیت <i>ačēte</i> .

PLURAL.

Nom.	اُچیت <i>ačēta</i> .	اُچیتوں; <i>ačētū</i> ;	اُچیتوں; <i>ačētiū</i> .
Format.	<div style="display: inline-block; vertical-align: middle;"> { اُچیتیں <i>ačētē</i>, etc. اُچیتان <i>ačētane</i>. </div>	<div style="display: inline-block; vertical-align: middle;"> { اُچیتوں; <i>ačētune</i>; etc. </div>	<div style="display: inline-block; vertical-align: middle;"> { اُچیتیں; <i>ačētine</i>. etc. </div>
Vocat.	اُچیتو <i>ačētō</i> .	اُچیتوں; <i>ačētū</i> ;	اُچیتوں; <i>ačētiū</i> .

2) Adjectives ending in ō.

SINGULAR.

*Masculine.**Feminine.*

Nom.	رُكْهُو rukhō, dry.	رُكْهِي rukhī.
Format.	رُكْهِي rukhē.	رُكْهِي rukhia.
Vocat.	رُكْهَا rukhā.	رُكْهِي rukhī.

PLURAL.

Nom.	رُكْهَا rukhā.	رُكْهِيُون rukhiyū (rukhiū).
Format.	{ رُكْهِيُون rukhē etc. رُكْهَان rukhane.	رُكْهِيُون rukhine etc.
Vocat.	رُكْهَا rukhā; رُكْهُو rukha-u; رُكْهُو rukhō.	رُكْهِيُون rukhiyū.

SINGULAR.

Nom.	أَكْبَنُ agiō, prior.	أَكْبِي agī.
Format.	أَكْبِي agiē.	أَكْبِي agīa.
Vocat.	أَكْبَان agiā.	أَكْبِي agī.

PLURAL.

Nom.	أَكْبَان agiā.	أَكْبِيُون agiyū (agiū).
Format.	{ أَكْبِيُون agiē etc. أَكْبِيَان agiane.	أَكْبِيُون agine etc.
Vocat.	أَكْبَان agiā; أَكْبِيُون agīau; أَكْبِيُون agiō.	أَكْبِيُون agiyū (agiū).

3) Adjectives ending in ū.

SINGULAR.

	<i>Masculine.</i>	<i>Feminine.</i>
Nom.	سَهُو sahū, patient.	سَهُو sahū.
Format.	سَهُو sahua.	سَهُو sahua.
Vocat.	سَهُو sahū.	سَهُو sahū.

PLURAL.

Nom.	سَهُو sahū.	سَهُو sahū.
Format.	سَهُوِين sahuē etc.	سَهُوِين sahuē etc.
	سَهُوِن sahuane.	سَهُوِن sahuane.
	سَهُوِ sahune.	سَهُوِ sahune.
Vocat.	سَهُوُ sahuō.	سَهُوُ sahuō.
	سَهُوَا sahuā.	سَهُوَا sahuā.

4) Adjectives ending in ā.

SINGULAR.

Nom.	دَاتَا dātā, liberal.	دَاتَا dātā.
Format.	دَاتَا dātā.	دَاتَا dātā.
Vocat.	دَاتَا dātā.	دَاتَا dātā.

PLURAL.

Nom.	دَاتَا dātā.	دَاتَاتُون dātāū.
Format.	دَاتَاتُون dātāune.	دَاتَاتُون dātāune.
Vocat.	دَاتَاتُو dātāō.	دَاتَاتُون dātāū.

5) Adjectives ending in ī.

SINGULAR.

*Masculine.**Feminine.*

Nom.	دُكْهِی dūkhī, afflicted.	دُكْهِی dūkhī.
Format.	دُكْهِی dūkhia.	دُكْهِی dūkhia.
Vocat.	دُكْهِی dūkhī.	دُكْهِی dūkhī.

PLURAL.

Nom.	دُكْهِی dūkhī.	دُكْهِی dūkhiyū (dūkhiū).
Format.	دُكْهِی dūkhiē etc.	دُكْهِی dūkhiē etc.
	دُكْهِی dūkhine etc.	دُكْهِی dūkhine etc.
Vocat.	دُكْهِی dūkhiā.	دُكْهِی dūkhiyū.
	دُكْهِی dūkhiō.	

6) Adjectives ending in e (i).

SINGULAR.

Nom.	هِكَمُطْهِ hikamuṭhe, unanimous.	هِكَمُطْهِ hikamuṭhe.
Format.	هِكَمُطْهِ hikamuṭhe.	هِكَمُطْهِ hikamuṭhe.
Vocat.	هِكَمُطْهِ hikamuṭhe.	هِكَمُطْهِ hikamuṭhe.

PLURAL.

Nom.	هِكَمُطْهِ hikamuṭhe.	هِكَمُطْهِ hikamuṭhiū.
Format.	هِكَمُطْهِ hikamuṭhiē etc.	هِكَمُطْهِ hikamuṭhiē etc.
	هِكَمُطْهِ hikamuṭhine etc.	هِكَمُطْهِ hikamuṭhine etc.
Vocat.	هِكَمُطْهِ hikamuṭhiō.	هِكَمُطْهِ hikamuṭhiū.

§. 21.

Comparison of adjectives.

The Sindhī, as well as the cognate idioms, has lost the power to form a Comparative and Superlative degree after the manner of the Sanskrit (and Persian) by means of adjective affixes, and it is very remarkable, that the Semitic way of making up for the degrees of comparison has been adopted. In order to express the idea of the Comparative, the object or objects, with which another is to be compared, is put in the Ablative, or, which is the same, the postpositions کھان khā, کھون khō, کھون khū, مان mā, منجھان manjhā and similar ones (see the Postpositions) are employed, the adjective itself remaining in the Positive. In order to express the idea of the Superlative, the pronominal adjective all is placed before the Ablative. By the Ablative the difference or distance, which exists between the objects compared, is pointed out.

مِٹھائیآں مِٹھو کھنو کڑو ناہِ کَلَام

Much sweeter than sweetness, (and) not bitter is the word. Sh. Kal. III, 10.

سَو سَسِیَن اَکِرُو سَندو دوسان دَم

More valuable than a hundred heads is the breath of the friend (Plur.): Sh. Kal. II, 30.

سَاه رَکِنُون اوڙڙو وَاچَد جو وصال

Nearer than the breath and the veins is the union of the one (God). Maj. 5.

پِياري پَرَبُهِن کھون گري جا تُو مَنجي جو

The wife, whom thou hast respected, having loved her more than thy Lord (Plur.). Mēnghō 8.

جي بهانئين تہ پرني مزان تہ ڏوهينون مڻ بهاني

If thou likest to meet (thy) friend, then esteem virtue more than vices. Sh. Jam. Kal. VIII, 22.

جيڪو ڪو هنن حڪمن مون هڪڙي سبھ ڪهان ننڍهي ڪهي

بهنجي ۽ ماڙهن ڪهي ائين سيڪهاري سو آسمان جي پاتشاهي

میں سبھ ڪهان ننڍهو چئبو

Whosoever break one of these least commandments and teach the people thus, he will be called the least in the kingdom of heaven. Matth. V, 19.

Chapter X.

Numeral adjectives.

§. 22.

The Sindhi possesses a great variety of numeral adjectives.

I. The CARDINAL NUMBERS are:

۱ هڪ hiku; هڪ hēku; ايڪ ēku; هڪڙو hikirō; هڪڙو hēkirō, one.

۲ ٻہ ba, two.

۳ ٽري trē, three.

۴ چار čare, four.

۵ پنج panja, five.

۶ چھ čha, or: چها čhaha, six.

۷ ست sata, seven.

۸ آٺ aṭha, eight.

۹ نئون nāvā, nine.

- ۱۰ دَہ dāha, ten.
 ۱۱ یارَہَن yārahā; اِکارَہَن ikārahā; کارَہَن kārahā, eleven. .
 ۱۲ بارَہَن bārahā, twelve.
 ۱۳ تیرَہَن tērahā, thirteen.
 ۱۴ چوڏَہَن čōḍahā, fourteen.
 ۱۵ پندرَہَن pandrahā; پندہَران pandhrā, fifteen.
 ۱۶ سورَہَن sōrahā, sixteen.
 ۱۷ سترَہَن satrahā, seventeen.
 ۱۸ ارَہَن arahā, eighteen.
 ۱۹ اُنِیہ اُنِویہ unīha, univīha, nineteen.
 ۲۰ ویہ viha, twenty.

Annotation. The Sindhī numerals are all derived from the Sanskrit by the medium of the Prākṛit. — Sansk. एक, one, Prāk. एक; in Sindhī a euphonic h has been preposed, as: hiku (= hikku). When commencing to count the Hindūs use to say instead of hiku: بَرکھُ barkhu, and the Musalmāns: بَرکھَت barkhata, invoking thereby a blessing. — Sansk. द्वि, two, Prāk. दो; in Sindhī the crude form dva has been assimilated to vva and thence to bā (= bba). Besides بَ bā we meet also occasionally the form دُون dū, which has sprung from the Prākṛit दोणि. — Sansk. त्रि, three, Sindhī تری trē, whereas the Prāk. form तिणिण has given rise to the Hindūstānī تین. Sansk. चतुर्, four, Prāk. चत्तारि; in Sindhī the conjunct tt has again been elided = čāre. — Sansk. पञ्चन्, Prāk. पञ्च; in Sindhī (and Panjābī) the tenuis ç has been changed into the media j (but in Hindūstānī and Marāṭhī again pānç). — Sansk. षष्, six; Prāk. छ, as in Sindhī. — Sansk. सप्तन्, seven, Prāk. सत्त; Sindhī: sata (= satta); Panjābī: satt; but in Hindūstānī and Marāṭhī: sāt, the conjunct tt being dissolved by lengthening the preceding vowel. — Sansk. अष्टन्, Prāk. अट्ट; Sindhī:

āṭha (= aṭṭha); Panjābī: aṭṭh; but Hindūst. and Marāṭhī: āṭh. Sansk. नवन्, nine, Prāk. नवन्; Sindhī: nāvā; Panjābī: nō; Hindūst.: nau; Marāṭhī: nava. — Sansk. दशन्, ten, Prāk. दस; Sindhī: ḍaha; Marāṭhī: dahā; Hindūstānī and Panjābī: das.

In Sanskrit the first nine numbers are prefixed to दशन्, ten, to form the following nine numerals; but in Prākrit and consequently in Sindhī (as well as in the cognate dialects) they undergo already so great changes, that the way, in which they have been compounded, is at the first sight scarcely recognisable. The Prākrit form दस is in these compounds first changed to दह and thence to रह, as: Prākrit एकारह = Sansk. एकादशन् eleven; Sindhī: yārahā, with elision of k, or without elision of k: ikārahā or kārahā (initial 'i' being dropped). — Prāk. बारह = Sansk. द्वादशन्, twelve; Sindhī: bārahā. — Prākrit तेरह = Sansk. त्रयोदशन् thirteen; Sindhī: tērahā. — Prākrit चउहह = Sansk. चतुर्दशन्, fourteen; Sindhī: ṣōḍahā. An exception forms the Sindhī: pandrahā or pandhrā, fifteen, the Prākrit form of which is पण्णरह = Sansk. पञ्चदशन्, the conjunct nō, which in Prākrit has been assimilated to the cerebral ṇ, having been changed in Sindhī to nd before the liquida r. Prākrit सोलह(?) = Sansk. षोडशन् (Var. II, 23?), sixteen; Sindhī: sōrahā; Hindūstānī: sōlah. Prākrit सत्तरह(?) = Sansk. सप्तदशन्, seventeen; Sindhī: satrahā; Hindūstānī: satrah. — Prākrit अट्ठरह = Sansk. अष्टादशन्, eighteen; Sindhī: aṭṭrahā, the Prākrit cerebral conjunct ṭṭh being changed in Sindhī to ṛ (see Introd. §. 7, 2) and assimilating the following dental r, by throwing out the long ā; Panjābī: aṭhārā; Hindūstānī: aṭhārah; Marāṭhī (with elision of medial ā): aṭharā. — Sansk. ऊनविंशति (Prākrit form unknown), one less than twenty (Latin: un-de-viginti); Sindhī: uṇīha or uṇivīha; the Sanskrit विंशति twenty, becomes in Prākrit वीसई; thence Sindhī: vīha; in compound numerals the v is generally elided, when preceded by a consonant, as: uṇīha or uṇivīha; Panjābī: unnī; Hindūstānī: unīs; Marāṭhī: ēkunīs.

२१ ایکہ ēkiha, twenty one.

२२ बाویہ bāviha, twenty two.

- ۲۳ ترِویہ trēvīha, twenty three.
 ۲۴ چَوِویہ čōvīha, twenty four.
 ۲۵ پَنجَوِیہ panjvīha, twenty five, or: پَنجِیہ panjīha.
 ۲۶ چَہَوِیہ čhavīha, twenty six.
 ۲۷ سَتَہَوِیہ satāvīha, twenty seven.
 ۲۸ اَٹَہَوِیہ aṭhāvīha, twenty eight.
 ۲۹ اَنٹَرِیہ unatrīha, twenty nine.
 ۳۰ تِریہ trīha, thirty.

Some of the units are lengthened in these compounds, as: بَا bā, سَتَا satā, اَٹَا aṭhā, but apparently not after a fixed rule. — چَار čāre, four, is, when compounded with another numeral, contracted to čō, after a different process of assimilation, **चतुर्** being first dissolved into ča-ur, and thence into čō, by assimilating the semi-vowel r with the following v. The same is the case in Panjābī, Hindūstānī and Marāṭhī.

تِریہ trīha, thirty, is derived from the Prākṛit ती-सञ्ज्ञा, Sansk. **त्रिंशत्**, the Sanskrit termination शत् being changed in Prākṛit to सद् and thence to सञ्ज्ञा or सा, and consequently in Sindhī to ha. — چَالِیہ čālīha, forty, Sansk. **चत्वारिंशत्**, the conjunct tt in the Prākṛit form (very likely चत्वारिसा?) being elided in Sindhī and r changed to l, in Panjābī and Marāṭhī even to l, as: čālī, čālīs; Hindūstānī: čālīs. The remaining tens follow the common rules of assimilation, as: Sindhī پَنجَاہ panjāha, fifty, Sansk. **पञ्चाशत्**, Prāk. **पण्णासा**, the Sindhī keeping closer to the Sanskrit in this word, than the Prākṛit; Panjābī likewise: panjāh; Hindūstānī: pačas, but Marāṭhī: pannās. — سَٹَہ sathe, sixty, Sansk.

षट्ति. — سَتر satare, seventy, makes an exception, final t (Sansk. सप्तति) having been changed to r; the same is the case in Panjābī (sattar), Hindūstānī (sattar) and in Marāṭhī (sattar). — اسی asī, eighty, Sansk. अशीति; Panjābī and Hindūstānī assī, but Marāṭhī aisī. — نَوِي navē, ninety (in Lār also نَوِہ nōe), Sansk. नवति; Panjābī likewise: navvē; Hindūstānī navē, but Marāṭhī navvad.

- ۳۱ اِکْثَرِیْہَ ekat̤rīha, thirty one.
 ۳۲ بَترِیْہَ bat̤rīha, thirty two.
 ۳۳ تَرِیْہَ trētrīha, thirty three.
 ۳۴ چَوْتَرِیْہَ čōtrīha, thirty four.
 ۳۵ پَنجَترِیْہَ panjat̤rīha, thirty five.
 ۳۶ چَہترِیْہَ čhat̤rīha, thirty six.
 ۳۷ سَترِیْہَ satat̤rīha, thirty seven.
 ۳۸ اَٹھترِیْہَ aṭhat̤rīha, thirty eight.
 ۳۹ اُنِیْتَالِیْہَ unētālīha, thirty nine.
 ۴۰ چَالِیْہَ čālīha, forty.

When چَالِیْہَ is preceded by the units (amongst which must also be numbered un, one less), it is changed to تَالِیْہَ tālīha; but in this case the units require the conjunctive vowel ē, to facilitate the pronunciation. This change of č to t is not yet to be found in the older Prākṛit, but seems to belong to a later period of the language. Lassen only mentions (§. 33, 4), that t is occasionally changed to ṭ and č, thence we may conclude, that vice versa č also was liable to be changed to t. The same is the case in the Panjābī (iktālī) and Hindūstānī (iktālīs), but not in Marāṭhī (ēkēcālīs).

- ۴۱ اِکِئَتَالِیْہَ ekētālīha, forty one.
 ۴۲ بَاِئَتَالِیْہَ bāētālīha, forty two.
 ۴۳ تَرِئَتَالِیْہَ trētālīha, forty three.
 ۴۴ چَوِئَتَالِیْہَ čōētālīha, forty four.
 ۴۵ پَنجِئَتَالِیْہَ panjētālīha, forty five.
 ۴۶ چَہَاِئَتَالِیْہَ čhāētālīha, forty six.
 ۴۷ سَتِئَتَالِیْہَ satētālīha, forty seven.
 ۴۸ اَٹِہِئَتَالِیْہَ athētālīha, forty eight.
 ۴۹ اُونِجَاہَ univanjāha, forty nine.
 ۵۰ پَنجَاہَ panjāha, fifty.

پَنجَاہَ panjāha (pronounced also: پَنجَاہُ panjāhu), when preceded by the units, is, for euphony's sake, changed to وَنَجَاہَ vanjāha the tenuis p being softened to the media b, and thence to v. The same change takes place in the kindred idioms.

- ۵۱ اِکْوَئَجَاہَ ekvanjāha, fifty one.
 ۵۲ بَاوَئَجَاہَ bāvanjāha, fifty two.
 ۵۳ تَرِوَئَجَاہَ trēvanjāha, fifty four.
 ۵۴ چَوِوَئَجَاہَ čōvanjāha, fifty three.
 ۵۵ پَنجَوِئَجَاہَ panjvanjāha, fifty five.
 ۵۶ چَہَاوَئَجَاہَ čhavanjāha, fifty six.
 ۵۷ سَتَوِئَجَاہَ satvanjāha, fifty seven.
 ۵۸ اَٹِہَوِئَجَاہَ athvanjāha, fifty eight.
 ۵۹ اَنَہَاٹِہَ unahaṭhe, fifty nine.
 ۶۰ سَاٹِہَ saṭhe, sixty.

سَاٹِہَ saṭhe and سَاتِہَ satāre, when preceded by the

units, are changed, for euphony's sake, to haṭhe and hatare, initial (and now medial) s being softened to h. The same is the case in Panjābī, but in Hindūstānī and Marāṭhī the s of sāṭh is retained, whereas that of sattar is softened to h.

- ۶۱ اِکھتھِ ēkahatḥe, sixty one.
 ۶۲ بَاھتھِ bāhatḥe, sixty two.
 ۶۳ تِرہتھِ trēhatḥe, sixty three.
 ۶۴ چوہتھِ čohatḥe, sixty four.
 ۶۵ پَنجھتھِ panjahatḥe, sixty five.
 ۶۶ چھاھتھِ čhahatḥe, sixty six.
 ۶۷ ستھتھِ satahatḥe, sixty seven.
 ۶۸ اٹھتھِ aṭhatḥe, sixty eight.
 ۶۹ اُنھتَرِ unahatare, sixty nine.
 ۷۰ سَتَرِ satare, seventy.
 ۷۱ اِکھتَرِ ēkahatare, seventy one.
 ۷۲ بَاھتَرِ bāhatare, seventy two.
 ۷۳ تِرہتَرِ trēhatare, seventy three.
 ۷۴ چوہتَرِ čohatare, seventy four.
 ۷۵ پَنجھتَرِ panjahatare, seventy five.
 ۷۶ چھاھتَرِ čhahatare, seventy six.
 ۷۷ ستھتَرِ satahatare, seventy seven.
 ۷۸ اٹھتَرِ aṭhatare, seventy eight.
 ۷۹ اُنَاسِ unāsī, seventy nine.
 ۸۰ اَسِ asī, eighty.

The units preceding اَسِ asī and نَری navē, are joined to them by the conjunctive vowel ā; the same is the case in the cognate dialects.

- ۸۱ اِکَاسِی ēkāsi, eighty one.
 ۸۲ بِیَاسِی biāsi, eighty two.
 ۸۳ تِریَاسِی triāsi, eighty three.
 ۷۴ چَوَراسِی čorāsi, eighty four.
 ۸۵ پَنجَاسِی pañjāsi, eighty five.
 ۸۶ چَہَاسِی čahāsi, eighty six.
 ۸۷ سَتَاسِی satāsi, eighty seven.
 ۸۸ اَتَہَاسِی aṭhāsi, eighty eight.
 ۸۹ اَنانَوی unānavē, eighty nine.
 ۹۰ نَوی navē, ninety.

 ۹۱ اِکانَوی ēkānavē, ninety one.
 ۹۲ بِیانَوی biānavē, ninety two.
 ۹۳ تِریانَوی triānavē, ninety three.
 ۹۴ چَوَرانَوی čorānavē, ninety four.
 ۹۵ پَنجَانَوی pañjānavē, ninety five.
 ۹۶ چَہَانَوی čahānavē, ninety six.
 ۹۷ سَتَانَوی satānavē, ninety seven.
 ۹۸ اَتَہَانَوی aṭhānavē, ninety eight.
 ۹۹ { نَوَانَوی navānavē,
 نَدَہَانَوی nadhānavē*),
 وَدَہَانَوی vadhānavē, } ninety nine.
 ۱۰۰ سَو sau, hundred.

*) We cannot offer a satisfactory explanation of these two curious forms. The corresponding Hindust. numeral is: ninānavē, the Panjābī naṛinavē. We can understand, how the Panjābī naṛ (nan = naṛ = naṛ) could be changed in Sindhi to naḍ or naḍh; but we cannot well perceive, that ḍ or ḍh should have been exchanged for a dental ḍ or

Annotation. ^{सौ} sau is derived from the Sansk. सत्, Prāk. सत्त; Panjābī sau or sai; Hindūstānī likewise sau or sai; Marāṭhī (in compounds) šē; Gujārātī sō.

The numbers above one hundred are commonly formed as in English by placing the lesser number after hundred, as:

१०१ ^{हिकु सौ हिकु} hiku sau hiku, one hundred (and) one.

१०२ ^{हिकु सौ बा} hiku sau ba, " " " two.

But there are two other ways of making up these numbers; the one is to place before sau the lesser number in an adjective form, as ^{एको सौ} ekō sau, literally: one hundred having or possessing one; or to put after the numeral adjective the noun utar (originally an adjective) which is contracted with the termination of the preceding numeral into ōtar, as: ^{एकोतर्सौ} ekōtarsau, one above one hundred. This utar (Sansk. उत्तर, adj., above) is used in a similar way in Marāṭhī.

१०१ ^{एको सौ} ekō sau, or: ^{एकोतर्सौ} ekōtarsau, one hundred (and) one.

१०२ ^{बिरो सौ} birō sau, or: ^{बिरोतर्सौ} birōtarsau, one hundred (and) two.

१०३ ^{त्रिरो सौ} triṛō sau, or: ^{त्रिरोतर्सौ} triṛōtarsau, one hundred (and) three.

१०४ ^{चोरो सौ} čōrō sau, or: ^{चोरोतर्सौ} čōrōtarsau, one hundred (and) four.

१०५ ^{पंचो सौ} panjō sau, or: ^{पंचोतर्सौ} panjōtarsau, one hundred (and) five.

dh, which would be a surprising phenomenon in a modern Prākrit idiom. In regard to vadhānavē it would be necessary to assume a change of n to v, of which we could not adduce another instance.

- ۱۰۶ چَهِو سَوُ čahō sau, or: چَهِو تَرَسَوُ čahōtarsau,
one hundred (and) six.
- ۱۰۷ سَتِيو سَوُ satyō sau, or: سَتِيو تَرَسَوُ satōtarsau,
one hundred (and) seven.
- ۱۰۸ اَتِهِيو سَوُ athyō sau, or: اَتِهِيو تَرَسَوُ athōtarsau,
one hundred (and) eight.
- ۱۰۹ نَرَو سَوُ narō sau, or: نَرَو تَرَسَوُ narōtarsau,
one hundred (and) nine.
- ۱۱۰ دَهِو سَوُ dahō sau, or: دَهِو تَرَسَوُ dahōtarsau,
one hundred (and) ten.
- ۱۱۱ يَارَهَو سَوُ yārahō sau, or: يَارَهَو تَرَسَوُ yārahōtarsau,
one hundred (and) eleven.
- ۱۱۲ بَارَهَو سَوُ bārahō sau, or: بَارَهَو تَرَسَوُ bārahōtarsau,
one hundred (and) twelve.
- ۱۱۳ تِيرَهَو سَوُ tērahō sau, or: تِيرَهَو تَرَسَوُ tērahōtarsau,
one hundred (and) thirteen.
- ۱۱۴ چَوَدَهِو سَوُ čōdahō sau, or: چَوَدَهِو تَرَسَوُ čōdahōtarsau,
one hundred (and) fourteen.
- ۱۱۵ پَنْدَرَهَو سَوُ pandrahō sau, or: پَنْدَرَهَو تَرَسَوُ pandhrō-
tarsau, one hundred (and) fifteen.
- ۱۱۶ سَوْرَهَو سَوُ sōrahō sau, or: سَوْرَهَو تَرَسَوُ sōrhōtarsau,
one hundred (and) sixteen.
- ۱۱۷ سَتْرَهَو سَوُ satrahō sau, or: سَتْرَهَو تَرَسَوُ satrahōtarsau,
one hundred (and) seventeen.
- ۱۱۸ اَرَهَو سَوُ arahō sau, or: اَرَهَو تَرَسَوُ arahōtarsau,
one hundred (and) eighteen.
- ۱۱۹ اَنِيَهَو سَوُ unihō sau, or: اَنِيَهَو تَرَسَوُ unihōtarsau,
one hundred (and) nineteen.
- ۱۲۰ وِيَهَو سَوُ vihō sau, or: وِيَهَو تَرَسَوُ vihōtarsau,
one hundred (and) twenty.

- ۱۳۱ ^{سَو} اِکِیْهَو ^{سَو} ēkīhō sau, or: ^{سَو} اِکِیْهَوْتَرَسَو ^{سَو} ēkīhōtarsau,
one hundred (and) twenty one.
- ۱۳۲ ^{سَو} بَاوِیْهَو ^{سَو} bāvīhō sau, or: ^{سَو} بَاوِیْهَوْتَرَسَو ^{سَو} bāvīhōtarsau,
one hundred (and) twenty two.
etc. etc.
- ۱۳۰ ^{سَو} تَرِیْهَو ^{سَو} trihō sau, or: ^{سَو} تَرِیْهَوْتَرَسَو ^{سَو} trihōtarsau,
one hundred (and) thirty.
- ۱۴۰ ^{سَو} چَالِیْهَو ^{سَو} čālīhō sau, or: ^{سَو} چَالِیْهَوْتَرَسَو ^{سَو} čālīhōtarsau,
one hundred (and) forty.
- ۱۴۱ ^{سَو} اِکِیْتَالِیْهَو ^{سَو} ēkētālīhō sau, or: ^{سَو} اِکِیْتَالِیْهَوْتَرَسَو ^{سَو} ēkētālīhōtarsau,
one hundred (and) forty one.
etc. etc.
- ۱۵۰ ^{سَو} پَنجَاهَو ^{سَو} panjāhō sau, or: ^{سَو} پَنجَاهَوْتَرَسَو ^{سَو} panjāhōtarsau,
one hundred (and) fifty.
- ۱۶۰ ^{سَو} سَٹْهَیَو ^{سَو} saṭhyō sau, or: ^{سَو} سَٹْهَیَوْتَرَسَو ^{سَو} saṭhyōtarsau,
one hundred (and) sixty.
- ۱۷۰ ^{سَو} سَٹْرِیَو ^{سَو} sataryō sau, or: ^{سَو} سَٹْرِیَوْتَرَسَو ^{سَو} sataryōtarsau,
one hundred (and) seventy.
- ۱۸۰ ^{سَو} اَسِیَو ^{سَو} asyō sau, or: ^{سَو} اَسِیَوْتَرَسَو ^{سَو} asyōtarsau,
one hundred (and) eighty.
- ۱۹۰ ^{سَو} نَوِیَو ^{سَو} naviyō sau, or: ^{سَو} نَوِیَوْتَرَسَو ^{سَو} naviyōtarsau,
^{سَو} نَوِیَو ^{سَو} nōyō sau, or: ^{سَو} نَوِیَوْتَرَسَو ^{سَو} nōyōtarsau,
one hundred (and) ninety.

When the numeral adjectives of the first series precede the Plural of ^{سَو} sau, they must agree with their substantive in number, as:

- ۲۰۱ (سَا or) اِکَا بَه سَو ^{سَو} ēkā bā sava (or sā), literally:
two hundreds having or possessing one.
- ۲۰۲ سَو بَرَا بَه سَو ^{سَو} birā bā sava, two hundred and two.
etc. etc. etc.

These numerals are not used in the Formative, as they are only employed in counting. The numerals of the second series remain unaltered, according to their original signification.

The hundreds are regularly made up by the Plural of سَو, as:

۲۰۰ (سَا or) سَوَ بَ ba sava (or s̄a) two hundred.

۳۰۰ سَوَ قَرِي trē sava, three hundred.

۴۰۰ سَوَ چَار čāre sava, four hundred.

۵۰۰ سَوَ پَنج panja sava, five hundred.

۶۰۰ سَوَ چھ čha sava, six hundred.

۷۰۰ سَوَ سَت sata sava, seven hundred.

۸۰۰ سَوَ آٹھ aṭha sava, eight hundred.

۹۰۰ سَوَ نَوَن nāvā sava, nine hundred.

۱۰۰۰ { سَوَ سَهَس sahasu (= sahasu), } one thousand.
 { سَوَ هَزَار hazāru, }

۲۰۰۰ { سَوَ سَهَس بَ ba sahasa, } two thousand.
 { سَوَ هَزَار بَ ba hazāra, }

۱۰۰۰۰ سَوَ لَكھ lakhu, one hundred thousand.

۲۰۰۰۰ سَوَ لَكھ بَ ba lakha, two hundred thousand.

۱۰۰۰۰۰ سَوَ دَه لَكھ ḍaha lakha, one million.

۱۰۰۰۰۰۰ { سَوَ کِرَوَر kirōre, } ten millions (one hundred lakhs).
 { سَوَ کُور kōru, }

۲۰۰۰۰۰۰ { سَوَ کِرَوَر بَ ba kirōre, } twenty millions.
 { سَوَ کُور بَ ba kōra, }

۱۰۰۰۰۰۰۰ سَوَ اَرَب arbu, one thousand millions (one hundred karōrs).

۱۰۰۰۰۰۰۰۰ سَوَ کھَرَب kharbu, one hundred thousand millions (one hundred arbs).

!..... نِيلِ nīlu, ten billions (one hundred kharbs).

!..... پَدَمُ padamu, one thousand billions (one hundred nīls).

Annotation. سَهَسُ sahasu is derived from the Sansk. सहस्र, Prāk. सहस्र. It is a regular substantive and inflected accordingly. هَزَارُ hazāru (s. m.) is of Persian origin. — لَكْهُ lakhu, Sansk. लक्ष; Hindūst. lak (and lākh); Marāthī lākh; it is likewise treated as a substantive masc. — كِرَوْرُ kirōre (Sansk. कोटि) is not inflected, whereas كُورُ kōru is treated as a regular substantive. The following numerals, which belong more to the realm of fancy, are all substantives, as: أَرْبُ, Sansk. अर्बुद; كَهْرُبُ, Sansk. खर्ब; نِيلُ, Sansk. ? پَدَمُ, Sansk. पद्म.

§. 23.

Inflexion of the cardinal numbers.

هِكُ hiku or هِكِرُو hikirō are regular adjectives and inflected according to their respective terminations (هِكُ m.; هِكِ fem. etc.); the other numerals have no change of gender, but are inflected in the Formative Plural, as:

بَ ba, two;	Format. Plural:	بِي bine.
ثَرِي trē, three;	”	ثَرِي trīne.
چَار čāre, four;	”	چَرِي čāine.
پَنَج panja, five;	”	پَنَجِي panjane.
چَ čha, six;	”	چَهِي čhahane.
سَت saha, seven;	”	سَتِي satane.
اَثَ aṭha, eight;	”	اَثِي aṭhane.
نَوَن nāvā, nine;	”	نَوَنِي nāvane.
دَاḥa, ten;	”	دَاهِي ḍahane.

The following numerals, from eleven - eighteen, throw final Anusvāra off in the Formative Plural and drop the short a, preceding h, as;

يَارَهَنَ	yārahā, eleven; Format. Plur.	يَارَهِنَ	yārhone.
بَارَهَنَ	bārahā, twelve; " "	بَارَهِنَ	bārhone.
تِيرَهَنَ	tērahā, thirteen; " "	تِيرَهِنَ	tērhone.
چَوْدَهَنَ	čōdahā, fourteen; " "	چَوْدَهِنَ	čōdhane.
پَنْدَرَهَنَ	pandraha, } fifteen; " "	پَنْدَرَهِنَ	pandhrane.
پَنْدَهَرَان	pandhrā, }		
وِيَهَ	vīha, twenty; " "	وِيَهِنَ	vīhone.

Those numerals, which end in ě (ī) and ē, are not capable of inflexion, as: سَتِّهَ sāthe, sixty; سَتَرِ satare, seventy; نَوِي navē or نَوِ nōe, ninety; but اَسِي asī, eighty, makes the Format. Sing. اَسِي asia.

سَو sa-u, hundred; is inflected, as follows:

	SING.	PLUR.
Nom.	سَو sau;	سَو sava, or contracted سَا sā.
Format.	سَو sava;	سَو savane, سَان sāne, سَوِين savē,
		سَتِّين saē.

The cardinal numbers, chiefly the decimal ones, are also used as collective numbers, and in this case they are inflected according to their respective terminations, e. g. دَهُونِ تَرِي trē ḍahū, three tens, Formative تَرِينِ دَهُونِ trine ḍahune; چَارِ سَتِّهُونِ čāre sātheū, four sixties; نَوِي navē forms the Plural نَوِيُونِ navēū, Format. نَوِيُونِ navēune. When used in a collective sense these numerals are mostly put in the Formative Plural

ending in ē, as: **وِہیں** vīhē, in scores; **سَویں** savē, in hundreds, **سَہسَیں** sahásē, in thousands.

When a noun in the Formative Plural takes the termination ne or ē, the preceding numeral, like all other adjectives, must take the same too, or: **دَہیں وِہیں کھی** to ten enemies, or: **دَہیں وِہیں کھی** and **تَہیں** do not admit of a Formative in ē, but make it ī, as: **بِیں** bī, **تَہیں** trī; of **چار** there is a Formative as well in ī as in ē; **چَیں** čaī or: **چَیں** čaē; but the Formatives bī, trī, čaī are also used with Formatives of nouns ending in ne.

The emphatic ī (hī) may also be affixed to the cardinal numbers to express completeness or intensity, as: **بَہیں** bāī or: **بَہیں** bēī, all two = both, Formative Plural: **بَہیں** binhī or: **بَہیں** binhī; or: **بَہیں** binhine, **بَہیں** binhinī. **تَہیں** trēī, all three, Formative Plural: **تَہیں** trinhī or: **تَہیں** trinhī; or: **تَہیں** trinhine, **تَہیں** trinhinī. **چَہیں** čāī or: **چَہیں** čārēī, all four, Formative Plural: **چَہیں** čainī. **اَہیں** aṭhī, all eight, Formative Plural: **اَہیں** aṭhanī, etc.

The cardinal numbers, from two upwards generally require their substantive in the Plural; but they may also be constructed with the Singular, after the manner of the Persian. Sau, hazāru, sahāsu, lakhu etc., being properly substantives, are either constructed with the Genitive Plural of the following substantive, or they have the same coordinated in the Plural. The numerals preceding a substantive may either be inflected according to the termination of the substantive or they may remain

uninflected; when two or more numerals precede a substantive, the last only is inflected.

وساريج مَ دینِ جو بہن بہ ٿري ڏينھڙا

Do not forget the words; in youth there are two, three short days. Sh. Jam. Kal. V, Epil.

بين ٽرين ورھن جو خرچ ڪھڻي ونجاء

Having taken provisions of two, three years, depart. Amulu Māniku, Stack's Gram. p. 147.

آٿھي پھر ٺھڙي ڪھڙو رڻي سين رنج

Being unwell she weeps much all the eight watches with grief. Maj. 562.

ڏھن ڊيرن وچ مين آيو آھي انسان

انھي ڏھني ڊيرن وچ مان جو ڪھڙي جنڪ جوان

Man has come into the midst of ten enemies —
That young man, who wins the battle out of the
midst of all these ten enemies etc. Sh. Barvō
Sindhī, Chōt. 18.

جنھن جي حڪم مين سٿھ آسي ٻانھي آھي ٽن سٿھ

آسي ٽي ٻانھي ڪھي ڪليليون ھٿھن مين آھين

Under whose command are sixty, eighty bond-maids;
those sixty, eighty bond-maids have pellet-bows in their
hands. Amulu Māniku, p. 141.

انھي محل سفيد ڊيو وٽ سو پريون بہ ڇنڊيون ھونديون

تہ ھو چوندو جي تون ھن سو پرين ڪھي وھاري مون ڪھي

ڇيو تھي ڏيکھارين

In that very palace one hundred Fairies also will
dance near the Dēv Sufēdu. Then he will say: if thou

causest these hundred Fairies to sit down and showest me a dancing etc. Amulu Māniku, p. 144.

جِئِري تَنهن جُوانَ جِي نَنون سَا نَنون كَها

In the body of that young man there are nine hundred and nine wounds. Sh. Kēd. VI, 7.

تَنهن سَان دَه سَا ذَاتَارَن جَا چَرَهَها دُونَدِين تِكِهين

With him ten hundred liberal persons mounted on swift boats. Ajāib, v. 253.

سَوِين آهِن سَتَنسَار مِين بَيَا بَهي دَاتَا دَل

Hundreds and also other multitudes of generous persons are in the world. Sh. Sōr. II, 3.

مَرَضَ تَان مُون كَهي تَهَا حَكِيمَن هَرَارَ

Thousands of physicians I have had for (my) disease. Sh. Ābirī I, Epil.

جِي هُونِي هَوَتَ هَرَارَ تَه بَهي پَآرَجِ كَو مَه پُنَهَنِي سَان

If thou hast thousands of sweathearts, even then compare none with Punhū. Sh. Maṣḍ. V, 2.

اِيکَ قَصَرِ دَر لَکَہ سَهَسِين کَنسِ مِکِکَهيُون

In one palace there are lakhs of doors, windows in thousands (belong) to it. Sh. Kal. I, 23.

جِيئَان قَاتِلَ کَوَر اکَهيُون اوڏَانَهين کَهَنين

Where there are ten millions of killers, in that direction lift up thy eyes. Sh. Jam. Kal. IV, 4.

پَلَنگ پَتَهَرَنِيُون پَالِکِيُون نَنون لَکَہ نَانِي نِيَدَ

Of bedsteads, beddings, pālkis nine lakhs, nīls of hard cash. Sh. Sōr. II, 5.

§. 24.

II. ORDINAL NUMBERS.

پَهَرِيُون	paharyō,	} the first.
پِهَرِيُون	peheryō,	
پِهَرُون	peherō,	
بِيُون	biō,	} the second.
بِيَجُون	bijō,	
تِرِيُون	triō,	} the third.
تِرِيَجُون	trijō,	
چَوْتِهُون	čothō,	the fourth.
پَنَجُون	panjō,	the fifth.
چَهَهُون	čahō,	the sixth.
سَتُون	satō,	the seventh.
اَتِهُون	athō,	the eighth.
نَانْتُون	nāō,	} the ninth.
نَوُون	navō,	
دَهُون	dahō,	the tenth.
يَاَرَهُون	yārhō,	} the eleventh.
کَاَرَهُون	kārhō,	
بَاَرَهُون	bārhō,	the twelfth.
تِيَرَهُون	tērhō,	the thirteenth.
چَوَدَهُون	čodhō,	the fourteenth.
پَنَدَرَهُون	pandrahō,	} the fifteenth.
پَنَدِهَرُون	pandhrō,	
سَوَرَهُون	sōrhō,	the sixteenth.
سَتَرَهُون	satrahō,	the seventeenth.

اَرْهَوْن	arhō,	the eighteenth.
اَرْنِيهَوْن	ūnihō,	the nineteenth.
وِيهَوْن	vihō,	the twentieth.
اِيَكِيهَوْن	ēkihō,	the twenty first.
بَاوِيهَوْن	bāvihō,	the twenty second.
etc.	etc.	
تَرِيهَوْن	trihō,	the thirtieth.
چَالِيهَوْن	čālīhō,	the fortieth.
پَنجَاهَوْن	panjāhō,	the fiftieth.
سَتهِيَوْن	sathyō,	the sixtieth.
سَترِيَوْن	sataryō,	the seventieth.
اَسِيَوْن	asyō,	the eightieth.
نَوِيَوْن	naviyō,	} the ninetieth.
نَوِيَتُون	navēō,	
سَوِيَوْن	saviyō,	} the hundredth.
سَوَتُون	sau-ō,	
سَيَتُون	sai-ō,	

Of compound numbers only the last takes the form of the ordinal and is inflected, as:

هِيكُ سَوِ پِهَرِيَوْن hiku sau peheryō, the one hundred and first.

بَا سَوِيَوْن bā saviyō, the two hundredth.

بَا سَا بِيَوْن bā sā biō, the two hundred and second.

هَزَارُون	hazārō,	} the thousandth.
سَهَسُون	sahāsō,	

Annotation. The ordinals are regularly derived from the Prākrit; پہريون peheryō, the first, though, has not followed the traces of the Prākrit (= पठम), but taken its own course of assimilation; Sansk. प्रथम, thence: pahama; the m of pahama has been changed in a rather unusual way to l(r), pahala, pahara, thence the Sindhī: paharyō or peheryō. Hindūst. and Panjābī: pahilā, Marāṭhī likewise: pahilā. بيو biō, the second, points back to the Prākrit वीञ्च (shortened from विदिञ्च), and the other form بيجو bijō, corresponds to the Prāk. दुइञ्ज. تريتو triō, the third, coincides with the Prākrit तीञ्च, with this difference, that original r has been preserved in Sindhī. چوتھون čōthō, the fourth, Prākrit चउट्; the original dental (th) has been preserved in Sindhī. The following ordinals are all regularly derived from the cardinals, by adding the affix ō corresponding to the Sansk. affix तम, which has in Sindhī been changed to ō by the elision of t (compare: Introd. §. 9). In Hindūstānī and Panjābī tama has been similarly changed to vā, in Marāṭhī to vā; the Gujārātī has preserved the affix mō, and the Bangālī even the whole affix tam.

§. 25.

Inflection of the ordinals.

The ordinals are regularly inflected as adjectives according to their respective terminations:

SINGULAR.

	<i>Masculine.</i>	<i>Feminine.</i>
Nom.	پہريون peheryō.	پہرين peherī.
Format.	پہرين peherē.	پہريني peheriā.
Vocat.	پہريان peheryā.	پہرين peherī.

PLURAL.

Nom.	پہريان peheryā.	پہريون peheryū.
Format.	پہرين peheryē.	پہرين peheryē (peheriē).

Format.	$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{پهريان} \text{ peheryā.} \\ \text{پهريڻ} \text{ peheryane.} \end{array} \right.$	$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{پهريان} \text{ peheryā.} \\ \text{پهرين} \text{ peherine.} \\ \text{پهريڻ} \text{ peheryune.} \end{array} \right.$
Vocat.	$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{پهريان} \text{ peheryā.} \\ \text{پهريو} \text{ peheryō.} \\ \text{پهريو} \text{ peheryau.} \end{array} \right.$	$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{پهريون} \text{ peheryū.} \end{array} \right.$

پهريون ويڙي پانهن جو آھ نَحْسُ نَحْسُ نادان

His first own enemy is the unlucky, wretched, ignorant man. Sh. Barvō Sindhī, Chōt. 18.

کوپا کلي کوڏيا ساھو سلي دار

هڪڙا بهادر بڻا بهادر يا ٿريا جاني يار

In the fort of Kūfā are happy the heroes clad in armour,

The first are the brothers, the second the nephews, the third the beloved friends. Sh. Kēd. III, 2.

ايکويهني ماه عاشق کهي وڻو وسري پان

خفي تهڻو محبوب سين باويهني ماه ڇهان

On the twenty first (date) self was forgotten to (= by) the lover;

Consciousness became hidden with the beloved on the twenty second. Maj. 518, 519.

کارهين ڏينھ ڪرم وڻو ويراگين جو

On the eleventh day the kindness of the Bērāgīs returned. Sh. Rāmāk. II, 11.

The date of the year is not expressed by the ordinals, but by the cardinals:

ماه مبارک رمضان جي ستاويهن ساري
 قدر راتِ قصو پڻو ڏينھ ٺاڪاري
 اڪارھن سا چھترين ھجرت ھو سن
 عارفن جي عشق جو فاضل جوڙڻو فن

On the twenty seventh of the blessed month of Ramazān, according to calculation,

In the night of power the story was completed, on a Tuesday.

It was the year of the Hijrat eleven hundred thirty six (= A. D. 1724, 8th June).

By Fāzil was composed the science of the love of the wise ones (i. e. Sūfis). Maj. 829.

§. 26.

III. ARITHMETICAL FIGURES.

The arithmetical figures or names of the numbers are expressed by adjectives, which are formed by adding the adjective affix *ō* to the cardinal numbers; some few have also, in order to distinguish the arithmetical figures from the ordinals, the affix *kō*.

ایکو ēkō, هڪو hikō, containing the number 'one';
the number or figure 'one'.

ٻڪو bikō, the number 'two'.

ٽرڪو trikō, " " 'three'.

چونڪو čaukō, " " 'four'.

پنجو pañjō, " " 'five'.

چهڪو čhakō, " " 'six'.

ستو satō, " " 'seven'.

اٺھو aṭhō, " " 'eight'.

نانئون	nāō,	the number 'nine'.
دَھو	ḍahō,	" " 'ten'.
یارھو	yārḥō,	" " 'eleven'.
بارھو	bārḥō,	" " 'twelve'.
تیرھو	tērḥō,	" " 'thirteen'.
چوڌھو	čōḍḥō,	" " 'fourteen'.
پندرھو	pandrahō,	" " 'fifteen'.
سورھو	sōrhō,	" " 'sixteen'.
سترھو	satrahō,	" " 'seventeen'.
آرھو	aṛḥō,	" " 'eighteen'.
اونیھو	ūñihō,	" " 'nineteen'.
ویھو	viḥō,	" " 'twenty'.
ایکیھو	ēkiḥō,	" " 'twenty one'.
etc.	etc.	
تیریھو	triḥō,	" " 'thirty'.
چالیھو	čāliḥō,	" " 'forty'.
پنجاھو	pañjāhō,	" " 'fifty'.
ستھیو	saṭhyō,	" " 'sixty'.
ستریو	sataryō,	" " 'seventy'.
آسیو	asyō,	" " 'eighty'.
نویو	naviyō,	" " 'ninety'.
سویو	saviyō,	" " 'hundred'.

They are regularly inflected as adjectives ending in *ō*; ہکا two units; تریکي کھان پوء چونکو تھو لکي after the number three comes the number four.

§. 27.

IV. COLLECTIVE NUMBERS.

We have noticed already (§. 22), that the cardinal numbers may also be employed as collective numbers; but the Sindhī possesses also a peculiar kind of numerals, which express an aggregate sum; these are:

دَہاکو ḍahākō, the sum of ten; about ten.

وہارو viharō, }
دِہارو dīharō, } the sum of twenty; about twenty.

تِہارو triharō, }
تِریہارو trīharō, } the sum of thirty; about thirty.

چالہیارو čalhyārō, the sum of forty; about forty.

پنجاہی panjāhī, }
پنجاہو panjāhō, } the sum of fifty; about fifty.

ساتھیکو sāthikō, the sum of sixty, about sixty.

They are properly adjectives, formed by the affixes kō (§. 10, 24) and ārō, as: دَہاکو ḍahākō, making ten; وہارو virāhō, containing twenty. They may be constructed either as substantives with the noun in the Genitive, or as numeral adjectives, e. g.: دَہاکو چھوکرَن جو ḍahākō cchōkarn jō ten boys, literally: a decade of boys, or: دَہاکو چھوکرَن ḍahākō cchōkarn.

To express more distinctly the indefiniteness of such a number, the adverb کھنُ khanu (literally: piece, portion, Sansk. खण्ड) is added to them as well as to the cardinal numbers; e. g. وہارو کھنُ viharō khanu, about twenty.

پنج ہزار کھنُ مَرَس ہٹا

They were about five thousand men. Matth. 14, 21.

چُونکُ čaūku, چُونکِرِي čaūkirī, the sum of four, کورِي kōrī, a score, are only used substantively, the latter generally in the Formative Plural کورِيں kōrē, in scores, as:

سَهْسِين شِکْرَانَا کورِيں بَهَالِ گَرِيْمَ جَا

In thousands are the thanksgivings, in scores the favours of the kind one (i. e. God). Sh. Surāg I, Epil. 1.

سَيِکِرُو saikirō, a hundred, is only used when speaking of interest, expressing our “per cent”, as:

بِه سَا رُوپِيَا پَنچِين رُوپِيَتِي سَيِکِرِي اُدھَارِيْمَ I borrowed two hundred rupees at five rupees by the hundred (i. e. at five per cent). The percentage may also be expressed by an adjective (a so-called Bahuvrihi, cf. §. 12, II, 5), compounded of the respective amount and the adjective ōtirō, ‘having above’, as:

ایکوٹِرُو سَو one hundred having one above it, i. e. one per cent;

پرُوٹِرُو سَو two per cent.

تِرُوٹِرُو سَو three per cent.

etc. etc.

Of the same kind are the compound adjectives, such as: چَوَانُو سَو čauāno (sau), one hundred having four Annas, i. e. 4 Annas per cent; تِرِپَانِيُو سَو tripānyō (sau), one hundred having three quarters of a rupee, i. e. at three quarters of a rupee per cent, etc. When مِتي mitī (interest) is used, سَو is omitted, as: ڈِيڈھوٹِرِي مِتي, interest of one and a half.

§. 28.

V. PROPORTIONAL NUMBERS.

The numerals denoting 'fold', are:

هَيْكُونُو	hēkūnō,	} single.
هَيْكُوتُو	hēkūtō,	
بَيْنُو	bīnō,	} twofold.
بِتُو	bitō,	
تَرِينُو	trīnō,	threefold.
چُونُو	čaunō,	} fourfold.
چُونُو	čaunō,	
پَنْجُونُو	panjūnō,	fivefold.
چَهْهُونُو	čahūnō,	sixfold.
سَتُونُو	satūnō,	sevenfold.
اَتْهُونُو	aṭhūnō,	eightfold.
نَاُونُو	naūnō,	ninefold.
دَاهُونُو	ḍahūnō,	tenfold.
يَارْهُونُو	yārḥūnō,	elevenfold.
بَارْهُونُو	bārḥūnō,	twelfefold.
تِيرْهُونُو	tērḥūnō,	thirteenfold.
چَوْدْهُونُو	čōḍḥūnō,	fourteenfold.
پَنْدْهُرونُو	pandhrūnō,	fifteenfold.
سَوْرْهُونُو	sōrhūnō,	sixteenfold.
سَتْرْهُونُو	satrahūnō,	seventeenfold.
اَرْهُونُو	aṛḥūnō,	eighteenfold.
اُونِيْهُونُو	ūṇihūnō,	nineteenfold.
وِيْهُونُو	viḥūnō,	twentyfold.

ایکِیْهُنُو ēkīhūnō, twenty-onefold.

تْرِیْهُنُو trīhūnō, fortyfold.

چَالِیْهُنُو čālīhūnō, fortyfold.

پَنْجَاهُونُو panjāhūnō, fiftyfold.

سَٹْهِیُونُو sathyūnō, sixtyfold.

سَٹْرِیُونُو sataryūnō, seventyfold.

اَسِیُونُو asyūnō, eightyfold.

نَوِیْهُنُو navēūnō, ninetyfold.

سَاُونُو saūnō, hundredfold.

In the same way the affix ūnō (cf. §. 10, 28) is added to the fractional numbers, as:

اَدْهُنُو adhūnō, one half-fold.

سَوَاُونُو savāūnō, one (or a certain sum) and a quarter-fold.

دَبْدْهُنُو dēd̄hūnō, one and a half-fold.

اَدْهَاهُونُو adhāūnō, two and a half-fold.

جَدَّهِيں اَنَدُو تَدَّهِيں پَان كَهان پِينُو دَوَزَخ جُو بَارُ

تَهَا كَرِيوسَ

When he has been brought over by you, then you make him twofold more a child of hell, than yourselves. Matth. 23, 15.

بِيَا بِيَجَ چَنكِ دَهَرْتِي تِي پِيَا سِي پَهَرِيَا كِي سُونَا كِي

سَٹْهِیُونَا كِي تْرِیْهُنَا

Other seeds fill upon good land; these brought forth fruit, some hundredfold, some sixtyfold, some thirtyfold. Matth. 13, 8.

§. 29.

VI. REDUPLICATIVE NUMBERS.

The numeral adverbs, denoting reduplication, are.

هڪارَ hēkāra,	}	once.
هڪرَ hēkara,		
ٻهارَ bihāra,	}	twice.
ٻهرَ bihara,		
ٽرهارَ trihāra,	}	thrice.
ٽرهرَ trihara,		
چوهارَ čohāra,	}	four times.
چوهرَ čohara,		

The further reduplicatives are commonly made up by the cardinals with the nouns وارو vārō, بهيرو or لينکو (linō).

Annotation. The affix هارَ, or shortened هرَ, has taken its origin from the Sansk. बार, Hindūstānī: bārah, Panjābī: vārī; in Sindhī v has been elided and euphonic h inserted.

§. 30.

VII. FRACTIONAL NUMBERS.

The fractional numbers are of two kinds; they are either substantives or adjectives;

a) substantives are:

چوٿھو čōthe,	}	a quarter.
چوٿھائي čōthāī,		
چوٿھو čōthō,		

پَا pāu, a quarter; Plur. پَاو pāva or پَا pā.

تِرہائی trihāī, a third.

اَدھ adhu, a half.

سَوائی savāī, one and a quarter; a quarter more
(than the whole).

سَادھ sādhu, one half more (than the specified sum).

دِیدھ dēdhe, one and a half.

b) adjectives are:

پُونُو paunō, } one quarter less (than the whole).
مُنُو munō, }

اَدھ adhu, } half.
اَدھو ādhō, }

سَو savā, one quarter more (than the whole).

سَادھَا sādha, one half more (than the whole).

دِیدھ dēdhu, one and a half.

اَدھائی adhāī, two and a half.

Annotation. چوتھ, چوتھائی, چوتھا is derived from the Sansk. चतुर्थांश, Hindūstānī cauth, cauthāī; in the same way تِرہائی is derived from the Sansk. तृतीयांश, Hindūstānī tihāī. پَا corresponds to the Sansk. पाद, Hindūstānī pāo; the adjective پُونُو has sprung from the Sansk. adj. पादोन, Hindūst. paunā, Marāṭhī pāūṇ; the origin of مُنُو is doubtful. اَدھ is substantive and adjective at the same time, Sansk. अर्ध, Hindūst. ādhā. سَوائی and the adjective سَو are derived from the Sansk. सपाद, having a quarter, Hindūst. and Marāṭhī: savā; سَادھ and the adjective سَادھَا (Plur. m.) from the Sansk. adjective सार्ध, having a half, with a half, Hindūstānī (Instrum.)

sārḥē. **دِدْه** and the adjective **دِدْه** are apparently derived from an unusual Sansk. compound **चि + अर्ध**, having three halves, Hindūst. *dēḥ*, Panjābī *ḍeḍh*, Marāṭhī *ḍīd*. **اَدَّهَائِي** has drawn its origin from the Sansk. **अर्धवय**, Hindūst. *aṛhāi*, Panjābī *ḍhāi*, Marāṭhī *aḍits*.

In reference to the use of these fractional numbers it is to be observed, that **مَنُو** is generally used with units, and **پَوَنُو** with two, three etc., as: **مَنُو رُوپیو**, a rupee wanting a quarter = three quarters of a rupee; **پَوَنَا بَ رُوپیَا** two rupees wanting a quarter = one rupee and three quarters; **پَوَنُو سَو** one hundred wanting a quarter = 75. **سَوَا** one quarter more, as: **سَوَا سیر** one sēr and a quarter; **سَوَا تَرِي سیر** three sērs and a quarter.

سَوَا is not inflected in the Singular, nor in the Nominative Plural, but it has a Formative Plural masc., viz.: **سَوَائِي** *savāine*, **سَوَايَنِي** *savāyanē* or: **سَوَائِي** *savāē*, and fem. **سَوَائِي** *savāine* or: **سَوَايَنِي** *savāyune*; but generally it is not inflected at all, e.g.: **سَوَائِي چَٹِن مَنِي سِين** with four maunds and a quarter or: **سَوَا چَٹِي مَنِي سِين**. **سَوَا** may also precede **سَو**, **هَزَار** etc., as: **سَوَا سَو** one hundred and a quarter = 125; **سَوَا هَزَار** one thousand and a quarter = 1250.

اَدْه *adhu*, half, is a common adjective and used accordingly.

سَادْهَا *sādhā*, adding one half, is only used with nouns of number subsequent to 'two', and therefore ever found in the Plural; its fem. is **سَادْهِيُون** *sādhīyū*.

تَدِهِن سَادَهَا نَتَرَن سِير سِنْدَر تَرَاتِي تَوْرِي

Then she weighs with a balance nine sērs and a half of read lead. Maj. 320.

دِدَه dēdhu, one and a half, is only used in the Singular and not compounded with other numbers, as: دِدَه أَنُو dēdhu ānu one Anna and a half; دِدَه رَتِي dēdhu ratī one ratī and a half.

اَدَهَايِي adhāī, two and a half, is only used in the Plural, without distinction of gender in the Nominative; in the Formative Plural it makes for the Masc. اَدَهَايِيْن adhāīne, اَدَهَايِيْن adhāyane or: اَدَهَايِيْ adhāīē, and for the fem. اَدَهَايِيْن adhāīne, اَدَهَايِيْن adhāyune, اَدَهَايِيْ adhāīē; اَدَهَايِي تَوِيْرُون adhāī tōīrōn two yards and a half; اَدَهَايِي تَوِيْرُون adhāī tōīs two Tōīs and a half; Formative: اَدَهَايِيْن كَجِيْن adhāīn kaji; اَدَهَايِيْن tōīn etc.

From these fractional numbers another kind of adjectives has been derived, implying "consisting of, computed at such a rate, standing in such a relation", as:

پَانِيُو pānyō or پَانِيَكُ pānyaku, only used in the compound: تَرِيْ پَانِيُو or: تَرِيْ پَانِيَكُ, computed at at three quarters of a rupee.

پَاو pāo, compounded with cardinal numbers, as:

تَرِيْ پَاو, consisting of three quarters.

سَوَايُو savāyō, computed at $1\frac{1}{4}$.

دِدَه دِهُو dēdhu dēhō, consisting of $1\frac{1}{2}$.

دِدَه دِهُو دِهُو dēdhu dēhō dēhō, standing in the $1\frac{1}{2}$ place.

اَدَهَايُو adhāyō, consisting of $2\frac{1}{2}$.

اَدَهَايُو دِهُو adhāyō dēhō, standing in the $2\frac{1}{2}$ place.

These are used as common adjectives and inflected and constructed accordingly.

The other fractional numbers may be made up by compositions, as:

آدھ پاءَ adhu pāu = $\frac{1}{8}$.

دڊھ پاءَ dēdhu pāu = $\frac{3}{8}$.

ٻه تریہائی ba trihāi = $\frac{2}{3}$.

پونا ٻه paunā ba = $1\frac{3}{4}$.
etc. etc. etc.

Fractions with special application are:

پارپو pārupō,	} a quarter of a rupee.
پائی pāilī,	
پاینہ pāine,	

پائری pāirī, the quarter of a گج (yard).

لاری lārī, one third of a rupee.

آدھیلی adhēlī,	} half a rupee piece.
آدھیو ādhiō,	

آدھیری adhirī, half a gaḷ, or half a دامیری (دَمِرِي).

Chapter XI.

Pronouns.

§. 31.

The personal pronoun is in Sindhī of two kinds: it is either used as an absolute pronoun or as a suffix, acceding to nouns, adverbs or verbs.

I. PERSONAL PRONOUNS.

The Sindhī has a personal pronoun only for the first and second person Singular and Plural, the third person is made up by means of demonstrative pronouns. A remnant of the old (now lost) personal pronoun of the third person has been preserved in the pronominal suffix of the third person, as we shall see hereafter.

1) The personal pronoun of the first person.

There are two forms in common use for the first person Singular, **آئون** āũ, and shortened **آ** ā; besides these **مان** mā or **مون** mū are also dialectically used in Sirō.

The great deterioration of the language is strikingly illustrated by the present forms of the absolute pronouns. The Prākṛit form is **अहं** or **अहसं** (Sansk. **अहं**); but in the corrupted Apabhraṃśa dialect, the mother of the modern Sindhī, we meet already the form **हउं**, from **हमु** (by elision of **म**), from which the Sindhī āũ has drawn its origin (Lassen, §. 183); the other form ā has been simply contracted from **अहं**. The two other forms mā and mū are originally the Accusative, Sanskrit **मां** (Prākṛit shortened **मं**), and are still used as the Formative Singular.

The Genitive **منهن** mūhū or **منهن** mūhē, with the adjective affix **جو** jō, is to be referred to the Prākṛit Genitive **मह** (Sansk. **मम**), Apabhraṃśa **महु** (Lassen §. 183), the vowels being nasalized in Sindhī.

The Nominative Plural is **آسین** asī, Prākṛit **अम्हे** (Sansk. root **अस्म**); in Sindhī m has been elided and final ē changed to ī (= ī); the Formative **آسان** asā

corresponds to the Prākṛit Genitive Plural **अम्हाण** (Sansk. **अस्माकं**).

Annotation. In the cognate dialects the Accusative has similarly been used for the Nominative; Marāṭhī *mī* (inferior Prākṛit dialect **मई**, Lassen §. 183, 2), Formative *ma* (Prākṛit Genitive **मह**); Hindūstānī *maī*, Formative *mujhē* or *mujh* (Prākṛit Genitive **मज्ज**); Panjābī: *maī*, Formative *maī*; but Gujārātī: *hū*, Formative *ma*. In the Plural the Marāṭhī has in the Nominative *āhmī*, in the Formative *āhmā*; the Hindūstānī *ham*, Formative *ham* or *hamō*; the Panjābī *asē*, Formative *asā*; the Gujārātī *hamē* or *hamō*, Formative *ham* or *hamō*.

Inflection of the first personal pronoun.

آئون āũ or آن ā, I.

SINGULAR.

Nom.	آئون āũ, آن ā; مان mā, مون mũ;
Format.	{ مون mũ, مان mā; آن ā.
Instrum.	
Genit.	مون جو mũhũ jō; منهن جو mũhē jō; مون جو mũ jō; آن جو ā jō.
Dative.	{ مون کھی mũ khē; مان کھی mā khē.
Accus.	
Ablat.	مونھان mũhā; مون کھان mũk hā or مان کھان mā khā.

PLURAL.

Nom.	آسین asī, we.
Format.	{ آسان asā; آسانھن asāhē; آسانھن asāhũ.
Instrum.	
Genit.	آسان جو asā jō, آسانھن جو asāhē jō.
Dative.	{ آسان کھی asā khē; آسانھن کھی asāhē khē.
Accus.	
Ablat.	آسان کھان asā khā etc.

آن جي ڏٺها هون ڏ آله ڪارن ڪاله ڪرئو
نين منهن جا رُون راتوڏينهان ان ڪهي

If they have been seen by you, for God's sake tell (me).
After them my eyes weep night and day. Sh. Hus.
X, 22.

ڪي ڏ ڇهڏينديس جاني ان جو قيامتا

By no means I shall give up my friend till the day
of resurrection. Sh. Kêd. IV, Epil.

قاضي مون ڪهي ڪينئي هينين ميان پستو مريض

Kāzī, why doest thou beat me, having seen me ill,
o friend! Maj. 251.

مونهانئي اڪي هوند ڪهريون سبه ڪهڙا ڪهني

Even before me all would have perhaps slid down
(into the river) having taken their jars. Sh. Suh. I, 4.

آهيس آر آله سين اسان ڏهن ايمان

She in bashful before God and faithful towards us.
Maj. 671.

اسانهون وهي وٽرو ڏينهن سپيريان سين

Our love flows excessively with our sweethearts.
Maj. 675.

2) The personal pronoun of the second person.

The pronoun of the second person is تُو tū, which
points rather to the Sansk. त्व, than to the Prāk. तुम;
the Formative and Instrumentalis تو tō is derived from
the Prāk. Instrum. तुए; the Genitive تَنهُ tūhū or تنهن
tūhē (with جو etc.) corresponds to the Apabhraṃśa Ge-
nitive तुह.

The Plural of this pronoun presents a great variety of forms, as: **تَوَهِينَ** tavhī, **تَوِينِ** tavī, **تَهِينِ** tahī, **تَئِينِ** tai; or: **أَوِهِي** avhī (avhē), **أَوِينِ** avē, **أَهِي** ahī, **آئِينِ** āī, **آئِينِ** āī.

The forms tavhī etc. have been derived from the Prākṛit Nom. Plural **तुम्हे**, tū having been changed to tav, and m elided. The forms avhī, ahī etc. are very remarkable. As initial t is never elided, they cannot well be derived from tavhī etc. It is therefore very probable, that these forms are to be referred to the Sansk. Plural **युष्मे** = Prāk. **युम्हे**, and with elision of initial y, umhē; in Sindhī 'u' has been changed to 'av' and m elided, as in tavhī.

The Formative **تَوَهَّانِ** tavhā, **أَوَهَّانِ** avhā corresponds to the Prāk. Genitive Plural **तुम्हाणं**.

Annotation. The cognate dialects agree in all essential points with the Sindhī. Marāṭhī: tū, Formative tū or tūja (Prākṛit **तुह** or **तुज्ज**; Nom. Plural tuhmī and Formative tuhmā. Hindūstānī: tū or tai; Genitive tē-rā (mē-rā), rā being used in this instance to form a pronominal adjective; the Formative tujh is properly the Prākṛit Genitive **तुज्ज**, and the Instrumentalis tū coincides with the Sindhī tō. The Nomin. Plural tum is shortened from the Prākṛit **तुम्हे**, and the forms tumhā (tumhā-rā), tumhō, tumh point back to the Prākṛit Genitive Plural **तुम्हाणं**. Panjābī: tū, Genitive tē-rā, Instrument. tai (Prākṛit **तइ**), Formative tai (Prākṛit Genitive **ते**). Nom. Plural: tusī, Formative: tusā. Gujarātī: tū, Genitive: tāhā-rō, Formative ta; Nom. Plural: tamē or tamō, Formative tam or tamō.

Inflection of the second personal pronoun.

SINGULAR.

Nom. **تُو** tū, thou.
 Format. }
 Instrum. } **تَو** tō.

Gen. جُو تُوهُنْ tūhū jō (tūhē jō); جُو تُو tō jō.

Dative. }
Accus. } تُو کَہي tō khē.

Ablat. تُوہَان tōhā; تُو کَہَان tō khā.

PLURAL.

Nom. تَوِہِيں tavhī; تَوِيں tavi; تَہِيں tahi; تَئِيں tai.
اَوِہِيں avhī (avhē); اَوِيں avi; اَہِيں ahī; اَنَہِيں
āī; اَنَہِيں āī.

Format. }
Instrum. } تَوِہَان tavhā, تَہَان tahā; اَوِہَان avhā; اَہَان ahā;
آں ā.

Gen. { تَوِہَان جُو تَوِہَان جُو }
 { tavhā jō etc.; avhā jō; } جُو آہِيں āhē jō.
 { تَوِہَان جُو اَوِہَان جُو }
 { tavāhē jō; avāhē jō }

Dative. }
Accus. } تَوِہَان کَہي tavhā khē; اَوِہَان کَہي avhā khē.

Ablat. تَوِہَان کَہَان tavhā khā etc.

The emphatic ī or hī, hī is very frequently joined to this pronoun in all its forms.

تُوئِيں رَہِيں رُوَحِ مِيں تُوہِي دَانِہَ نِيں

Even thou remainest in my heart; only towards thee my eyes (are directed). Maj. 211.

سَتَہِم سَاہِيہِيں جَا طَعْنَا تُوہِي لَہ

Even for thy sake I have borne the tauntings of my companions. Sh. Mūm. Rānō I, Epil.

تُوہِي سَندُو مِيہَنُو بَہِي کَري لَدَہُوَم

Even thy reproach has been welcomed by me. Maj. 341.

سَارِيَانْ گَا نَدَ سَرِيرَ مِینِ طَاقَتِ تَوْهَانِ دَهَارَ

Separate from thee I cannot find any strength in my body. Sh. Suh. II, 4.

مِیَانِ مَنَعَ مُونِ کَهِیِ اَنُئِنِ گَا مَهَ کَرِیُو

O friends, do not hinder me at all! Maj. 95.

چَهَنِ چَهْدِیْنَدِیْسِ کِیِ نَدَ کِیِ دُوسَ آوَانِهِنِ جُو دَرُ

I shall not at all give up (your) shed nor your door, o friend! Sh. Barvō S. I, 16.

کَامِنِ آهِنِ جِی کُرَ جِی آڈِ وَدَاثِیِ آهِیِ

O handsome lady! the mark of your family is greatness. Sh. Um. Mār. II, 8.

پِرَنَیْ پُنَجَنَاءِ اَنُئُونِ آوَانِ سِینِ اُورِیَانِ

After my friend (is gone) I talk over with you my misfortunes. Sh. Hus. VI, 5.

II. DEMONSTRATIVE PRONOUNS.

§. 32.

1) The proximate demonstrative pronoun is **هِي** hī, **هي** hē or **هِي** hīu (also pronounced: **هِي** hīu); in Lār initial h is commonly dropped, as: **اي** ī, **اي** ē, **اي** īu. The base of this pronoun is ī (cf. Bopp §. 360 sqq.); in the Formative another pronominal base is substituted, i-na, (Bopp §. 369; compare also the inflexion of **इदम्** 'this' in Sansk.).

Annotation. The Marāṭhī form of this demonstrative is hā, Formative: yā (Prākrit **अयं** = Sansk. **अयम्**); Hindūstānī: yeh, Formative: is (Sansk. **अस्य**); Plural: yē, Formative: in. Panjābī: ih, Formative: is, Instrument.: in; Plural: ih, Formative: inā.

Inflexion of the proximate demonstrative.

هِي hī, this.

Nom. هِي hī; هِي hē; هِي hīu or هِي hīu, masc., 'this'; 'he'.

هِي hī; هِي hē; هِي hīa or هِي hīa, fem., 'this'; 'she'.

Format. } هِن hina or اِن ina, com.

Instrum. } هِن hina jō or اِن ina jō.

Genit. هِن hina khē etc.

Dative. هِن hina khē etc.

Accusat. } هِي hī etc.

Ablat. هِن hina khā etc.; هِن hīnā.

PLURAL.

Nom. هِي hī; هِي hē, 'these'; 'they'; com.

Format. } هِن hine or اِن ine; هِن hinane or اِن inane.

Instrum. } هِن hine jō; هِن hinane jō.

Genit. هِن hine khē; هِن hinane khē.

Dative. هِن hine khē etc.

Accus. } هِي hī; هِي hē.

Ablat. هِن hine khā etc.

There is also an emphatic form of this pronoun:
هِي hēī, this very one.

پَرَن پُنْهَنِي پُتھ مِين اِي سَعَادَت سَنْدِيَام

To travel after Punhū, this is my happiness. Sh.
Maṣḍ. III, 1.

هِن پَانِي سِين پَانْهِن جُو مُور نہ مَتھو دھوہ

With this water she does not wash at all her head.
Sh. Suh. Chōt. 3.

مَتَّوِي مُورَانِثِين مَن مِينَ اِنَ كَهِي هُتِي

Nothing but wickedness has been in his heart.
Maj. 244.

هَذِهِين نَه هُونْدُو هِنَان پُوَه عَالَم مِين

Never it will be after this in the world. Sh. Khā-hōr. III, 11.

جِيڪو هِن نَنْدَهِن مَنجَهَان هِيڪَرِي كَهِي تَهْدَهِي پَانِي

جُو ڪَتُورُو پِيَارِي

Whoever shall give to drink unto one of these little ones a cup of cold water. Matth. 10, 42.

خُدَاه هِن¹ پَهَن مَوْن اِبْرَاهِيمَ لَاه پُتَرِ كَرِي تَهو سَكَهِي

God can make sons for Abraham from these stones.
Matth. 3, 9.

2) The emphatic proximate demonstrative is اِهَو ihō, 'this very'; 'this here'. It is properly a compound pronoun, consisting of the demonstrative base 'i', and 'hō' = Sansk. **ह** (**इह**), and therefore inflected according to both terminations.

SINGULAR.

Nom. اِهَو ihō; اِيَهَو ihō; اِئَو iō; اِيئَو iō; masc.²)

اِهَا ihā; اِيَهَا ihā; اِئَا iā; اِيئَا iā; fem.

Format. } اِنِهِي inhē; اِنِهِي inhī; اِنِهِي inhia; اِنِهِي ineha; com.
Instrum. }

Genit. اِنِهِي inhē jō etc.

Dative. اِنِهِي inhē khē etc.

1) It very rarely occurs, that the Singular of this pronoun is (after the manner of an adjective) joined to a noun in the Plural.

2) In poetry the form اِيَه ehū also is to be met with.

Accus.	{ انهي کهي inhē khē etc.
	{ اهو ihō; m.; اها ihā, fem.
Ablat.	انهي کهان inhē khā etc.

PLURAL.

Nom.	اهي ihē, com.
Format.	{ انهن inhane; انهن inhine; انهن inhē.
Instrum.	
Genit.	انهن جو inhane jō etc.
Dative.	انهن کهي inhane khē etc.
	{ انهن inhane khē etc.
Accus.	{ اهي ihē, com.
Ablat.	انهن کهان inhane khā etc.

The emphatic *ī* may also be added to this pronoun, to point the object out with still greater distinctness, as: اهوئي ihōī, this very same person, fem. اهاي ihāī; Format. انهيئي inhēī; Plur. اهيئي ihēī; Format. انهيئي inhēī or commonly: انهن inhī.

اهو سائتي جو سبب جو بُڏا اُڪاري ٻار مان

Even this is the cause of the Lord, that he draws forth the drowned ones from the eddy. Sh. Surāg. II, 16.

عاشق عبدُ الطيف چري انهي پڻ پيا

The lovers, says Abd-ul-Latīf, have fallen into this very reflection. Sh. Kal. I, 8.

اهي ڪم الاهي نه ڪنن مين کير ڪهري

Even these are the works of God; otherwise who wouldstep down into the whirlpools? Sh. Suh. VI, 13.

3) The demonstrative pronoun **اِجھو** *ijhō*, 'this one present' is only used in the Nom. Sing. and Plural. It is apparently compounded of the base 'i' and the Sansk. pronoun **सः**, s being now and then changed in Sindhi to j, and even to jh (see: Introduction §. 11, 2).

SINGULAR.

Nom. **اِجھو** *ijhō*; fem. **اِجھا** *ijhā*.

PLURAL.

Nom. **اِجھي** *ijhē*, com.

اِجھي تہا اچن کاک ککوریہا کاپڑی

They come here; the faqīrs have been made tawny by the Kāk (river). Sh. Mūm. Rānō II, 3.

4) The remote demonstrative pronoun is **هُو** *hū* or **هُو** *hō*, in Lār pronounced **اُو** *ū* or **او** *ō*. The base of this pronoun, *hū*, is not in use in Sanskrit, but in Prākṛit a remnant of it has been preserved in the Genitive **हे**. Its theme must have been (according to Bopp, Comp. Gramm. §. 341) *sva*, from which 'hu' has been regularly formed. Its inflection quite agrees with that of **هي** *hī*, only *hu* (*u*) being substituted instead of 'hi' in the Formative.

Annotation. The Marāṭhī does not know this pronominal base; it only uses *tō*, corresponding to the Sindhi *sō*. In Panjābī we find *uh*, Instrum. *un*, and Formative *us*, Plur. *uh*, Formative *unā*. The Hindūstānī uses: *woh*, Formative *us*; Plural *wē*, Format. *un* (Hinduī: *wah*, Formative *vā*; Plur. *wē*, Formative: *un*). The Gujārātī, like the Marāṭhī, has only the theme *tē*.

SINGULAR.

Nom. **هُو** *hū*, **هُو** *hō*, **اُو** *ū*, **او** *ō*, masc. } that; he, she.
هُو *hū* (**هُو** *hō*), **هُي** *hua*; **اُو** *ū*, **اِي** *ua*, fem. }

Format.	{	هُنْ huna, اُنْ una, com.
Instrum.		
Dative.		هُنْ كِهِي huna khē etc.
Accus.	{	هُنْ كِهِي huna khē etc.
		هُوْ hū, هُيْ hua etc.
Ablat.		هُنَاْ hunā, هُنَهَاْ hunahā, اُنَاْ unā; هُنْ كِهَانْ huna khā.

PLURAL.

Nom.	هُوْ hū; هُوْ hō; هُوءْ hūe; اُوءْ ūe; هُوءْ hōe, com.
Format.	{ هُنَانْ hunane, اُنَانْ unane; هُنْ hune, اِنْ une.
Instrum.	
	(emphatic: هُنَيْنْ hunī).
Dative.	هُنَانْ كِهِي hunane khē; هُنْ كِهِي hune khē etc.
Accus.	{ هُنَانْ كِهِي hunane khē etc.
	هُوْ hū; هُوْ hō etc.
Ablat.	هُنَانْ كِهَانْ hunane khā etc.

پَرْدِيَهَان پَنْدَه كَرِي هَلِي آيُو هُوْ

Having travelled from a foreign country he had come. Sh. Sōr. I, 3.

هُوءْ جَا پَائِن پِير مِين تَنَهِن اَن جَتِي نَه جِيهِي

I am not worthy of that shoe, which they put on (their) foot. Sh. Kōh. III, 8.

اَن دَر سِيْثِي اَكِهِيَا جِن وَجَايُو وَجُوْ

At that door those are accepted, who have lost their existence. Sh. Surāg. I, Epil. 2.

هُوءْ مَحَلْ هُوءْ مِهْتُون هُوءْ قَصَر قَاصِن

Those are the mansions, those the mosques, those the palaces of the Kāzīs. Maj. 137.

كُهُوْمَا كَالِهَ كَهْنِي اُنِ رِدَهَا اَوْتَرِ اَسْرِي

Yesterday were raised by them the masts by the support of the north-wind. Sh. Surāg. III, 1.

5) The emphatic remote demonstrative is اُوْهُ uhō, 'that very'; it is formed in the same way as اِهْوِ ihō, only 'u' being substituted for 'i'.

SINGULAR.

Nom.	اُوْهُ uhō or اُوْهُ uō, masc.
	اُوْهَ uhā or اُوْهَ uā, fem.
Format.	اُنْهِي unhē; اُنْهِي unhia; اُنْهِي uniha, com.
Instrum.	
Genit.	اُنْهِي جُو unhē jō etc.
Dative.	اُنْهِي كِهِي unhē khē etc.
Accus.	{ اُنْهِي كِهِي unhē khē etc.
	اُوْهُ uhō, m.; اُوْهَ uhā, fem.
Ablat.	اُنْهِي كِهَان unhē khā.

PLURAL.

Nom.	اُوْهِي uhē, com.
Format.	اُنْهَان unhane; اُنْهَان unhine; اُنْهَان unhē.
Instrum.	
Genit.	اُنْهَان جُو unhane jō etc.
Dative.	اُنْهَان كِهِي unhanē khē etc.
Accus.	{ اُنْهَان كِهِي unhane khē etc.
	اُوْهِي uhē, com.
Ablat.	اُنْهَان كِهَان unhane khā etc.

The emphatic ī may also be added to this pronoun, اُوْهِي uhōī, 'that very same', fem. اُوْهِي uhāī,

Formative: **اُنْهِي** un^hēī, **اُنْهِي** un^hī or **اُنْهِي** un^hāī.

Plural: **اُنْهِي** uhēī; Formative: **اُنْهَانِي** unhanī or **اُنْهِي** un^hī.

اَکِي تَهي سَئي اُنْهي سَندي کَالْهَري

The story of that very (person) was heard before.
Sh. Khāhōrī I, 11.

اُنْهي کَهَر مِين اَچي اُنْهي بَار کَهي ۽ اُنْه جِي مَاءَ مَرِيَمَ

کَهي ڏِسي هُن کَهي پيرين پَئي پُوجَانُون

Having come to that very house (and) having seen that very child and its mother Mary, they fell at his feet and worshipped (him). Matth. II, 11.

هي چَنڌَرُ اُهوئي جو هِت پَسي تَهو پَرئي کَهي

This one sees the moon, and that one, who is there, (sees his) friend. Sh. Kambh. I, 3.

سَڌا اُهيئي تُو کَهي سَارِي

جي نَ کَڏِهيَن مَنجَهِ کَامَ کُڏَارِي

Even those remember thee always

Who never live in a town. Sh. Sārangu II, Epil.

اُنْهِيَن ڏَان اَحْمَدِ چَوي اَهِمَ سِڪَ سَرَسُ

Even towards them, says Aḥmad, I have an immense longing. Umar Mārui X. ¹⁾

6) The remote demonstrative pronoun **اُجْهَوُ** ujhō, that one present, is, like **اِجْهَوُ** ijhō, only used in the Nom. Singular and Plural. It is compounded of the base 'u' and the Sansk. pronoun **सः** (see: **اُجْهَوُ**).

1) A poem, different from that contained in the Shāha jō Risāls.

SINGULAR.

Nom. اُجھو ūjhō; fem. اُجھا ūjhā.

PLURAL.

Nom. اُجھي ūjhē, com.

§. 33.

III. THE RELATIVE PRONOUN.

The relative pronoun in Sindhī is جو jō, 'who', 'what', Sansk. यो, Prāk. जो; the Formative Singular جنھن jāhē corresponds to the Prākrit Genitive जस्स = जह, the vowels having been nasalized in Sindhī. The Nom. Plural is جي jē, as in Prākrit जे, and the Formative جن jine or جن jane points to the Prākrit Genitive Plur. जाण, ā having been shortened in Sindhī.

Annotation. The cognate dialects do not differ essentially from the Sindhī; Marāṭhī: Sing. jō, Plur. jē; Gujarātī: Sing. jē, Plural jēō; Hindūst.: Sing. jō or jau; Formative jis; Plur. jō, Formative jin or jinh; Panjābī: jō, Instrum. jin, Formative jis; Plur. jō, Format. jinā, Bangālī: jē or jine, Formative jāhā (Prāk. जास); Plur. jāhā-rā.

SINGULAR.

Nom. جو jō, masc.; جا jā, fem.

Format. }
Instrum. } جنھن jāhē, com.

Genitive. جنھن jāhē jō etc.

Dative. جنھن کي jāhē khē.

Accus. جا jā; جو jō; جنھن کي jāhē khē.

Ablat. جنھن کان jāhē khā.

PLURAL.

Nom. جي jē, com.

Format. }
 Instrum. } جَنِ jane; جِنِ jine; جِنَهِنِ jinhane; جِنِهِنِ jinhine.
 جِنِ jine, جِنِ jine.

Genit. جَوِ jane jō etc.

Dative. جِهِي jane khē etc.

Accus. جِهِي jane khē; جِي jē.

Ablat. جِهِنِ jane khā etc.

In poetry the emphatic *ī* very frequently is added to the Formative Sing. and Plur. of this pronoun, as:

Format. Sing. جَاهِي jāhī; Format. plur. جَانِي jānī (also written جَانِي jānī), جَانِهِي jānhī (to be well distinguished from the Format. Sing.)

هُوَ جَا پڪَ پُنُهَنِي جِي جَتِيَان تَنِهِنِ چَوَاڪُو

That, which is the spittle of Punhū, of that will I lick a drop. Sh. Sah. II, Epil. 2.

جَنِهِنِ كِهِي سِڪَ سَاهَرُ جِي سَا كِهِيَرُ نَه پُجِي كِهَاتَ

جَنِ كِهِي عِشَقَ جِي اَوَسَاتَ سِي وَاهَرُ بَهَائِنِ وَكِهَرُونِ

She, who has a longing for Sāharu asks not for a slope in the ferry;

Those, who thirst after love, consider the brooks as small steps. Sh. Suh. III, 4.

جِي سَڄِيهِي سُنِيُون سِي مَرُ سَوَرُ سَهَنِ

Those who have fallen asleep on the evening, suffer pains indeed. Sh. Khāhōrī III, Epil. 2.

وِينْدَا سِي اِيْمَانِ سِينِ كَلِمُو جِنِينِ وَاتِ

They will depart with faith, in whose mouth the creed is. Maj. 37.

أَمِّرْ وَنَجِي أَنْ جَرَكْهُوَ أَتَنْ وَجَّ مَانَ
كَتَيْمِ جَنْهَيْنِ كَانِ سَوْ كَوْهِيَارُ كَيْمِ وَتَوْ

O mother, go and bring me the spinning wheel
from the courtyard.

The mountaineer, for whose sake I have spun, is
gone to Kēč. Sh. Hus. III, 8.

يَكُونُ سِي يَنْ سِرَ جَنْهَيْنِ جَا سَتِ مَيْنِ

Those drink draughts, whose heads are devoted. Sh.
Jam. Kal. II, 25.

§. 34.

IV. THE CORRELATIVE PRONOUN.

The pronoun سَوْ sō is nearly always used as the
correlative of جَوْ; it is seldom found isolated, in which
case it retains its original signification 'that'. It cor-
responds to the Sansk. pronoun सः, Prāk. सो. The
Formative Sing. تَنْهِنِ tāhē is derived from the Prāk.
Genitive तस्स (Sansk. तस्य) = तह; the Nom. Plur. سِي
sē differs so far from the Sanskrit and Prākrit (ते),
as having retained the base of the Singular; the For-
mative Plural تَنِ tane is to be referred to the Prāk.
Genitive ताण, ā having been shortened, as in जाण.

Annotation. All the kindred idioms know this pronoun;
Marāṭhī: tō, Plur. tē; Gujārātī likewise: tē, Plur. tēō; Hindūst.:
sō or taun, Formative tis; Nom. Plur. sō or taun, Formative
tin, tinh or tinhō. Panjābī: sō, Instrument. tin, Formative
tis; Plur. sō, Formative tinā. Bangālī: sē, Formative tāhā,
Plur. tāhā-rā.

SINGULAR.

Nom. سَوْ sō; fem. سَا sā.

Format.	} تَنْهٍ tāhē.
Instrum.	
Genit.	جُو تَنْهٍ tāhē jō etc.
Dative.	كِهِي تَنْهٍ tāhē khē.
Accus.	كِهِي تَنْهٍ tāhē khē; سَو sō; سَا sā.
Ablat.	تَنْهَان tāhā; تَنْهٍ كِهَان tāhē khā.

PLURAL.

Nom.	سِي sē; com.
Format.	} تَنِ tane; تِي tine; تِنَنِ tinane, تِنِي tinine;
Instrum.	
	تِنْهَانِ tinhane; تِنْهِي tinhine.
Genit.	جُو تَنِ tane jō etc.
Dative.	كِهِي تَنِ tane khē etc.
Accus.	كِهِي تَنِ tane khē; سِي sē.
Ablat.	تَنْبَان taneā; تَنِ كِهَان tāne khā etc.

The emphatic *ī* may also be joined to this pronoun,
 as: Nom. Sing. سَوِي sōī, fem. سَائِي sāī; Format. تَنْهِي تَانِي tāhī. Nom. Plur. سِي سِي sēī, Format. تَانِي تَانِي tanī or: تَنْهِي تَانِي tanhī.

سَوِ هِي سَوِ هُو سَوِ أَجَلُ سَوِ أَلَلُّ

سَوِ پَرِين سَوِ پَسَاهُ سَوِ وِپَرِي سَوِ وَاهِرُو

He is this, he is that; he is death, he is Allah.

He is friend, he is breath; he is enemy, he is helper.

Sh. Kal. I, 19.

سُوْمِرَا سَاهِي تَنْهِي سَتِي وَجْهَ مَ سَنَكْهَرُون

O Sūmirō! do not confine in fetters that chaste woman! Sh. Um. Mār. III, 9.

تَنهين ديلَه ڪَٽوم وَڇَن ويڙهيڇَن سين

In that very time I have made an engagement with the inhabitants of the jungle. Sh. Um. Mār. I, 1.

جڏهن ستيون جي پتھر پير ڌرڪها ڪري

تڏهن تنهين ڪهي سانه ستيئي جهڏڻو

When they were fallen asleep, having stretched out their feet on the bed,
Then they were left behind by the caravan, whilst sleeping. Sh. Kōh. I, 8.

جنهين سَندي منَه مين سوين سَهس نڪن

تِنان وَڏهڻو هيڪڙو تَه ڪهڙو تهڙو تن

In whose face there are hundred thousands of noses,
Cut off from those one, then what obligation is it to them? Sh. Mūm. VI, 22.

§. 35.

V. INTERROGATIVE PRONOUNS.

1) The interrogative pronoun ڪيرُ kēru, who?

This pronoun is only used absolutely. The Nominative base ڪيرُ kēru is derived from the Sanskrit क्रीडश, Prāk. केरिस (see Introduction §. 2, 6); but the Formative Singular ڪنهن kāhē, and the Format. Plural ڪي kane point back to the Sansk. कः; Genitive Sing. कस्य, Prāk. कस्स = कह; Genitive Plural in Prākrit काण, the ā of which has been shortened in Sindhī.

Annotation. The cognate idioms fall back on the Sansk. base कः (i. e. on the Accus. Sing. कं), as Marāṭhī and Gujarātī: kōṇ; Hindūst.: kaun, Format. kis; Plural kaun, Format.

kin, kinh, kinhō; Panjābī: kaṇ, Instrument. kin, Format. kis;
Plural kaṇ, Formative kinā. Bangālī: kē, Formative kâhā;
Plural kâhā-rā.

SINGULAR.

Nom. کِرُ kēru; fem. کِرَ kēra.

Format. }
Instrum. } کَنِهَن kâhē, com.

Genit. کَنِهَن جُو kâhē jō etc.

Dative. کَنِهَن کَهِ kâhē khē.

Accus. { کَنِهَن کَهِ kâhē khē.
کِرُ kēru; کِرَ kēra.

Ablat. کَنِهَن کَہَان kâhē khā.

PLURAL.

Nom. کِرَ kēre, com.

Format. }
Instrum. } کِن kane, کِنِ kine; کِنِن kinane, کِنِنِ kinine;
کِنِهَن kinhane, کِنِهِن kinhine.

Dative. کِن کَهِ kane khē etc.

Accus. { کِن کَهِ kane khē etc.
کِرَ kēre.

Ablat. کِن کَہَان khane khā etc.

کِرُ آئِنِهِن کَہَان ھَلِین کُجَارُو نَالُو

Who art thou? from whence proceedest thou? what
is thy name? Maj. 167.

کِرَ بَانِبِهَن کِن جِي کِرُ جَانِي کِنَاس

Who is the brahman woman? whose (Genit. Plur.)
is she? who knows her? Sh. Maṣḍ. I, 14.

کیر هُئا کيڏانه. وٽا کِهڙي هُئا جاتِ

Who have they been? wither are they gone? of what class have they been? Maj. 659.

2) The interrogative pronoun چها čhā, what?

This pronoun is only used in a neuter sense and has no Plural. The Genitive چها جو čhā jō etc. signifies: of what sort, of what kind? With the postpositions کهي khē, کان kāne, کهاڻ khā, it signifies: what for? to what purpose? why? — It is derived from the Sansk. किम् what.

Annotation. The Hindūstānī uses kiā, the Panjābī kī and kiā, Format. kās; the Marāṭhī kāy (Formative kasā); Bangālī: ki, Format. kāha. Hinduī: kahā, Format. kāhē.

جي لرن جو سوان وڃي تہ چها سان سلونو تهئي

If the savour of the salt goes, whit what shall it be salted? Matth. 5, 13.

3) The interrogative pronoun کوه kōhu, what?

This pronoun is only used in a neuter sense, just as the preceding one, and is indeclinable. It signifies very frequently 'why', 'what for'. In poëtry it is occasionally shortened to کُه kuhu.

As to its derivation it is identical with چها (= kā, kahā), ā having been changed to ō in this instance. The same is also the case in Hinduī, where kaun, who? makes the Formative either in kā, kōhe or kāhe.

جياريس سنڀهار کوه ڪريندم گڏجي

I have been made alive by remembering (him); what will he do to me having met (me)? Sh. Suh. IV, 7.

سَدَهَڙِيَا سَرِي جُون کُه پِڄَارُون کن

Why do the vacillating ones talk of strong wine?
Sh. Kal. II, 25.

4) The interrogative pronouns کيهو kēhō,
کيهرو kēhārō and کُڄارو kujārō, what? which?

These three interrogative pronouns may either be used absolutely or adjectively with a substantive. Instead of کيهو kēhō the form کيئو kēō is also used in Lār; کيهرو kēharō may also be written کيهرو kēharō or it may be contracted to کيرهو kērō; about their derivation see Introd. §. 2, 6. They are inflected regularly. The Dative Sing. of کُڄارو, i. e. کُڄارِي کهي kujārē khē and the Ablative of the fem. Sing. کُڄارِيَان kujārēā (frequently also written کُڄارِيَا) is generally used as an interrogative adverb, 'why?' 'what for?'

کيهي پَر پَرِين ڏکهي ڏانارَن ري

In which wise wilt thou, o afflicted one! pass (thy time) without the bountiful? Sh. Jam. Kal. IV, 16.

تهئو کُڄارو قيسَ کهي آچئو اينِي چَوَن

What has happened to Qais? having come they speak thus. Maj. 39.

کُڄارِي کهي تُو کئو هيئِي پَنهن جو حَال

Why has thy own state been made by thee thus?
Maj. 655.

§. 36.

VI. INDEFINITE PRONOUNS.

- 1) The indefinite pronoun کَوِ kō, any one;
some one.

The root of this indefinite pronoun is the same as that of the interrogative (Sansk. कोऽपि); the Formative Sing. and Plural is therefore identical in both pronouns.

SINGULAR.

Nom.	کَوِ kō; fem. کَا kā.
Format.	کَنهنِ kāhē, com.
Instrum.	
Genit.	کَنهنِ جو kāhē jō etc.
Dative.	کَنهنِ کهي kāhē khē.
Accus.	کَنهنِ کهي kāhē khē. کَوِ kō; کَا kā.
Ablat.	
	کَنهنِ کهان kāhē khā.

PLURAL.

Nom.	کي kē, com.
Format.	کِنِ kane; کِينِ kine.
Instrum.	
Genit.	کِنِ جو kane jō etc.
Dative.	کِنِ کهي kane khē.
Accus.	کِنِ کهي kane khē. کي kē.
Ablat.	
	کِنِ کهان kane khā.

کَمِ نَ اِيئَنده کَوِ بِيئُو پَنهنِ جِي پُوکهي ڊي
کَنو نَ ڏين تهُو کَنهنِ کهي تُون مِيئَرُو مَالِ دهرين

Nothing else will be of use to thee, except that,
which thou hast sown thyself;

Not a grain givest thou to any one, accumulating
thou hoarest up treasures. Mēnghō 10.

کي چيکن چين ٿي کي لهن سَرَقَنَدِن سَار

Some (lightenings) flash over China, some take notice
of the Samarqandis. Sh. Sār. IV, 12.

کَرِبان بي نہ کن آهر انهن آهيان

I do not other (work) for any, even his I am. Sh.
Um. Mār. VII, 5.

The emphatic form of this pronoun is also in
frequent use:

SINGULAR.

Nom. کُوئي kōī, any one; fem. کائي kāī.

Format. کُنهن kāhī.

PLURAL.

Nom. کيئي kēī, or کئين kaī, کائين kāī.

Format. کئي kanī or کنهن kanhī.

دَرِ دُوسَن جي کئئين جو هُوندا مُون چيها مُشتاق

Because there will be at the door of my friends
some (= several) longing like me. Sh. Jam. Kal. VIII,
Epil.

کُنهن کُنهن ماڙهين پيئي کَل کائي

To some, some men some (peculiar) knowledge has
been allotted. Sh. Sōr. I, 17.

Instead of the emphatic form of this pronoun کُو
kō may also be repeated:

ڪو ڪو ڏين ڪلال جو پتي سر پئون

Some reproach of the liquor-seller (fem.) has fallen upon their gall-bag. Sh. Jam. Kal. IV, 18.

A neuter form of ڪو is ڪي kī, something, a little; it is not inflected.

ڪنو ڏهيلي ڏاکھري ڪمندان ڪي کار

With hard labour scoop a little out the heart from the sugar-cane. Golden Alphab. VI, 8.

With a negation ڪو signifies: no one, nobody, and ڪي kī: nothing; for emphasis' sake they are frequently reduplicated, in which case the negation is put between them, as: ڪو نه ڪو kō na kō, nobody at all, ڪي نه ڪي kī na kī, nothing at all.

هن زماني مين بهلو سو بهائي
جنهن ويا نه وجهه ڪو نه پتر نه پهائي
نه ڪي هٿ نه هڻ ڪي نه ڪهتو نه ڪهاڻي
هيته پراڻي متهي جهند لڄ نه لو ڪاڻي

In this time that one is a good comrade
Who has no children, no buffalo calf, no son and
no fortune;

Nothing in his bundle, nothing in his lap, no blanket,
no sack,

A rope, at the bottom old and at the top broken,
and no place whatever to live in. Golden Alphab. VII.

هتوئين هٿاهه تهينده ڪٽنبه مڃهون ڪو نه ڪو

Not any one from thy family will be thy companion from hence. Mēnghō 3.

When **ڪو** is followed by the auxiliary verb **آهي** *āhe* (is) with a negation, a contraction takes places, as: **ڪونهي** *kōnhē* (instead of: **ڪو نه آهي**) there is nobody (m.), **ڪانهي** *kānhē* (f.); **ڪونهڪو** *kōnhēkō*, there is nobody at all (m.), **ڪانهڪا** *kanhēkā* (f.); **ڪينهيڪي** *kīhēkī*, there is nothing at all.

2) The compound indefinite pronoun

جيڪو *jēkō*, whoever.

The original form of this pronoun is **جوکو** *jōkō*, fem. **جاکا** *jākā*, which alone is in use in the Formative Sing. and Plural, in the Nominative Sing. and Plural however the form **جيڪو** *jēkō* preponderates; it is composed of **جي** *jē*, if, and **ڪو** *kō*, literally: if any one. Instead of **جيڪو** or **جوکو** the reduplicated relative **جوڙو** *jōjō* (and as its correlative **سوسو** *sōsō*) is likewise in use; it is inflected in the same way as the single **جو** (or **سو**).

The neutral form of this pronoun, **جيڪي** *jēkī*, whatever, is not inflected.

SINGULAR.

Nom.	جيڪو <i>jēkō</i> ; fem. جيڪا <i>jēkā</i> .
Format.	} جنهن ڪنهن <i>jāhē kāhē</i> .
Instrum.	
Genit.	جنهن ڪنهن جو <i>jāhē kāhē jō</i> etc.
Dative.	جنهن ڪنهن کي <i>jāhē kāhē khē</i> .
Accus.	جنهن ڪنهن کي <i>jāhē kāhē khē</i> .
	جيڪو <i>jēkō</i> ; جيڪا <i>jēkā</i> .
Ablat.	جنهن ڪنهن کان <i>jāhē kāhē khā</i> .

PLURAL.

Nom.	چيکي jēkē.
Format.	{ جَنِ کَنِ jane kane; جِي کِي jine kine.
Instrum.	
Genit.	جَو جَنِ کَنِ jane kane jō etc.
Dative.	کِهِي جَنِ کَنِ کِهِي jane kane khē.
Accus.	{ جَنِ کَنِ کِهِي jane kane khē. چيکي jēkē.
Ablat.	کِهَان جَنِ کَنِ کِهَان jane kane khā.

چيکَا هُوڻسِ هِينِڻي مِينِ تَانِ سَا مَکَالِ سُنِينَسِ

Whatever (word) be in his mind, hear that his word.
Maj. 43.

چيکِي جَپِينْدِينِ جَکَدِيسَ کِهِي سَو سَتَکِي تِهِينْدَه سَانُ

Whatever thou wilt pray to the Lord of the world,
that will be thy companion (i. e. to the other world).
Mēnghō 9.

Instead of جَوکُو jōkō the poets very frequently use
کَوجُو, reverting the order of the two pronouns.

کَا جَا مَکَالِه مَکَرِي پِجَلِ بُنْدَهَاءِ مُونِ

Whatever thing thou hast to say, o Bījalu, let me
hear that! Sh. Sōr. II, 17.

جِي جِي وَنَ چَنکُو پَهَلِ نَه تَهَا ڏَن سِي سِي وَڏَهِي

بَاهِ مِينِ تَهَا وَجِهَجَنِ

Which trees soever give no good fruit, those are
cut off and thrown into the fire. Matth. 7, 9.

There is also a reduplicated form of this pronoun:
چيکوکُو jēkōkō, but it is only used in the Nominative Sing.
and Plural.

SINGULAR.

Nom. جِيڪوڪو jēkōkō; fem. جِيڪاڪا jēkākā.

PLURAL.

Nom. جِيڪِيڪِي jēkēkē, com.

The neuter form of it is: جِيڪِيڪِي jēkīkī.

جِيڪوڪو پَنهن جي بهاءِ تي بي سَبَب تهُوَ ڪاوڙجي سُو
عَدَالَت جو ڏهاري تهيئندو

Whosoever is angry with his brother without a cause, he will be guilty of judgement. Matth. 5, 2.

Annotation. Another compound of ڪو is هَڪو harkō, every one, whoever (Hindūstānī: harkōī); it is only used in the Singular and inflected regularly, as:

Nom. هَڪو harkō, fem. هَڪا harkā;

Format. هَڪنهن harkāhē, com.

§. 37.

VII. THE RECIPROCAL PRONOUN

پَان pāna, 'self'.

The reciprocal pronoun in Sindhī is پَان pāna, 'self', in person, in contradistinction to پَانُ pānu, s. m., one's own person or personality. It is derived from the Sansk. आत्मा, soul, self, which becomes in Prākṛit either अप्पा (Var. III, 48) or अप्पाण (Var. V, 45). From the latter Prākṛit form appāna, the Sindhī پَان has sprung by dropping the first syllable 'ap'.

Annotation. The Marāṭhī reciprocal pronoun āpaṇ points likewise back to the Prākṛit appāna, whereas the Hindūstānī āp (possessive: ap-nā) is to be traced back to the Prākṛit form appā; similarly the Panjābī: āp, possessive āp-nā. In Gujārātī both Prākṛit forms reappear: āp, and possessive: āpaṇ-nō.

From the original signification of پَانِ pāna, 'soul' (like the Hebrew נַפְשׁ), its application may be easily explained. It refers in a sentence always to the chief-subject, be it distinctly expressed or only tacitly understood. In the Genitive (پَانْهَنْ جو pāhā jō etc.), which serves as a possessive pronoun, it may be translated by 'own'; but at the same time it points out with a peculiar nicety the subject, to which it must be referred, and may then be translated by the respective possessive pronoun, required by the subject.

SINGULAR and PLURAL.

Nom. پَانِ pāna; self; masc. and fem.

Format. } پَانِ pāna.

Instrum. }

Genit. پَانِ جو pāhā jō; پَنْهَنْ جو pāhā jō; پَانِ جو pāhā jō (in Lār).

Dative. } پَانِ کَهِ pāna khē.

Accusat. }

Ablat. پَانِ پَانِ pānā; پَانِ کَهِ pāna khā.

An adverbial form is پَانِہِ pānahī, of, from, by himself or themselves, in person; in a similar sense the Ablative پَانِ pānā is also used.

پَانِہِ سُنْجَانِ پَانِ پَانِ کَرِ پَانِ لَہِ

پَانِہِ پَسِ پَانِ کَہِ پَانِہِ ہِیْ مَحْبُوبِ

By himself he knows his own person; his own person takes notice of himself;

By himself he sees himself; by himself he is beloved. Sh. Kal. I, 18.

پَانِہِ جو آہِ پَانِ آؤ مَحْبِبِ کَہِ

Thou theyself art thy own (i. e. thy soul's friend);

thou (thyself art) in presence of (thy) friends. Sh. Ābirī V, 12.

پُوجَا ڪَر مَه پَان ڪهي جُڙي رکيج جُڙي

Do not worship thyself; o Jōgī, keep (thy) devotion! Sh. Rāmākālī VII, 20.

تُون پَنهن جي بهاء ڪهي ڪينئ چُوندين تَه مون ڪهي
پَنهن جي آڪه مون ڪَتر ڪڏهن ٿي

How wilt thou say to thy brother: let me pull out the mote from thy eye? Matth. 7, 4.

In this last sentence the subject, to which the reciprocal pronoun is to be referred, must be found out from the context or the emphasis of the speaker.

دھُر dhure is not a reciprocal pronoun, as alleged by Capt. Geo. Stack; it is the Locative of دھُر dhuru, 'extremity', 'exact spot' (Panjābī: dhur, adv.), used adverbially. The same is to be remarked of پِنڌ pinḍe, which is the Locative of پِنڌ pinḍu, s. m. 'body', and signifies: 'in person'. For this reason its Genitive is جو پِنڌ جو pinḍa jō etc.

پر پُچھ پِنڌ پَانهن جو مَنجھس مَنھ پايو

But ask thy own body (i. e. thyself), having turned thy face upon it. Golden Alphabet 43, 7.

'One another' is expressed in Sindhī in the following way:

هينئا هيڪڙا ٻين ڪهي سڌائين سارين

Their hearts always remember each other. Maj. 200.

§. 38.

VIII. PRONOMINAL ADJECTIVES.

Under this head we class only such adjectives, as participate more or less of the nature of pronouns and are somewhat irregular in their inflexion, and such, as are derived from pronominal themes. All other adjectives, which may, according to their position in a sentence, supply the place of the pronoun, we exclude from this list, such as: **فُلَانُو** *fulānō*, a certain person, **هِيَكِرُو** *hikirō*, one, **بِنُو** *biō*, another, **سَجُو** *sajō*, whole, as they are treated and constructed as regular adjectives.

1) Indefinite pronominal adjectives.

We have to deal here with the pronominal adjectives **سَبْهُ** *sabhu*, whole, all, every one; the emphatic form of which is **سَبْهُوِي** *sabhōi*; with the compound **سَبْهُكُو** *sabhukō*, every one, and **مِرْيُوِي** *miryōi* or **مِرْيُوِي** *mirōi*, all, whole, every one.

a) The pronominal adjective **سَبْهُ** *sabhu*.

It is derived from the Sansk. **सर्व**, Prāk. **सव्व**; Hindūstānī: *sab* (Marāṭhī: *sarv*); in Sindhī *b* has been aspirated (as in Panjābī: *sabh*) on account of the elided *r* (see: Introd. §. 15, B. c.)

SINGULAR.

Nom. **سَبْهُ** *sabhu*; fem. **سَبْهَ** *sabha*.

Format. } **سَبْهَ** *sabha*, com.
Instrum. }

Genit. **سَبْهَ جُو** *sabha jō* etc.

Dative. **سَبْهَ كَهِي** *sabha khē*.

Accus.	{ سَبْهَ sabha khē. سَبْهُ sabhu; fem. سَبْهَ sabha.
Ablat.	سَبْهَ کِهَان sabha khā.

PLURAL.

Nom.	سَبْهَ sabhe, com.
Format.	{ سَبْهَانِ sabhane, سَبْهَانِ sabhine; سَبْهَانِ sabhi-
Instrum.	
	nine; سَبْهَانِ sabhē.
Genit.	سَبْهَانِ جَو sabhane jō etc.
Dative.	سَبْهَانِ کِهِي sabhane khē etc.
Accus.	{ سَبْهَانِ کِهِي sabhane khē. سَبْهَ sabhe.
Ablat.	سَبْهَانِ سَبْهَانِ sabhaneā (سَبْهَانِ sabhinā).
	سَبْهَانِ کِهَان sabhane khā etc.

In the Nom. Plur. we find occasionally سَبْهِي sabhē written, instead of سَبْهَ sabhe. In the Formative Plural سَبْهَانِ sabhē may be used, instead of سَبْهَانِ etc., when the noun immediately follows in the Formative (ة).

عَمْرَ سَبْهَ عَبْتُ وَقْتُ وَنَجَائِمِ پَانْهِن جَا

My whole life is useless; my time (pl.) has been lost by me. Sh. Surāg. V, Epil.

اَللّٰهُ اَنْ پَرْنِی جَا سَبْهِي کَاجَ سَرَن

By Allah all the undertakings of that friend are carried out. Maj. 688.

دِیْتَهَا پَرْتَهِنِ پَرْتِ سِینِ نِتِ تَرْمَایُو نِینِ

جِلْدَ سُونْهَارَا سَبْهَانِ پَرِنِ بِنَا مُعْخَفَ مَوْجَارَا

Sitting they read with love, causing always their eyes to shed tears;

Volumes beautiful in all ways, and other elegant books. Maj. 140. 141.

سَائِي جُو سَوَگَنْدُ جُو سَاجَنُ سَبَهَنانُ سَنُهَنو

It is an oath of the Lord (i. e. by the Lord), that my friend is the most beautiful. Sh. Barvō Sindhī II, 6.

b) The pronominal adjective سَبَهَوِي sabhōī.

The inflection of سَبَهَوِي, 'all', 'whole', 'every one', is somewhat irregular.

SINGULAR.

Nom. سَبَهَوِي sabhōī; fem. سَبَهَائِي sabhāī.

Format. } سَبَهِي سَبَهِي sabhēī; fem. سَبَهَائِي sabhāīa.
Instrum. }

etc.

etc.

PLURAL.

Nom. سَبَهِي سَبَهِي sabhēī, or: سَبَهَائِي sabhāī, com.

Format. } سَبَهِي sabhinī or: سَبَهِي سَبَهِي sabhinī.
Instrum. }

etc.

etc.

Ablat. سَبَهَانِي سَبَهَانِي sabhināī or: سَبَهَانِي سَبَهَانِي sabhineāī.

آءِ پُنُهون پِيهي وِتْرَا سَوَر سَبَهِي

Come in, o Punhū! all pains are gone! Sh. Dēsi II, Epil.

سَبَهِي جِي سِيَدُ چَرِي آهي اُتِ اَمَان

The safety of all, says the Sayyid, is there. Sh. Ābiri V, 6.

تَوَدِي کهي تَعْطِيمَ پِينِ سَبَهَانِي اَمِري

To Tōḍī (Suhinī) belongs more honour than to all (others). Sh. Suh. III, 9.

c) The pronominal adjective سَبْهُكُو sabhukō.

The compound pronominal adjective سَبْهُكُو sabhukō is inflected as follows:

SINGULAR.

Nom. سَبْهُكُو sabhukō; fem. سَبْهَكَا sabhakā.

Format. سَبْهَكَاَهْ sabhakāhē, com.

etc. etc. etc.

PLURAL.

Nom. سَبْهَكِي sabhakē, com.

Format. سَبْهَكِي sabhakane.

etc. etc. etc.

There is also a neuter form of this pronoun: سَبْهَكِي sabhukī. The emphatic form سَبْهَكُوِي sabhukōī is also used (see كُوِي).

سَانَوَن كَهْرِي سَبْهَكَا هِيئِي سَرَهِي سِيَارِي

In Sāvan (July—August) every one slips (into the river), this one (goes into it) merry in the cold season. Sh. Suh. III, 17.

اَجَان دِيَلَه سَبْهَكُنْهِيَن رَنْجَان وَاجَهَاِي

I come at every time, using shifts I go. Sh. Barvō Sindhī II, 7.

پِي پِيَالَو عَشَق جَو سَبْهَكِي سَخْجَهَوَسُون

Having drunk a cup of love we understood every thing. Sh. Kal. II, Epil.

d) The pronominal adjective مِرْيُوِي miryōī.

The pronominal adjective مِرْيُوِي miryōī or مِرْيُوِي mirōī is inflected in the same manner as سَبْهَكُو sabhukō.

SINGULAR.

Nom. مِرْيَوِي miryōi or: مِرْوِي mirōi; fem. مِرْيَاي miryāi.

Format. مِرْيَيْي miryēi or: مِرْيِي mirēi; fem. مِرْيَايَا miryāia.
etc. etc. etc.

PLURAL.

Nom. مِرْيَيْي miryēi or مِرْيِي mirēi; مِرَاي mirāi (in Lār); com.

Format. مِرِينِي mirīnī; مِرْيَانِي miryanī.
etc. etc.

Ablat. مِرِينَا mirīneā or: مِرِينِي كِهَان mirīnī khā.

مِرْمَوِي چَنکُو وَن چَنکُو پَهَل تهُو دِثِي

Every good tree gives good fruit. Matth. 7, 17.

جَمَن نَاهِي جَک مین دِینَه مِرْيِي دُون

There is no living in the world; all the days (of life) are two. Sh. Kal. II, Epil.

مِرْمُون مَوکَل کَالَه کَنَدَا وَنَا کَاپَرِي

The devotees, taking yesterday leave from all, went off. Sh. Rāmakalī VII, Epil.

The Locative Sing. masc. مِرْيِي mirēi, 'in all', 'throughout', 'altogether', is very frequently used, where we would employ the simple adjective all, whole; but it is to be noticed, that the Locative مِرْيِي mirēi always follows immediately the noun, on which the stress is thus to be laid.

لَکُو کُوسُو وَء لَوُک مِرْيِي لَهَسْتُو

A hot wind has set in; the world in all (i. e. the whole world) has been singed. Sh. Ābirī I, 11.

رَائُو مِڙِيئي رَتَ سَآنَ گَارَنِ گاندھ ٽڪور

The gravel-stone throughout (i. e. all) make red with blood for the sake of (thy) husband. Sh. Ābiri VIII, 8.

جَاجِڪَ تُو مَتَهَاءَ مِلڪَ مِڙِيئي گهڙيان

O bard! upon thee (i. e. for thy sake) I sacrifice all (my) property. Sh. Sōr. IV, 10.

2) Correlative adjectives.

The Sindhī possesses a great facility to derive correlative adjectives from pronominal bases.

a) The pronominal adjectives, denoting 'quantity' are formed by affixing to the original Sanskrit-Prākṛit bases or other bases formed alike, the adjectival termination rō, as: کيتيرو kētirō, how much? Sansk. कियत् Prāk. केत्तिच्च्. As similar phenomenon is to be noticed in the cognate idioms, as Hindūstānī: kittā and kit-nā; Panjābī: kit-nā; Marāṭhī: kitī or with the affix k: kitik; Gujarātī: kēt-lō; but Bangālī: kat.

b) The pronominal adjectives denoting 'size', are formed by affixing to the respective pronominal base the termination: ڏو ḍō, as: کيڏو kēḍō, how large? This termination is properly not an adjectival affix, but an adjective: ڏو vaḍō, 'great', the first syllable of which is dropped in this composition. This is clearly proved by the Marāṭhī, as: kē-vaḍhā, how great, and the Gujarātī: kē-vaṭō (but Panjābī: kē-ḍā, as in Sindhī).

All these pronominal adjectives admit again of a diminutive form, by adding the affix ڙو rō (see §. 11), as: کيڏڙو kēḍirō, how small?

c) The pronominal adjectives denoting 'kind' are formed by adding to the pronominal bases kēha, jēha, tēha, ēha, hūa (ūha), the diminutive affix rō, in consequence of which the long vowel of the pronominal

base is shortened to its corresponding short one, as:
 كَهَرَوُ kēharō, of what kind or manner?

The pronominal bases, from which these three kinds of adjectives are derived, are: ē or hē, this; ō (ū) and hō (hū), that; the relative jō (jē), the correlative sō (tē), and the interrogative kē.

We exhibit them in the following survey:

From the base:	Quantity.	Size.		Kind.
ē or hē	اَيْتِرَوُ ētirō	اَيْدَوُ ēdō	اَيْدِرَوُ ēdirō	اَهَرَوُ ēharō
	هَيْتِرَوُ hētirō this much.	هَيْدَوُ hēdō as large as this	هَيْدِرَوُ hēdirō as small as this	هَيَرَوُ hiarō of this kind.
ō or hō	اَوْتِرَوُ ōtirō	اَوْدَوُ ōdō	اَوْدِرَوُ ōdirō	اُهَرَوُ uharō
	هَوْتِرَوُ hōtirō that much	هَوْدَوُ hōdō as large as that	هَوْدِرَوُ hōdirō as small as that	هُرَوُ huarō of that kind.
jō (jē) and sō (tē)	جَيْتِرَوُ jētirō as much	جَيْدَوُ jēdō as large	جَيْدِرَوُ jēdirō as small	جَهَرَوُ jēharō of which kind.
	تَيْتِرَوُ tētirō so much	تَيْدَوُ tēdō so large	تَيْدِرَوُ tēdirō so small	تَهَرَوُ tēharō of that kind.
kē	كَيْتِرَوُ kētirō ¹⁾ how much	كَيْدَوُ kēdō how large	كَيْدِرَوُ kēdirō how small	كَهَرَوُ kēharō of what kind.

All these correlative adjectives are inflected regularly, according to their respective termination (masc. and fem.).

1) Not to be confounded with كَيْتِرَوُ is the interrogative pronominal adjective كَنْثُونُ kāō, which of more than two, Sansk. कान्तम; about its formation see Introd. §. 9.

§. 39.

IX. PRONOMINAL SUFFIXES,

attached to nouns and postpositions.

Instead of the inflected cases of the absolute personal and possessive pronouns the Sindhī uses very extensively the so-called suffixes or pronouns, which are affixed to nouns, postpositions (adverbs) and verbs. The use of these suffixes constitutes quite a peculiar feature of the Sindhī language and distinguishes it very advantageously from all the kindred idioms of India, which are destitute of pronominal suffixes; but at the same time the construction of the sentences is very frequently thereby rendered so intricate, that it presents great embarrassments to a beginner. In this respect the Sindhī quite agrees with the Paṣtō and the Persian, being the connecting link between the Indian and Iranian languages.

Here we shall describe the manner, in which the suffixes are attached to nouns and postpositions; the verbal suffixes will be treated in their proper place.

The pronominal suffixes, which are added to nouns and adverbs, are:

Singular.	Plural.
I pers. م me.	اون ũ or هون hũ.
II pers. ا e.	و va.
III pers. س se.	ن ne or ن na.

The suffix of the I pers. Sing. me corresponds to the Prākrit Genitive Sing. मे my; the Persian suffix is ام am, Paṣtō me, as in Sindhī.

The suffix of the II pers. Sing. ا e has sprung from the Sansk. Genitive Sing. ते, thy, t being elided in Sindhī according to Prākrit rule (see Introd. §. 7). In Persian

final e (tē) has been dropped and t preserved (= at), whereas the Paṣtō has retained the original form of this pronoun, only with transition of the tenuis into the media = ॐ de.

The suffix of the III pers. Sing. se is to be referred to the Prākṛit Genitive से (shortened from अस्य), literally: hujus. In Persian it has become —ش, whereas in Paṣtō s has been changed to h (Zend hē) and then altogether elided = ٻي ē.

The suffix of the I pers. Plur. ũ or hũ accedes to postpositions only, no suffix of the I pers. Plur. being in use with nouns. It is a contraction from the Prāk. Genitive Plur. अहो, the first syllable being dropped in Sindhī. The Persian form is ما mā, Paṣtō مو mū or ام um.

The suffix of the II pers. Plur. ; va is derived from the Sansk.-Prāk. Genitive Plur. वो; Persian on the other hand ما (pointing to the Sansk. Genit. Plur. युष्माकम्) but Paṣtō مو mū (m = v).

The suffix of the III pers. Plur. ne or na has apparently sprung from an old pronominal base न na, which is already in Pāli substituted for सो, that; the Prāk. Genit. Plur. would be रोहिं (cf. Lassen p. 325; Var. VI, 4), shortened ne, or na from राण.

These suffixes, according to their etymology, supply, when attached to nouns, the place of possessive pronouns; but when joined with postpositions or adverbs, they may stand in lieu of any inflected personal pronoun. The suffix however, which properly belongs to the noun, may also be attached to the verb, as will be explained under the verbal suffixes.

§. 40.

I. Pronominal suffixes attached to nouns.

When a suffix accedes to a noun, its final vowel undergoes in some instances a change. But it is to be noticed, that the suffixes are not used promiscuously with nouns, but for the most part only with those referring to man, far less with those referring to animals or to inanimate objects.

In the Nominative Singular:

- 1) Nouns ending in 'u' undergo no change before the suffixes.
- 2) Nouns ending in *ō* generally shorten the same to 'u'; but *ō* may also keep its place before the suffixes.
- 3) Masc. nouns ending in *ī* change the same for euphony's sake either to *yu* or to *ya*.
- 4) Fem. nouns ending in *ī* change the same either to *ya* or shorten it to 'i'.
- 5) Nouns ending in 'e' (i) remain unaltered before the suffixes.

In the Formative Singular the suffixes accede to the final vowel without any further change, with the exception of nouns ending in *ō*, the Formative Singular of which terminates before suffixes in *ä*, and not in *ē*.

In the Nominative Plural a final long vowel is shortened respectively and final nasal *n* dropped before the suffixes; but final *ī* of masc. nouns is changed to *ya*, as in the Nom. Sing.

In the Formative Plural the suffixes accede to the termination *ne* without any further change.

Nouns ending in *ū* (*ũ*) and *ā* are hardly ever found with suffixes; of nouns ending in 'a' there are some instances, but they are very rare, and only found in poetry. On the whole the suffixes are for the most part attached

to nouns ending in 'u' and ō, far less to those ending in ī (masc. and fem.) and 'e'.

The way, in which the suffixes are attached to nouns, may best be learnt from the following examples.

1) Nouns ending in u (masc.)

Nom. Sing. نَيْنُ nēnu, eye; Format. نَيْنَ nēna.

Nominative.

Sing. { I pers. نَيْنُمُ nēnume, my eye.
II pers. نَيْنِي nēnue, thy eye.
III pers. نَيْنُسِ nēnuse, his eye.

Formative.

Sing. { I pers. نَيْنِمُ nēname; نَيْنِهِمُ nēnahime.
II pers. نَيْنِي nēnae; نَيْنِهْ nēnahe.
III pers. نَيْنَسِ nēnase; نَيْنِهِنْسِ nēnahīse.

Nominative.

Plur. { II pers. نَيْنُو nēnuva, your eye.
III pers. نَيْنُنِ nēnune, their eye.

Formative.

Plur. { II pers. نَيْنَوِ nēnava; نَيْنِهِنَوِ nēnahīva.
III pers. نَيْنُنِ nēnane; نَيْنِهِنِ nēnahine.

Nom. Plur. نَيْنَ nēna; Form. نَيْنِنِ nēnane.

Nominative.

Formative.

Sing. { I pers. نَيْنِمُ nēname, my eyes. نَيْنِيمُ nēnanime.
II pers. نَيْنِي nēna-e, thy eyes. نَيْنِي nēnanī.
III pers. نَيْنَسِ nēnase, his eyes. نَيْنَسِ nēnanise.



	<i>Nominative.</i>	<i>Formative.</i>
Plur.	II pers. نَيْنَوَ nénava, your eyes.	نَيْنَوِ nénaniva.
	III pers. نَيْنِنِ nénane, their eyes.	نَيْنِنِ nénanine.

In the Formative Sing. there is instead of the suffix me, the form hime also in use, as: نَيْنَهَم nénahime; and instead of se we find likewise the form hise, as: نَيْنَهِس nénahise. In the Format. Plur. the suffix of the II pers. ě is generally contracted with the final e of the termination ne to ě (ě) or even ī, or hě is affixed, to avoid a hiatus, as: نَيْنِنِي nénanē, نَيْنِنِي nénanī or: نَيْنِنَه nénanehe.

In poetry final 'u' is frequently lengthened again to ō before the suffixes; but final 'a' may also be likewise lengthened, if required by the metre, as: نَيْنَانَ nēnāna, instead of نَيْنَنَا nénana.

Some nouns of this class, which do not change final 'u' in the Formative Singular, are somewhat irregular in attaching the suffixes. These are: پِي پِي piu, father, بھاء bhāu, brother, ماء māu, mother, دھئی dhiu, daughter, نھ نھ nuhu, daughter-in-law.

پِي piu, father.

SINGULAR.

Nomin. and Format.: پِي piu.

Sing.	I pers.	پِيَمِ piume; پِيَامِ piāme; پِيَنَهَمِ pinhame; پِيَنَهَمِ pinhime, my father.
	II pers.	پِيِي piu-e; پِيَاءِ piāe; پِيَنَهِي pinhē, thy father.
	III pers.	پِيُسِ piuse; پِيَاسِ piāse; پِيَنَهَسِ pinhase, his father.

Plur.	{	II pers. پُئو piuva; پِئاو piāva; پِنْهَو pinhava, your father.
		III pers. پِئِن piuna; پِنْهِن pinhune, their father.

PLURAL.

Nomin. **پِئِر** piura; Format. **پِئِرِن** piurane or: **پِئِن** piune.

Nominative.

Formative.

Sing.	{	I pers. پِئِرِم piurame, my fathers;	{	پِئِرِنِم piuranime.
		II pers. پِئِرِي piura-e, thy fathers;		پِئِنِم piunime.
		III pers. پِئِرِس piurase, his fathers;	پِئِنِس piunise.	

Plur.	{	II pers. پِئِرَو piurava, your fathers;	پِئِنَو piuniva.
		III pers. پِئِرَن piurana, their fathers;	پِئِنِن piunine.

بِهَاء bhāu, brother.

SINGULAR.

Nominative and Formative **بِهَاء** bhāu.

Sing.	{	I pers. بِهَائِم bhāume; بِهَام bhāme; بِهَائِم bhā- name, بِهَائِم bhānime, my brother.
		II pers. بِهَاء bhā-e; بِهَائِي bhānē, thy brother.
		III pers. بِهَائِس bhāse; بِهَائِس bhānuse, his brother.
Plur.	{	II pers. بِهَائَو bhāuva, بِهَائَو bhānuva, your brother.
		III pers. بِهَائِن bhāuna, their brother.

PLURAL.

Nomin.: بهائرَ bhāura; Format.: بهائرِنَ bhāurane or:

Nominative. بهائِنَ bhāune. *Formative.*

I pers. بهائرَمَ bhāurame, $\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{بهائرِنِمَ bhāuranime.} \\ \text{بهائِنِمَ bhāunime.} \end{array} \right.$
 my brothers.
 etc. etc.

ماءَ māu, mother.

SINGULAR.

Nominative and Formative: ماءَ māu.

Sing. $\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{I pers. مائِمَ māume; مامَ māme; مائِهِنِمَ mānhime,} \\ \text{my mother.} \\ \text{II pers. مائِ māe; مائي māne, thy mother.} \\ \text{III pers. مائِسَ māuse; ماسَ māse; مائِسِ mānuse;} \\ \text{مائِسِ mānise, his mother.} \end{array} \right.$

Plur. $\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{II pers. مائِ māva; مائِو mānuva, your mother.} \\ \text{III pers. مائِ māne; مائِنِ mānune, their mother.} \end{array} \right.$

PLURAL.

Nomin.: مائُرَ māura; Format.: مائِنَ māune.

Nominative. *Formative.*

I pers. مائُرَمَ māurame, my mothers; مائِنِمَ māunime.
 etc. etc.

دهي دhiu, daughter.

SINGULAR.

Nomin. and Format. دهي دhiu (دهي دhia).

Sing. I pers. دهيمَ dhiume; دhiame; دهينمَ dhī-
 name; دهينِمَ dhīnime, my daughter.

Sing.	{	II pers. دِهِيَّ dhiya-e; دِهِيْنِي dhīne, thy daughter.
		III pers. دِهِيْس dhiuse, دِهِيْس dhīase; دِهِيْنِس dhī-nuse, his daughter.

PLURAL.

Nomin.: دِهَار dhiaru; Format.: دِهِيْن dhīune.

Nominative.

Formative.

I pers.	دِهَارُم dhiarume, my daughters.	دِهِيْنِم dhīunime.
	etc.	etc.

نُه nuhu (or: نُهَة), daughter-in-law.

SINGULAR.

Nominative and Formative: نُه nuhu.

Sing.	{	I pers. نُھُم nuhume; نُھُم nuhame; نُھِنِ nuhiname; نُھِنِم nuhinime, my daughter-in-law.
		II pers. نُھِيْ nuhu-e; نُھِيْ nuhē; نُھِيْنِ nuhinē, thy daughter-in-law.
		III pers. نُھِس nuhuse; نُھِس nuhase; نُھِنِس nuhinise, his daughter-in-law.
Plur.	{	II pers. نُھُو nuhuva, your daughter-in-law.
		III pers. نُھُنِ nuhune; نُھُنِ nuhane, their daughter-in-law.

PLURAL.

Nomin.: نُھَار nuharu; Format.: نُھَان nuhane.

Nominative.

Formative.

I pers.	نُھَارُم nuharume,	نُھِنِم nuhunime.
	my daughters-in-law.	
	etc.	etc.

A noun with suffixes may be followed by postpositions; in this case the suffixes are added to the Formative of a noun.

مَا زُهْنِ چِيُو مَانَسِ كِهِي دَ تُون پَانِ پِيهِنَسِ

The people said to his mother: ask him thyself.
Maj. 42.

اَهُو پُتْرُو بَنِ پَوِي جُو بهَانِمِ جُو سِرِ وَدِهِي

May that thy son fall into the forest (i. e. away with that thy son), who will cut off my brother's head.
Story of Rāe Diāču p. 1.

اَمَرِ كُهِهِ كِهَرُو مُونَهَانِ وَنَجِي سَا تَهَرُو

O mother, away with thy house (literally: to the well with thy house); away from me goes the little caravan.
Sh. Hus. II, 7.

جِهَوَلِ دَ جِهَلِي سُنَهِي سَا تَرِ سَتِ سَنَدِيَا سِ

جَنَهِنِ اِهَرِي جَا يِي عَا جِرَانِ سَا مَرِ مَرِكِي مَاسِ

پَسِينِ جِي پَنَاسِ دَ كِي عِشْقُ آئِينِ

By no perplexity was Suhinī kept back; in the stream was her devotion;

From which poor (woman) such a one was born, that her mother may well boast:

If thou seest her father, thou mayst also love him a little. Sh. Suh. III, 13.

مَآءِ ۞ بهَا تَرْمِ بَا هَرِ بِي تَهَا آهِي نِ

Thy mother and thy brothers are standing outside.
Matth. 12, 47.

مَانَسِ ۞ بهَا تَرِنَسِ بَا هَرِ بِي سَانَسِ مَآلَهَا يِنِ كِهَرِيُو

His mother and his brothers, standing outside, wished to speak to him. Matth. 12, 46.

وَهَان جَان مَاتِهْ كَرِي وَسَارِي دِيَانِ

تَان وَارِي جِينِي وَنَجِي هِنْتُون كِنِكْتُو كِنَانِ

When I sit in silence, having forgotten their abuses,
Then my heart goes like sand, moaning after them.
Maj. 679, 680.

اَجْ نَهْ كَالِهَاتُون هُونِ دِيْنِهَاتَرِي نَجَهَرِي

To-day there is no talk (كَالِهَاء) of theirs; they are
the whole day in the hut. Sh. Mūm. Rēnō V, 12.

2) Nouns ending in ō.

Nouns ending in ō do not differ essentially from those in 'u', as regards the annexion of the suffixes; they generally shorten final ō to 'u', but they may also retain the same in the Nom. Sing., which is frequently the case in poetry. The Formative Sing. always terminates in 'a', not in ē, when followed by suffixes. In the Nomin. Plural final ā may be likewise preserved before suffixes, instead of being shortened to 'a'.

مَتِهْ mathō, head.

SINGULAR.

Nom.: مَتِهْ mathō; Form.: مَتِهِي mathē = مَتِهْ matha.

	Nominative.	Formative.
Sing.	I pers. مَتِهْم mathume, my head;	{ مَتِهْم ¹⁾ mathame; مَتِهْم mathahime.
	II pers. مَتِهِي ²⁾ mathu-e, thy head;	{ مَتِهِي matha-e; مَتِهِي mathahe.
	III pers. مَتِهْس mathuse, his head;	{ مَتِهْس mathase; مَتِهْس mathahīse.

1) In Sirō the people very commonly substitute 'i' instead of 'a' in the Formative Sing. as: مَتِهْم mathime etc.

2) In poetry the long vowels may be retained, as: مَتِهْو mathō-e, مَتِهَان mathā-na.

Plur.	{	II pers. مَتَهُوَ your head; مَتَهَوَ مَتَهَهُوْ
		mathuva, mathava; mathahīva.
	{	III pers. مَتَهُنْ their head; مَتَهِنِ مَتَهَهُنِ
		mathune, mathane; mathahane.

PLURAL.

Nomin.: مَتَهَا mathā; Format.: مَتَهِنِ mathane.

*Nominative.**Formative.*

Sing.	{	I pers. مَتَهُمِ mathame, مَتَهُنِ mathanime. my heads;
		II pers. مَتَهِيْ matha-e, { مَتَهِنِيْ mathanī; thy heads; { مَتَهِنِيْ mathanihe.
		III pers. مَتَهُسِ mathase, مَتَهِنِسِ mathanise. his heads.
Plur.	{	II pers. مَتَهُوَ mathava, مَتَهُوْ mathaniva. your heads.
		III pers. مَتَهِنِ mathane, مَتَهُنِ mathanine. their heads.

كِبْرُ أَنْهَيْنِ كِتْهَانِ هَلِينِ كُجَاژَو نَالُوْ

Who art thou, whence comest thou, what is thy name?
Maj. 167.

جَتِي نَطْرُ نَاتَهْ جُو اُتِي اَوْتَارَانِ
اِهِي اُهَنْجَانَانِ لِكَا بَهْنِ لَوَكِ مِيْنِ

Where the sight of the Lord is, there are their
abodes.

These are their tokens: concealed they wander about
in the world. Sh. Rāmak. II, 9.

3) Nouns ending in ī (masc.)

Nouns ending in ī (m.) generally change the same to ya, far less to yu, before the accession of the suffixes; in the Formative Sing. ē must always be changed to ya. The same is the case in the Nom. Plur., so that only the context can decide, whether a noun is put in the Nominative or Formative Sing. or in the Nominative Plural.

In poetry a final short vowel may be lengthened before a suffix, as: دهنیاس dhanyāse, instead of: دهنیس dhanyase.

SINGULAR.

Nom.: دهنی dhanī, master; Form.: دهنی dhanya.

		<i>Nominative.</i>	<i>Formative.</i>
Sing.	I pers.	دهنیم dhanyame, دهنیم dhanyume, my master.	دهنیم dhanyame.
	II pers.	دهنی dhanya-e, دهنی dhanyu-e, thy master.	دهنی dhanya-e. دهنی dhanyahe.
	III pers.	دهنیس dhanyase, دهنیس dhanyuse, his master.	دهنیس dhanyase.
Plur.	II pers.	دهنیو dhanyava, دهنیو dhanyuva, your master.	دهنیو dhanyava.
	III pers.	دهنینه dhanyane, دهنینه dhanyune, their master.	دهنینه dhanyane,

PLURAL.

Nom.: دَهْنِي dhanī; Format.: دَهْنِيْن dhanyune.

Nominative.

Formative.

Sing.	{	I pers. دَهْنِيْم dhanyame, my masters.	{	دَهْنِيْن dhanyunime.
		II pers. دَهْنِي دَهْنِي dhanya-e, thy masters.		دَهْنِيْنِي dhanyunī. دَهْنِيْنِيْھ dhanyunehe.
		III pers. دَهْنِيْس dhanyase, his masters.		دَهْنِيْنِيْس dhanyumise.
Plur.	{	II pers. دَهْنِيَو dhanyava, your masters.	{	دَهْنِيْنِيَو dhanyuniva.
		III pers. دَهْنِيْن dhanyane, their masters.		دَهْنِيْنِيْن dhanyunine.

دِهْرَوَقَارَ وَجُودَ مِيْنِ پَرِيْمِ جِي پَجَارَ

There is constantly in my body the talk of my friend. Sh. Suh. IV, 7.

دَهْنِيْمِ كَرِ مَ دَهَارَ پَاژَو تَنِ پَرِيْنِ كَهَانِ

O my master, do not make apart (thy) quarter from those friends. Sh. Barvō III, 5.

چِيْدَانِ سَدَهْرُ سَكَهْنِيْاْسِ تِيْدَانِ وَهِي وَه سَامُهُونِ

Because her steersman is sturdy, therefore she floats facing the current. Sh. Surāg. III, 6.

4) Nouns ending in ī (fem.)

Nouns ending in ī (fem.) either shorten final ī to 'i' before the suffixes or change it to ya; the latter is always the case with adjectives and participles ending in ī. The termination of the Nomin. Plur. ū is shortened to 'u' and the final nasal dropped before the suffixes.

SINGULAR.

Nom.: بَائِي bāī, lady; Format.: بَائِي bā-ia.

		<i>Nominative.</i>	<i>Formative.</i>
Sing.	I pers.	بَائِمِ bāime, بَائِمِ bāyame, my lady.	بَائِمِ bāyame.
	II pers.	بَائِي bāyē, بَائِي bāya-e, thy lady.	بَائِي bāya-e.
	III pers.	بَائِسِ bāise, بَائِسِ bāyase, his lady.	بَائِسِ bāyase.
Plur.	II pers.	بَائَوِ bāiva, بَائَوِ bāyava, your lady.	بَائَوِ bāyava.
	III pers.	بَائِنِ bāine, بَائِنِ bāyane, their lady.	بَائِنِ bāyane.

PLURAL.

Nom.: بَائُونِ bāyū; Format.: بَائُونِ bāyune.

		<i>Nominative.</i>	<i>Formative.</i>
Sing.	I pers.	بَائِمِ bāyume, my ladies.	بَائِمِ bāyunime.
	II pers.	بَائِي bāyu-e, thy ladies.	بَائِنِي bāyunī.
	III pers.	بَائِسِ bāyuse, his ladies.	بَائِسِ bāyunise.
Plur.	II pers.	بَائَوِ bāyuva, your ladies.	بَائُونِ bāyuniva.
	III pers.	بَائِنِ bāyune, their ladies.	بَائِنِ bāyunine.

In poëtry final *ī* is occasionally not changed to *ya*, but simply to 'a', as:

چیکا چَندَم سَا

if there is any power of mine, it is that. Sh. Kēd. IV, 9.

پُپھی puphī, a father's sister, has, besides the regular forms, also پُپھِنَم puphiname or: پُپھِنِیْم puphinime.

چوڻِهِنِی مَاه چَندَر جنِی پَر مین پاگَرِیاس

Like the moon on the fourteenth of the month was his turban in the plain. Sh. Kēd. V, 1.

کوڻهي کنهن نَ پُچھیا اَنَدَر اَنَدوھیاَن

Not by any messenger have they been asked; inside is their grief. Sh. Rāmak. VI, 4.

5) Nouns ending in *e* (fem.)

Nouns ending in *ě* remain either unaltered before suffixes or change final *ě* (*i*) to *ya*, as well in the Nominative as in the Formative Singular.

SINGULAR.

Nom.: چھوگر čhōkare, girl; Format.: چھوگرِ.

		Nominative.	Formative.
Sing.	I pers.	چھوگرِم čhōkarime,	thy girl; the same.
		چھوگرِیْم čhōkaryame.	
	II pers.	چھوگرِی čhōkarē,	thy girl; the same.
		چھوگرِیِ čhōkarya-e.	
		چھوگرِیھ čhōkaryahe.	
	III pers.	چھوگرِس čhōkarise,	his girl; the same.
		چھوگرِیْس čhōkaryase.	

Plur.	II pers.	چھوکرِو	čhōkariva, your girl; the same.
		چھوکرِو	čhōkaryava.
	III pers.	چھوکرِن	čhōkarine, their girl; the same.
		چھوکرِن	čhōkaryane.

PLURAL.

Nom.: چھوکرِنو čhōkaryū; Form.: چھوکرِن čhōkarine.

		<i>Nominative.</i>	<i>Formative.</i>
Sing.	I pers.	چھوکرِیم čhōkaryume, my girls.	چھوکرِنیم čhōkarinime
	II pers.	چھوکرِی چھوکرِی čhōkaryu-e, thy girls.	چھوکرِنی čhōkarinī
	III pers.	چھوکرِیس čhōkaryuse, his girls.	چھوکرِنس čhōkarinise.
Plur.	II pers.	چھوکرِو čhōkaryuva, your girls.	چھوکرِو čhōkariniva
	III pers.	چھوکرِین čhōkaryune, their girls.	چھوکرِین čhōkarinine.

The substantive noun جؤہ jōe or زؤہ zōe, wife, presents, when joined by suffixes, some irregularities, as:

SINGULAR.

		<i>Nominative.</i>	<i>Formative.</i>
Sing.	I pers.	جؤِیم jōime, my wife.	The same.
		جؤِیم jōyame;	
		جؤِنام jōṇame; جؤِنام jōṇhame;	
		جؤِنیم jōṇime; جؤِنیم jōnhime;	

		<i>Nominative.</i>	<i>Formative.</i>
Sing.	II pers.	{ جُوڻِي jōē, جُوڻِي jōye, thy wife. جُوڻِي jōya-e. جُوڻِي jōnē, جُوڻِي jōnhē.	The same.
	III pers.	{ جُوڻِي jōise, جُوڻِي jōyase, his wife. جُوڻِي jōnase; جُوڻِي jōnhase.	
Plur.	II pers.	{ جُوڻِي jōiva, جُوڻِي jōyava, your wife. جُوڻِي jōnava, جُوڻِي jōnhava.	The same.
	III pers.	{ جُوڻِي jōine, جُوڻِي jōyane, their wife. جُوڻِي jōnane, جُوڻِي jōnhane.	

PLURAL.

*Nominative.**Formative.*

I pers.	جُوڻِي jōyume, my wives.	جُوڻِي jōyunime.
	etc.	etc.

جڏهين هو عدالت جي گادي تي ويٺو تڏهين جونس

چواڻي موڪليس

When he was seated on the judgement seat, his wife sent him word. Matth. 27, 19.

The other nouns, ending in ū, ā, 'a' are generally not used with suffixes, though occasionally one or another is found with a suffix; in this case final ū is changed to 'u' in the Nominative, and in the Formative to ua, whereas ā and 'a' keep their place before suffixes.

جي ڪا جماران^۱ سا منجه ڪوندر ڪڏري

Whatever their lifetime is, it has been spent in sorrow.
Sh. Rāmāk. III, 4.

§. 41.

II. PRONOMINAL SUFFIXES

attached to. Postpositions and Adverbs.

The rules, according to which pronominal suffixes are attached to nouns, are also applicable in reference to postpositions and adverbs. Any pronominal suffix may be joined with a postposition, but with most of them only the suffix of the third person Singular and Plural is in use. It is however quite optional in Sindhī, either to subjoin a pronominal suffix to a postposition, or to put the absolute pronoun before it in the Formative, with or without the Genitive case-sign جي, as: وٽسي vātise, with him, or: هُنَ وَٽِ huna vate.

1) The postposition سَندُو sandō.

سَندُو sandō is originally not a postposition, but an adjective, and therefore declinable, as well as جو, the Genitive case-sign, for which it is very frequently substituted (see §. 18). It corresponds to the Panjābī sandā, being (Sansk. part. pres. सन्त = सन्) and signifies therefore: 'belonging to'. It is now used as a regular postposition, chiefly in connexion with suffixes, before such nouns, to which suffixes are not attached, either for the sake of the final vowel, or for perspicuity's sake, or, as in poetry, for the sake of the metre.

1) Short 'a' may be lengthened to ā in poetry for the sake of the rhyme.

SINGULAR.

Masc. سَندَوْ sandō.

	Nom.: سَندَوْ sandō.	Form.: سَند sanda.
Sing.	I pers. سَندُم sandume, my.	سَندَم sandame.
	II pers. سَندُ sandu-e, thy.	سَندَ sanda-e.
	III pers. سَندُس sanduse, his.	سَندَس sandase.
Plur.	I pers. سَندُون sandū, our.	سَندُون sanda-ū.
	II pers. سَندُو sanduva, your.	سَندَو sandava.
	III pers. سَندِن sandune, their.	سَندِن sandane.

PLURAL.

	Nom.: سَندَا sandā.	Form.: سَندَن sandane.
Sing.	I pers. سَندَم sandame, my.	سَندَنِم sandanime.
	II pers. سَندَ sanda-e, thy.	سَندَنِي sandanī.
	III pers. سَندَس sandase, his.	سَندَنِس sandanise.
Plur.	I pers. سَندُون sanda-ū, our.	سَندَنُون sandineū.
	II pers. سَندَو sandava, your.	سَندَنِيو sandiniva.
	III pers. سَندِن sandane, their.	سَندَنِن sandanine.

It has been stated already (see: nouns ending in ō, §. 40, 2) that ō and ā may also be preserved before the suffixes, as: سَندَوْم sandōme, سَندَاس sandāse etc.

Fem.: سَنَدِي sandī.

SINGULAR.

	<i>Nominative.</i>	<i>Formative.</i>
Sing.	I pers. سَنَدِيَم sandyame, my.	The same.
	II pers. سَنَدِيَّ sandya-e, thy.	"
	III pers. سَنَدِيَس sandyase, his.	"
Plur.	I pers. سَنَدِيْتُون sandyaū, our.	"
	II pers. سَنَدِيَو sandyava, your.	"
	III pers. سَنَدِيَن sandyane, their.	"

PLURAL.

Sing.	I pers. سَنَدِيَم sandyume, my.	سَنَدِيُنِيَم sandyunime.
	II pers. سَنَدِيَّ sandyu-e, thy.	سَنَدِيُنِي sandyuni.
	III pers. سَنَدِيَس sandyuse, his.	سَنَدِيُنِيَس sandyunise.
Plur.	I pers. (not in use).	(not in use).
	II pers. سَنَدِيَو sandyuva, your.	سَنَدِيُونِي sandyuniva.
	III pers. سَنَدِيَن sandyune, their.	سَنَدِيُونِيَن sandyunine.

The Plural of سَنَدُو is very little in use, سَنَدُو preceding a noun in the Plural generally in the Singular.

سَوْتِي سَانِيَهْ مُنْهَن جَو سَاچَن جِتِ سَنَدُوْم

Even that is my native country, where my sweet-heart is. Maj. 86.

رَاچُ پَرْتَو رَبْ كَهِي سُوْمَرَا سَنَدُوْم

Thy government, o Sūmarō! has been reconciled to the Lord. Sh. Um. Māruī VI, Epil.

مَا زُهِونَ ذِيْنَدَا مِيْهَنَا جِيْكِ سِيْنَ سَنَدَا

The people (and) whosoever are thy relatives, will give thee reproaches. Maj. 292.

رَالْنِ مَتَهِي بَه جَوْتِيُون

مُرْسَن مَتَهِي رَاَر

هَتَهِيَن سَوْتِيُون

مَتَهِيَن جَوْتِيُون

اِهِي سَنَدَن اَجَاَر

The women have on the head two plaits,

The men have on the heads hair:

In the hands sticks,

On the heads plaits:

These are their habits. Verses of the Māmuīs.

جَنَّتْ سَنَدِيْنَ جُومَ فَاتَّقِ هَلِيَا فِرْدَوْسَ دِي

The garden (of Eden) is their place; the noble ones have gone to Paradise. Sh. Kēd. IV, 5.

In poetry سَنَدُو is now and then used without suffixes, which must then be supplied from the context:

لَدَهَاتِي لَطِيْفَ چَرِي سَنَدَا دَانِ دِسَن

The worthy ones, says Latīf, see his gifts. Sh. Sōr. I, 14.

2) Postpositions ending in 'u'.

سَان sanu, with.

SING.

PLUR.

I pers. سَانِم sānume, with me.

سَانُهَرَن sānuhū, with us.

II pers. سَانِي sānu-e, with thee.

سَانُو sānuva, with you.

III pers. سَانِس sānuse, with him.

سَانِن sānune, with them.

In the same way the suffixes are attached to سِن sēnu, with. In the third person Plural we meet often in poetry the form سِنَان sēnāna or سِنَان sēnāne, instead of سِنِن sēnune.

جَان جَان سَانِي سَاهُ تَان پَارِجِ كُو مَه پُنْهَنِي سَان

As long as there is a breath with thee, compare none with Punhū. Sh. Maṣḍ. V, 5.

مُنْهَن جُو سَاهُ وَتُو سِنَانِ آيِلِ وَهَان كِينِي بَهْمَبُورَ مِينِ

My soul is gone with them, o mother! how shall I sit in Bhambōru? Sh. Hus. XI, Epil.

3) Postpositions ending in ě or ē (ě).

کِنِ kaṇe or کَنِ kane, near, with, to.

	SING.	PLUR.
I pers.	کِنِمِ kaṇime, to me.	کِنُونِ kaṇeū, to us.
II pers.	کَنِی kaṇē, to thee.	کَنِوِ kaṇiva, to you.
III pers.	کَنِسِ kaṇise, to him.	کَنِنِ kaṇine, to them.

About the derivation of کِنِ see §. 16, 4.

Other postpositions of this kind are: مَرِ gare, to; وَتِ vate, near, with; مَنجِه manjhe, in; هِثِه hēthe, below etc. Before the suffix of the third person Sing. final i (e) is often lengthened to ī, as: وَتِيسِ vatīse, near him, and before the suffix of the third person Plur. to ī, as: مَنجِهِين manjhīna, in them.

ایک قصر در لکھ سہسین کس گنکھنوں

In one palace there are lakhs of doors, in thousands are to it windows. Sh. Kal. I, 23.

جیکڏھین اُن کُنون مارڻو تڏھین پُن کھڻو آسھن جو آھي

If we are beaten by them, even then it is our advantage. Sindhi Read. Book, p. 64.

کا جا گالھ مڱري پڇل ٻنڌھاء مون

Whatever be the matter with thee, o Bījalu, let me hear that. Sh. Sōr. II, 17.

گرن م مڱرھيچ روڻي پڇ م پڏھرو

Do not unbosom thyself to them; weeping do not make it public. Sh. Ripa I, 8.

سندس چيلا وڻيس آيا

His disciples came unto him. Matth. 5, 1.

Postpositions and adverbs ending in *ē* are treated differently; they either retain *ē* before the suffixes or they shorten it to *ě* (i); thus the postposition کهي *khē*, the case-sign of the Dative or Accusative, retains its final *ē* before the suffixes, as: کھيس *khēse*, to him (her, it), کھين *khēne* or کھين *khēna*, to them, whereas اتي *utē*, upon, shortens final *ē* to *ě* (i) as: اٿس *utise*, upon him (her, it) or: اٿھيس *utehise*; اٿن *utine*, upon them or: اٿھين *utehine*. Others again vary, as: مٿھي *mathē*, upon (properly the Locative of مٿھو *mathō*, the head), مٿھي *matha-e*, upon thee (the Formative of مٿھو), but مٿھيس *mathise*, upon him (being properly the Locative of مٿھ, the top).

چَوَاسُو چارِ ماہِ مَتَہِي وَسِا مِينِہَ

During the rainy season, four months, rains have fallen upon thee. Maj. 646.

مَتَہِسِ ناہِ مَلَامُ جِي کِي پُچَہِن پُچَہُ سُو

There is no reproach upon it; if thou wilt ask any thing, ask it. Sh. Khambh. I, 10.

To the postposition مِينِ mē (in) the suffixes are attached in the following manner: مِينَسِ mēse, in him (her, it) or: مَيسِ maīse (in Sirō); مَينُونِ maīnū, in us; مَينِ mēne or مَينِ mēna (in Sirō: مَينِ maina) in them.

4) Postpositions ending in ā, ā̃, āū, ō̃.

Those, which terminate in ā, remain unaltered before a suffix, as: کَينَاہِ¹⁾ to thee, کَينَاہِ kēnāse, to him, کَينَاہِ kēnāne, to them. Similarly کَہَا khā, from, as: کَہَاہِ khāse, from him, کَہَا khane, from them (the final nasal being dropped before a following dental n); مَتَہَا mathā, from upon (properly the Ablative of مَتَہُو mathō, the head), مَتَہَاہِ mathāe, from upon thee, مَتَہَاہِ mathāse, from upon him; پُتَہَاہِ pūthāse, from behind him, after him (properly the Ablat. of پُتَہِ pūthe, the back).

Before the suffix of the third person Plural a euphonic 'i' is occasionally inserted, especially in poetry, as: مَنجَہَانِہِ manjḥāine, instead of: مَنجَہَاہِ manjḥāne, out of them.

Those ending in āū, āu, āu (termination of the Ablat. Sing.) remain likewise unchanged before suffixes, the final

1) This postposition or adverb is never found without suffixes.

nasal only being dropped before them, as: مَتَهَانْسُ mathānse, from upon it, مَتَهَانُو mathāuva, from upon you; مَتَهَانْسُ khāuse, from it, مَتَهَانْسُ khāune, from them.

Those ending in ō change it to ā before suffixes, as: پُٺَانْسُ puāse, behind him (from پُٺُون puō).

تَدِهِن مَاءُ پُڇِي ڪَهي مَڇِي ڪَهَرِي لَکِي ڪِينَا

Then the mother asked Majnō: what (matter) has happened to thee? Maj. 44.

آٿن مَنُهَن جَا اَنڪَرَا ڪَهَدَ ذَ پَرِي ڪِينَا

My limbs melt, no languor befalls them. Sh. Khā-hōrī, Epil. I.

اَنئون پَان مَتَهَانِي ڪَهوَرِيَان اِيَنِهِيَن چِيَانِيَن

I sacrifice myself for thee; thus he spoke. [Maj. 755.

سَو سَبَهَوِي حَال مَنَجَهَانِيَن مَعْلُومُ تَهِي

That whole state becomes known out of them. Sh. Kal. I, 17.

تَان سَو عَيْنُ جَو غَيْنُ جِي مَتَهَانْسُ نَقْطُو ڏورِ ڪَرِيَن

Then that, which is yain, becomes ain, if thou remove from it the dot. Sh. Kal. I, 21.

هيئي سِرُ سَبَانُو ڪَهوَتَ مَتَهَانُو ڪَهوَرِيَان

This head is ready; o bridegroom, for you I sacrifice it. Sh. Kēd. IV, 8.

اَهَرَا ڏِيَنَه اِيَنڌَا جَو ڪَهوَتَ ڪَهَانْسُ ڪَهَسَبُو

Such days will come, that the bridegroom will be taken from them. Matth. 9, 15.

SECTION III.

THE VERB.

The great deterioration, the modern Indian languages have undergone, is nowhere more apparent, than in their conjugational process. They have lost nearly all the Sanskrit tenses, especially those of the Past, which were too intricate for the conception of the vulgar, and have therefore been compelled to have recourse to compositions, in order to make up for the lost tenses. They differ very greatly as to the method, which they have followed in this respect, every one of them exhibiting some peculiar features, which are not to be met with in the other idioms.

Chapter XII.

Formation of the verbal themes, the Imperative and the Participles.

§. 42.

Formation of the verbal themes.

I. We have seen already (§. 7, 2) that the Infinitive of the Sindhī verbs, terminating in *anu*, corresponds to the verbal noun of the Sanskrit and Prākṛit. The root of the Sindhī verb is therefore not to be sought in the Infinitive, but in the Imperative, which exhibits the crude form of the verb without an additional increment, except that of the final vowel, which is no part of the verbal root.

Properly speaking there is only one class of verbs in Sindhī, as all verbs, with a slight difference, are inflected alike. There are therefore no different conjugations, as in Sanskrit, but the same rules of inflection apply equally to all verbs.

In some tenses though there is a marked difference between neuter and active verbs, and we may therefore, for practical purposes, divide the Sindhi verbs into neuter and active ones.

1) The neuter or intransitive verb ends in the Infinitive in *anu* and in the Imperative in 'u', as:

هَلَنُ hal-anu, to go, Imper. هَلْ hal-u, go.

وَرَنُ var-anu, to return, „ وَرْ var-u, return.

But in derivative verbs, where the termination of the Infinitive is preceded by *ā*, the Infinitive ends, for euphony's sake, in *inu*, as:

كَارَانُنْ kārā-inu, to be blackish, Imper. كَارَاءْ kārā-u.

When the verbal root ends in short 'a' or 'i', a euphonic *v* is inserted between it and the increment of the Infinitive, as:

پَوَنُ pa-v-anu, to fall, Imper. پَوْ pa-u.

نُونُ ni-v-anu, to bow, „ نُوْ ni-u.

2) The active or transitive verb ends in the Infinitive likewise in *anu* (in Sirō commonly in *inu*), and in the Imperative in 'e' (and partly in 'u'), as:

جَهَلَنُ jhal-anu, to seize, Imper. جَهَلْ jhal-e.

پَهْرَنُ phur-anu, to plunder, „ پَهْرْ phur-e.

But when the increment of the Infinitive is preceded by 'a', *ā* and *ō*, the Infinitive ends, for euphony's sake, in *inu*¹), as:

مَئِنُ ma-inu, to measure, Imper. مَئِ ma-e.

گَالِهَائِنُ gālāhā-inu, to speak, „ گَالِهَاءْ gālāhā-e.

دُھوئِنُ dhō-inu, to carry, „ دُھوءْ dhō-e.

1) Some Sindhis, especially the Musalmāns, write and pronounce instead of *ānu*: *ā-anu* or contracted: *ānu*.

If a verbal root (active or neuter) end in ī and ū, these vowels are respectively shortened before the increment of the Infinitive, as:

پڻَ pi-anu, to drink, Imper. پيئي pi-u.

پُونِ pu-anu, to string beads, „ پوءِ pū-u.

In some instances radical ō is likewise shortened to 'u' in the Infinitive, as:

دھونِ dhu-anu, to wash, Imper. دھوءِ dhō-u.

رونِ ru-anu, to weep, „ رُو rō.

A number of Sindhī verbs have a different form when used in a neuter or active sense, but it would be wrong to say, that such neuter verbs are changed into an active form; they recur to a different Sanskrit form, from which they are derived and must therefore be considered as independent verbs.

The most common of these are:

Neuter.

Active.

اُجھامنِ ujhāmanu, to be extinguished. اُجھائينِ ujhāinu.

اُڏامنِ uḍāmanu, to fly اُڏائينِ uḍāinu.

بڙجھنِ bājhanu, to be bound. بڙدھنِ bāndhanu.

بُڙجھنِ bujhanu, to be heard بُڙدھنِ bundhanu.

بھڄنِ bhaṇu, to be broken بھڄنِ bhañanu.

بھڄنِ bhuṇu, to be fried بھڄنِ bhuñanu.

پھڙنِ phātanu, to be torn پھڙنِ phāranu.

ڄاڻنِ jāpanu, } to be born ڄائينِ jānanu.
ڄمنِ jamanu, }

ڇھڻِ chupanu, to be touched. ڇھڻِ chuhanu.

ڇھڻِ chijanū, to be plucked. ڇھڻِ chinanu.

Neuter.

Active.

دھوپنُ dhōpanu, to be washed . . .	دھورنُ dhuanu.
دُبھنُ ḍubhanu, to be milked . . .	دُھنُ ḍuhanu.
دَجھنُ ḍajhanu, to be envious . . .	دَھنُ ḍahanu.
دھراپنُ dhrāpanu, to be satiated . . .	(دھرائنُ) دھرینُ dhra-inu
رَجھنُ rajhanu, to be boiled . . .	رندھنُ randhanu.
رھنُ rahanu, to remain . . .	رکھنُ rakhanu.
سُجھنُ sujanu, to be heard . . .	سُننُ sunanu.
کُسنُ kusanu, to be killed . . .	کُھنُ kuhanu.
کھاجنُ khājanu, to be eaten . . .	کھائنُ khāinu.
کھامنُ khamanu, to burn . . .	کھائینُ khāinu.
کھجنُ khajanu, to be raised . . .	کھننُ khaṇanu.
گسنُ gasanu, to be abraded . . .	گھنُ gahanu.
لَبَنُ labanu, to be reaped . . .	لُتنُ lunanu.
لَبھنُ labhanu, to be obtained . . .	لَھنُ lahanu.
لُسنُ lūsanu, to be scorched . . .	لُھنُ lūhanu.
مَپنُ māpanu, } to be contained . . .	مَائِنُ māinu.
مَامنُ mamanu, }	
مُسنُ musanu, to have ill luck . . .	مُھنُ muhanu.
وَسَامنُ visāmanu, to be extinguished . . .	وَسَائِنُ visāinu.
وِکَامنُ vikamanu, } to be sold . . .	وِکِننُ vikiṇanu.
وِکَنُ vikanu, }	
وِھامنُ vehāmanu, to be passed . . .	وِھائِنُ vehāinu.
ھَپَامنُ hapāmanu, to be lessened . . .	ھَپَائِنُ hapāinu.
يَبھنُ yabhanu, to be copulated . . .	يَھنُ yahanu.

II. Almost from every neuter or active verb a Causal may be derived. Those causals, which have sprung from a neuter verb, are, as regards their signification, active, whereas those, which are derived from an active verb, are doubly active.

The Causal is derived by adding to the root of a verb the long vowel ā, to which the increment of the Infinitive accedes as usual; e. g.:

وَرَجَنُ virṭanu, v. n., to be tired; causal: وِرْجَائِنُ vir-
č-ā-inu, to cause to be tired or to tire.

دَسَنُ ḍasanu, v. a., to show; causal: دَسَائِنُ ḍasā-inu,
to cause to show.

دِهَوْنُ dhōinu, v. a., to carry, causal: دِهَوْنَائِنُ dhō-
ā-inu, to cause to carry.

But when the verb ends in radical 'a', euphonic v is inserted between the final root-vowel and the causal increment, as:

مَإِنُ ma-inn, v. a., to measure; causal: مَوَائِنُ ma-v-ā-
inu, to cause to measure.

Exceptions to this rule:

a) When a verb ends in radical r, ṛ, ṛh, h, preceded by a short 'a', the causal increment may be inserted in the root itself, coalescing with the short radical 'a' to ā, as:

بَرَنُ baranu, v. n., to burn; caus.: بَارَنُ bāranu, to
kindle.

كَرَنُ garanu, v. n., to drop; caus. كَارَنُ gāranu, to
cause to drop.

پَرَهَنُ parhanu, v. a., to read; caus.: پَارَهَنُ pārhanu,
to cause to read, to teach.

كَهَنُ gahanu, v. n., to work hard; caus.: كَاهَنُ gā-
hanu, to make work hard.

In a number of verbs, the final r (ṛ) of which is preceded by the vowel 'i', ā is inserted before the final radical and 'i' dropped, as:

سُدھِرَنُ sudhiraṇu, v. n., to be arranged; caus.: سُدھَارَنُ sudhāraṇu, to arrange.

وِسِرَنُ visiraṇu, v. n., to be forgotten; caus.: وِسَارَنُ vi-sāraṇu, to forget.

کِهِنْدِرَنُ kindiraṇu, v. n., to be spread; caus.: کِهِنْدَارَنُ khindāraṇu, to spread.

اُجِرَنُ ujiraṇu, v. n., to be waste; caus.: اُجَارَنُ ujā-raṇu, to lay waste.
etc. etc.

But the regular mode of forming the causal is also in use, as:

اَرَنُ araṇu, v. n., to be caught; caus.: اَرَانِ arā-inu, to entangle.

تَرَنُ taraṇu, v. a., to fry; caus.: تَرَانِ tarā-inu, to cause to fry.

پَرَهَنُ parhaṇu, v. a., to read; caus.: پَرَهَانِ parhā-inu, to cause to read.

سَبَهَنُ sambahaṇu, v. n., to be ready; caus.: سَبَهَانِ sambahā-inu, to get ready.

b) When final r or ṛ of a verbal root be preceded by the short vowels 'i' or 'u', the causal increment ā coalesces with them to ē and ō respectively, as:

پِهَرَنُ phiraṇu, v. n., to turn; caus.: پِهَرَنُ phēraṇu, to cause to turn.

کِهِنْدِرَنُ khindiraṇu, v. n., to be spread; caus.: کِهِنْدِرَنُ khindēraṇu, to spread (besides کِهِنْدَارَنُ).

وچھڑن vičhuraṇu, v. n., to be separated; caus.: وچھوڑن vičhōraṇu, to separate.

Those verbs, in which the root-vowel 'i' coalesces with the causal increment ā to ē, may add, besides the causal increment, ā to the end of the root, without altering the simple causal signification of the verb: as:

پھرن phiraṇu, v. n., to turn; caus.: پھیرن phēraṇu
or: پھیرائن phērā-inu.

Some verbs with radical 'u', form the causal in the common way, as:

کرن kuraṇu, v. n., to be tired; caus.: کرائن kurā-inu,
to tire.

A few verbs change in the causal the final cerebral t (ṭr) and ḍ to ṛ, as:

بودن būḍaṇu, v. n., to be drowned, caus.: بوژن bō-
raṇu, to drown.

ٹوڑن ṭruṭraṇu, v. n., to be broken, caus.: ٹروڑن trō-
raṇu, to break.

c) If a verb end in radical 'i' or 'u', r is inserted after the causal increment ā, as:

دین di-aṇu, v. a., to give; caus.: دینارن di-ā-r-aṇu, to
cause to give.

چون ču-aṇu, v. n., to leak; caus.: چنارن ču-ā-r-aṇu,
to cause to leak.

The same is the case, when final h is preceded by 'i', as:

وہن veh-aṇu, v. n., to sit; caus.: وہارن veh-ā-r-aṇu,
to cause to sit,

but if final h be preceded by 'u', the common rule holds good, as:

كُهْنُ kuh-aṇu, v. a., to kill; caus.: كُهَّائِنُ kuhā-iṇu, to cause to kill.

On the reverse a euphonic r is inserted before the causal increment in such verbs, the final radical of which ends in ā, as:

كُهَّائِنُ ghā-iṇu, v. a., to wound; caus.: كُهَّارائِنُ ghā-r-ā-iṇu, to cause to wound.

There is a number of causal verbs, which cannot be brought under any of the foregoing rules; these are:

أُتَهَّنُ uthaṇu, v. n., to rise; caus.: أُتَهَّارُنُ uthāraṇu, to cause to rise.

دُرِّجَنُ drijaṇu, v. n., to be afraid; caus.: دُرِّجَّارُنُ drē-jāraṇu, to frighten.

سِكُهَّنُ sikaṇu, v. a., to learn; caus.: سِكُهَّارُنُ sēkhā-raṇu, to instruct.

سُمُهَّنُ sumhaṇu, v. n., to fall asleep; caus.: سُمُهَّارُنُ sumhāraṇu, to put to sleep.

وَنَجَنُ vanaṇu, v. n., to be lost; caus.: وَنَجَّائِنُ viṇāiṇu, to loose.

وَنُهَجَنُ vēhejaṇu, v. n., to bathe; caus.: وَنُهَجَّارُنُ vē-hejāraṇu, to wash.

III. From most of the causal verbs a second causal may be derived, according to the rules laid down already, the first or simple causal being treated again as a theme by itself.

Simple caus.: وِرَّجَّائِنُ virčā-iṇu; double caus.: وِرَّجَّارائِنُ virč-ā-r-ā-iṇu, to cause (another) to weary.

Simple caus.: گَارَنُ gāraṇu; double causal: گَارَّائِنُ gār-ā-iṇu, to cause to shed (tears).

Simple caus.: **विचोराय** viçhōraṇu; double caus.: **विचोराय** viçhōr-ā-inu, to cause to separate.

Simple caus.: **पेहराय** phēr-ā-inu; double caus.: **पेहराय** phēr-ā-r-ā-inu, to cause (another) to cause to turn.

Simple caus.: **कहाराय** ghā-r-ā-inu; double caus.: **कहाराय** ghā-r-ā-r-ā-inu, to cause (another) to cause to wound.

Annotation. The Prākṛit forms the causal either by adding the increment ē (Sansk. ay) or āvē (Sansk. āpay = ābē = āvē, cf. Varar. VII, 26, 27). In the modern Indian idioms only the latter increment is in use, which has been shortened to ā in Sindhī, Hindūstānī and Bangālī, the syllable vē having been dropped. In Gujārātī the causal is formed by adding the increment āv (and vād, when the verb ends in a vowel); in Panjābī by means of the increment āā. In Marāṭhī āv is generally shortened to av.

The insertion of euphonic r in Sindhī (in Hindūstānī and Panjābī l) has its precedent in the euphonic l, which is inserted in some Sanskrit causal themes.

The double causal is formed in Hindūstānī by inserting v before the simple causal increment ā; the same is the case in Panjābī and Gujārātī.

IV. Almost from every neuter, active or causal verb a Passive may be derived by adding to the verbal root the increment **जन्** jāṇu (j-anu). A few verbs, chiefly denominatives, are only found in the passive form, as: **अकन्धजन्** ukandhijāṇu, to long for, **अङ्कजन्** angurī-jāṇu, to be exchanged, **दमिजन्** ḍamirjāṇu, to be angry etc. Any neuter verb may take the passive form, without changing its original signification.

The passive of neuter or intransitive verbs is mostly used impersonally (III pers. Sing.), whereas that of active and causal verbs is inflected through all persons.

The passive increment جَنْ jānu is joined to the verbal root, if it end in a consonant, with or without the conjunctive vowel 'i', as euphony may require it; but if the verbal root end in a vowel, the conjunctive vowel 'i' must always be employed, as:

پُورَنْ pūraṇu, v. a., to bury; pass.: پُورَجَنْ pūr-jānu, to be buried.

گھٹَنْ ghaṭaṇu, v. n., to lessen; pass.: گھٹَجَنْ ghaṭi-jānu, to lessen.

وِجائِنْ viñāinu, v. caus., to loose; pass.: وِجائَجَنْ viñā-i-jānu, to be lost.

Those verbs, which end in a radical 'a' and in the Imperative in 'u' (see §. 43), as: چَرَنْ ča-v-aṇu, Imper. چَرُ ča-u, to speak, drop before the increment of the passive the euphonic v of the Infinitive, as: چَکِجَنْ ča-i-jānu, to be spoken; پَرَنْ pa-v-aṇu, to fall, Imper. پَرُ pa-u, pass. پَکِجَنْ pa-i-jānu, to fall.

Those verbs, which shorten their final root-vowel (ī, ū, ō) before the increment of the Infinitive (§. 42, 2), retain their long vowel before the passive termination j-aṇu, as:

پِئَنْ pi-aṇu, v. a., to drink; Imper. پِئِ پِئِ pīu; pass. پِئِجَنْ pī-jānu, to be drunk.

پُورَنْ pu-aṇu, v. a., to string beads; Imper. پُورُ pū-u; pass. پُورِجَنْ pū-ijaṇu, to be strung (as beads).

دھوَنْ dhu-aṇu, v. a., to wash; Imper. دھوُ dhō-u; pass. دھوِجَنْ dhō-ijaṇu, to be washed.

Exceptions to these rules are:

تھِئَنْ thi-aṇu, v. n., to become; Imper. تھِئِ thi-u; pass. تھِئِجَنْ thi-jānu, to become.

كَرَنُ karaṇu, v. a., to make; Imper. كَرِ kare (Prec. كِجِ kiḡe); pass. كِجَنُ ki-jaṇu, to be done.

Annotation. In Sanskrit the Passive is formed by adding y to the root of the verb; in Prāk. y is dissolved into īa or ijja, and in the Apabhranṣa dialect ija or ijja is employed for the formation of the Passive (Lassen, p. 467). The increment of the Passive is therefore in Sindhī j, joined to the affix of the verbal noun or the Infinitive = j-aṇu. The Sindhī (and to some extent the Panjābī) is the only modern idiom of India, which has preserved a regular passive voice, all its sister languages being compelled to resort to compositions, in order to express a passive voice. The common way to form a passive voice in the kindred idioms is, to compound the past participle passive with the verb jānā, to go, as in Hindūstānī: مَیْنِ مَارَا جَاتَا هُونِ māi mārā jātā hū, I go being beaten = I am beaten. But the use of the passive voice, if it may be called so, is very limited in the cognate languages, and it is avoided wherever possible, which is greatly facilitated by a great number of verbs having a neuter or passive signification.

§. 43.

The Imperative.

The Imperative represents the root of a Sindhī verb, as stated already, and as the whole conjugational process depends a great deal upon it, its formation must be explained in the first place.

1) The Imperative of neuter and passive verbs always ends in 'u'), as:

مَرَنُ mar-aṇu, to die; Imper.: مَرِ mar-u.

اچَنُ ač-aṇu, to come; Imper.: اچِ ač-u.

1) The only exception to this rule is:

پَابُوھَنُ pābūhaṇu, v. n., to smile, which has in the Imperative, besides the regular پَابُوھِ pābūhu, also: پَابُوھِ pābūhe.

گڏجڻ gaḍ-iḡ-aṇu, to meet; Imper.: گڏجُ gaḍ-iḡ-u.

Those verbs, which insert a euphonic v in the Infinitive, drop it again in the Imperative, as:

نَوَنُ na-v-aṇu, v. n., to bow, Imper.: نَوُ na-u.

If a final vowel has been shortened in the Infinitive, it is restored again in the Imperative, as:

تِهِنُ thi-aṇu, v. n., to become, Imper. تِهِيُ thi-u.

چُونُ ču-aṇu, v. n., to leak, Imper. چُوُ čū-u.

رُونُ ru-aṇu, v. n., to weep, Imper. رُوُ rō (= رُو).

Similarly: وَهَنُ veh-aṇu, v. n., to sit down; Imper. وَهِيُ vēh-u.

The following verbs form their Imperative both regularly and irregularly:

اچَنُ ač-aṇu, v. n., to come; Imper. اچُ ač-u and آ آ ā-u¹).

وڃَنُ vaṅ-aṇu, v. n., to go; Imper. وڃُ vaṅ-u and وڏُونُ va-ū.

2) The Imperative of active and causal verbs ends in 'e', as:

پالَنُ pal-aṇu, v. a., to foster; Imper. پالِ pale.

گهٽائِنُ ghaṭā-iṇu, v. caus., to lessen; Imper. گهٽاءُ ghaṭā-ē.

But there is a considerable number of active verbs, which end in the Imperative in 'u' and not in 'e'; some have both terminations. These are:

1) From an old root \bar{A} ā, which is no longer used in Sindhi, but in Hindustāni (آنا ā-nā).

Imperative.

اُپِنُن upinaṇu, to sift	اُپِن upiṇu.
آكِهَن ākhaṇu, to inform	{ آكِه ākhu and آكِه ākhe.
اُكِهَن ughaṇu, to wipe	اُكِه ughu.
اَلَن alaṇu, to deny	اَل alu.
بُجِهَن bujhaṇu, to understand.	بُجِه bujhu.
بَندِهَن bandhaṇu, to bind.	بَندِه bandhu.
بُندِهَن bundhaṇu, to hear.	بُندِه bundhu.
بِهَنَجَن bhañaṇu, to break.	بِهَنَج bhañu.
بُهَنَجَن bhuñaṇu, to fry.	بُهَنَج bhuñu.
پُچِهَن pučhaṇu, to ask	پُچِه pučhu.
پُرَجِهَن purjhaṇu, to understand	پُرَجِه purjhu.
پَرُورَن parūraṇu, to understand	پَرُور parūru.
پَرِهَن parhaṇu, to read.	پَرِه parhu.
پَسَن pasaṇu, to see	پَس pasu.
پِنَن pinanu, to beg	پِن pinu.
پُون puaṇu, to string (beads).	پُون pūu.
پِهَن pihaṇu, { to grind	{ پِه pehu. پِيَهَن pīhaṇu, { پِيَه pīhu.
پِيَن pianu, to drink.	پِي پīu.
جَانَن jānaṇu, to know	جَان jānu.
جِهَن jahaṇu, to copulate	جِه jahu.
جِهَنِكَن jhinikaṇu, to scold	جِهَنِك jhiniku.
چُبِهَن čubhaṇu, to prick	چُبِه čubhu.

Imperative.

چَرَنُ čaranu, to graze	چَرُ čaru.
چَکھَنُ čakhanu, to taste	چَکھُ čakhu.
چُگَنُ čuḡanu, to peck up food	چُگُ čuḡu.
چُکھَنُ čuḡhanu, to puncture.	چُکھُ čuḡhu.
چُمنُ čumanu, to kiss	چُمُ čumu.
چُنَنُ čuṇanu, to crimple (cloth)	چُنُ čuṇu.
چَوَنُ čavanu, to speak	چَوُ čau.
چُهَنُ čuhanu, to soak up	چُهُ čuhu.
چِهَنُ čhinanu, to pluck	چِهَنُ čhiṇu.
چُهَنُ čhuanu, } to touch	{ چُهَوُ čhū-u.
چُهَنُ čhuhanu, }	{ چُهُهُ čhuhu.
دھائِنُ dhāṇu, to suck	دھاءُ dhāu.
دھَنُ dhūṇanu, to choose.	دھَنُ dhūṇu.
دھَوَنُ dhāvanu, to blow (with bellows).	{ دھَوُ dhā-u or دھَنِی dhā-e.
دھَوَنُ dhuanu, to wash.	دھَوُ dhō-u.
دَرَنُ ḍaranu, to eat up.	دَرُ ḍaru.
دِسَنُ ḍisanu, to see	دِسُ ḍisu.
دَهَنُ ḍahanu, to vex.	دَهُ ḍahu.
دُهَنُ ḍuhanu, to milk	دُهُ ḍuhu.
رَکھَنُ rakhanu, to keep.	رَکھُ rakhu.
سِبَنُ sibanu, to sow.	سِبُ sibu.
سِکَنُ sikanu, to long for	سِکُ siku.
سِکھَنُ sikhanu, to learn	سِکھُ sikhu.
سَلَنُ salanu, to divulge	سَلُ salu.
سَجھَنُ samujhanu, to understand	سَجھُ samujhu.

Imperative.

سَمْبِهَرَنْ sambhiraṇu, to recollect	سَمْبِهَرُ sambhiru.
سُفَّانَنْ suḥāṇaṇu, to recognize	سُفَّانُ suḥāṇu.
سِنِكَنْ sinikaṇu,	} to blow the nose . { سِنِكُ siniku.
سُنِكَنْ sunikaṇu,	
سِنْكَهَنْ singhaṇu,	} to smell . . . { سِنْكُ singhu.
سُنْكَهَنْ sunghaṇu,	
سُنْ sunaṇu, to hear	سُنْ sunu.
سَهَنْ sahaṇu, to endure	سَهُ sahu.
كَتَنْ katanu, to spin	كَتْ kaṭu.
كَدْهَنْ kaḍhaṇu, to pull out	كَدْهُ kaḍhu.
كَهَائِنْ khāiṇu, to eat	كَهَاءُ khā-u.
كَهَاتَنْ khaṭaṇu, to earn	كَهَاتْ khaṭu.
كَهَنْ kahaṇu, to say	كَهُ kahu.
كُهَنْ kuhaṇu, to kill	كُهُ kuhu.
كَهَنْ khaṇaṇu, to lift	كَهَنْ khaṇu.
كَهَنْهُ khāhaṇu, to scratch	كَهَنْهُ khāhu.
كَهَيْدَنْ khēḍaṇu, to play	كَهَيْدُ khēḍu.
كِهْيَنْ khiaṇu, to eat	كِهْيُ khiu.
كِنْهَنْ gīṇaṇu, to take	كِنْهُ gīṇhu.
كُهْرَنْ ghuraṇu, to wish	كُهْرُ ghuru.
كَهَنْ gahaṇu, to rub	كَهُ gahu.
كَهَنْ گَهَاṇu, to swallow	كَهَنْ گَهُ gehu.
لَكَهَنْ lakhaṇu, to ascertain	لَكَهُ lakhu.
لِكَهَنْ likhaṇu, to write	لِكَهُ likhu.

Imperative.

لِئَبْنُ limbaṇu, to plaster	لِئَبْ limbu.
لُئْنُ luṇaṇu, to reap.	لُئْ luṇu.
لَهْنُ lahaṇu, to obtain.	لَهْ lahu.
لَهْنُ lahaṇaṇu, to have to receive.	لَهْنُ lahaṇu.
مُئَجْنُ munjaṇu, to send	مُئَجْ munju.
مَئَجْنُ maṇaṇu, to heed.	<div style="display: inline-block; vertical-align: middle;"> <div style="display: inline-block; vertical-align: middle;">مَئَجْ maṇu</div> <div style="display: inline-block; vertical-align: middle;">مَئَجْ maṇe.</div> </div>
مَئَكْنُ maṇaṇu, to ask	مَئَكْ maṇu.
مَئْنُ manāṇu, to shampoo.	مَئْ manu.
وَتَهْنُ vaṭhaṇu, to take.	وَتَهْ vaṭhu.
وِجَهْنُ vijhaṇu, to throw	وِجَهْ vijhu.
وِکِنْنُ vikiṇaṇu, to sell	وِکِنْ vikiṇu.
هَنْنُ haṇaṇu, to strike.	هَنْ haṇu.
يَهْنُ ¹⁾ yahaṇu, to copulate	يَهْ yahu.

The following active verbs form their Imperative in an irregular way:

دِئَنْنُ dīaṇu, to give; Imper. دِئِ dē (instead of: دِئِ dīu).

1) Capt. Stack in his Sindhi Grammar has adduced the following verbs also as active and ending in the Imperative in 'u':

بَکْنُ bakaṇu, to chatter,	سُئَهْنُ sūhaṇu,	} to suit,
بُهْلَنْ bhulaṇu, to forget,	سُئَهَائِنُ sūhā-iṇu,	
چَنَبُرَنْ čamburaṇu, to stick close to,	وَچُرَنْ vačuraṇu, to stick to,	
جَهَکَنْ jhakaṇu, to prate,	وِسَهَنْ visahaṇu, to trust,	
رُچَنْ ručaṇu, to please,	وَئَنْ vaṇaṇu, to please;	

but all these are properly intransitive verbs and therefore quite regular in their Imperative.

نِيْنُ nianu, to take away; Imper. نِيْ (instead of نِيْ niu).

Verbs which end in the Imperative Sing. in 'u', form the Plural in ō (or yō, with euphonic y, if the verb end in any other vowel but 'a' and ū), and those, which end in the Imperative Sing. in ě, form their Plural in yō or iō, as:

أَچْ ačū, come,	Plur.	أَچُو ač-ō.
دَهْوْ dhō-u, wash,	„	دَهْوِيُو dhō-yō.
پَرْ pa-u, fall,	„	پَرُو pa-ō.
دِيْ dē, give,	„	دِيُو dīō.
جَهَلْ jhal-ě, seize,	„	{ جَهَلِيُو jhal-yō or جَهَلِيُو jhal-iō.

An older form of the II. pers. Plur. is the termination hō, which is also in use, as; جَهَلِيُو jhal-ihō.

The other persons of the Imperative must be supplied from the Potential.

There is another form of the Imperative, ending in je¹⁾, which is added equally to the root of neuter and active verbs. This form of the Imperative is properly a Precative, implying exhortation, request or prayer, as:

مَوْتَنُ mōṭanu, to return; Imper. مَوْتُ mōṭu; Prec. مَوْتِجْ mōṭ-i-je, please to return.

وَيْتَنُ vīṭanu, to scatter; Imper. وَيْتْ vīt-e; Prec. وَيْتِجْ vīt-i-je, please to scatter.

If a verb end in 'i' or ī, the initial 'i' of ije is dropped, as:

1) In poetry ije is now and then lengthened to ēje, as well in neuter as active verbs, ending in the Imperative in 'u' or 'e', as:

كَرِجْ kar-ēje, from كَرَنْ karaṇu, Imper. كَرْ karē. وَنَجِجْ vañēje, from وَنَجَنْ vañaṇu, to go, Imper. وَنَجْ vañu.

كِهْنُ khiaṇu, v. a., to eat, Imper. كِهِي khi-u; Prec.

كِهِي khi-je.

تِهْنُ thiaṇu, v. n., to become; Imper. تِهِي thī-u;

Prec. تِهِي thī-je or: تِهِي thi-je.

Quite irregular is كَرُنُ karaṇu, to do, in the Precative, as:

كَرُنُ karaṇu, Imper. كَرِ kare, Prec. كِي ki-je or: كِي ka-je.

Neuter or such active verbs, as end in the Imperative in 'u', take frequently, especially in poëtry, the termination iju instead of ije, as:

سُنُنُ suṇaṇu, to hear; Imper. سُنُ suṇu; Prec. سُنِجُ sun-iju.

This termination is also now and then found in active verbs, ending in the Imperative in 'e', as:

بِهَانِنُ bhā-iṇu, to think; Imper. بِهَانِي bhā-e; Prec. بِهَانِجُ bhā-iju.

The Plural of the Precative ends in ijō (or ējō, as the case may be), as:

پُورِجُ pūr-ije (پُورِجِجُ pūr-ēje), shut up; Plur. پُورِجُو pūr-ijō (پُورِجُو pūr-ējō).

Instead of ijō (ējō) the terminations ijā, ijāe (ijā-e), ijāhu (ijāu) ijāha are also in use, especially in a honorific sense, and are therefore also referred to a subject in the Nominative, as:

وَرِجُ var-iju, return; Plur. وَرِجَا var-ijā.

وَنِجُ vañ-iju, go; „ وَنِجَا vañ-ijā-e.

سُنِجُ sun-iju, hear; „ سُنِجَا sun-ijāha.

پَرِهَمِجُ parh-iju, read; „ پَرِهَمِجَا parh-ējā-u.

Annotation. In Prākṛit the different (10) conjugations of the Sanskrit have already been discarded and only the first of them is in common use. The II pers. Sing. of the Imperative ends in Prākṛit in 'a', which in Sindhī has been changed to 'u' and 'e' respectively; the II pers. Plur. ends in ha (Sansk. धा dha), and in Sindhī in ō, h being commonly dropped. — In the cognate idioms the final vowel of the II pers. Sing. of the Imperative has been dropped altogether; in the Plural the Imperative ends in ō, as in Sindhī, with the exception of the Marāṭhī, the Plural Imperative of which ends in ā, and the Bangālī, the Plural Imperative of which is identical with the Singular.

The Sindhī Precative is to be referred to the Prākṛit increment ija or ijja, which is inserted between the root and the inflexional terminations in the Present, the definite Future and the Imperative (Varar. VII, 21). Lassen's conjecture (p. 357), that this increment has sprung from the Sanskrit Precative, is borne out by the modern idioms. — The Gujārātī forms the Precative in the same way as the Sindhī by adding to the verbal root the increment ajē (Plur. ajō). — In Hindūstānī iyē is joined to the root of the verb for the III pers. Sing. (generally with āp etc.), it being considered more respectful to address a person in the III pers. Sing.; and iyō for the II or III pers. Plur.; jīē is only used, when the root ends in ī or ō. — In Panjābī the increment ī is added to the root for the II pers. Sing., and īō for the II pers. Plur. Similarly iō is joined to the root in Bangālī, as well for the II. pers. Sing. as Plur.

§. 44.

The participle present.

From the Imperative or the verbal root the Participle present is derived in the following way:

1) Neuter verbs ending in the Imperative in 'u', add to the root the affix andō (see §. 8, 11), as:

هَلَنُ halaṇu, to go; Imper. هَلْ hal-u; Part. pres. هَلَنْدُو hal-andō.

The same is the case with active verbs, the Imperative of which ends in 'u', as:

هَنْنُ hananu, to strike; Imper. هَنْ hanu; Part. pres.
هَنْدُو han-andō.

Some of these however use also the other form in indō, as:

سُنُّ sunanu, to hear; Imper. سُنْ sunu; Part. pers.
سُنْدُو sunandō or: سُنِّندُو sunindō.

Those verbs, which end in radical ā, and in the Imper. in 'u', form, for euphony's sake, their Participle present in indō, and not in andō, as:

كِهَائِنُ khā-inu, v. a., to eat; Imper. كِهَاءُ khā-u; Part.
pres. كِهَائِّندُو khā-indō.

بُدَّهَائِنُ budhā-inu, v. n., to become old; Imper. بُدَّهَاءُ
budhā-u; Part. pres. بُدَّهَائِّندُو budhā-indō.

Those verbs, which shorten their final vowel in the Infinitive or insert a euphonic v (§. 42, 1. 2), do the same before the affix of the Participle present, as:

پَوْنُ pa-v-anu, to fall; Imper. پُوْ pa-u; Part. pres.
پَوْنْدُو pa-v-andō.

پِئِنُ pi-anu, to drink; Imper. پِئِي pi-u; Part. pres.
پِئِنْدُو pi-andō.

دِهَوْنُ dhu-anu, to wash; Imper. دِهَوْ dhō-u; Part.
pres. دِهَوْنْدُو dhu-andō.

In some verbs, with euphonic v inserted, a contraction takes place, as:

چَوْنُ ča-v-anu, to say; Imper. چَوْ ča-u; Part. pres.
چَوْنْدُو ča-v-andō or: چُونْدُو cūdō.

هُوْنُ hu-anu, to be; Imper. هَوْ hō-u; Part. pres. هُونْدُو
hūdō (instead of هُنْدُو hu-andō).

A similar contraction takes place in:

كِهْنُ khi-aṇu, to eat; Imper. كِهْ khi-u; Part. pres. كِهْندُ khīndō.

دِيْنُ dī-aṇu, to give; Imper. دِيْ dē; Part. pres. دِيْندُ dīndō.

نِيْنُ nī-aṇu, to take away; Imper. نِيْ nē; Part. pres. نِيْندُ nīndō.

The following verbs form their Participle present in an irregular way:

اچْنُ ač-aṇu, to come; Imper. اچْ ač-u; Part. pres. اچْندُ ičndō.

واڻنْ vaṇaṇu, to go; Imper. وڻجْ vaṇu; Part. pres. وڻجْندُ vēndō or وڻدُ vīndō.

2) Active and causal verbs form the Participle present by adding the affix īndō to the root, as:

بھَرَنُ bharaṇu, v. a., to fill; Imper. بھَرْ bhar-e; Part. pres. بھَرِندُ bhar-īndō.

گنڌھائِنُ gāṇdhā-iṇu, to cause to connect; Imper. گنڌھاءْ gāṇdhā-e; Part. pres. گنڌھائِندُ gāṇdhā-īndō.

The verb کَرَنُ karaṇu, to do, forms its Part. pres. both regularly and irregularly, کَرِندُ kar-īndō or: کندُ kandō, کندُ kindō.

3) The participle present of the Passive voice is formed by adding the affix ibō to the root of the passive theme (cf. §. 8, 13), as:

پَسَنُ pasaṇu, v. a., to see; pass. پَسِجَنُ pas-iṇaṇu; Part. pres. پَسِبو pas-ibō.

چَوَنُ ča-v-aṇu, v. a., to say; pass. چَڇِنُ ča-iṇaṇu; Part. pres. چَڇِبو ča-ibō.

دھوَنُ dhu-anu, v. a., to wash; pass. دھوِجَنُ dhō-ijanu;

Part. pres. دھوِئِبُو dhō-ibō.

پيَنُ pi-anu, v. a., to drink; pass. پيِجَنُ pī-janu; Part.

pres. پيِئِبُو pī-bō.

تھيَنُ thi-anu, v. n., to become; pass. تھيِجَنُ thi-janu;

Part. pres. تھيِئِبُو thi-bō.

کَرَنُ karanu, v. a., to do; pass. کِجَنُ ki-janu; Part.

pres. کِئِبُو ki-bō (also: کَبُو ka-bō).

The Participle present is also used in the sense of a Future, as will be seen under the future tense.

§. 45.

The Participle past.

From all Sindhī verbs, be they neuter, active (causal) or passive, a past participle may be derived by adding the affix iō or yō (the latter always, when the root ends in a vowel) to the root of the verb (see §. 8, 14). The past participle of neuter verbs implies simply a prae-terite sense, whereas that of active (causal) verbs always denotes a prae-terite passive signification.

جَاگَنُ jāganu, v. n., to be awake; p. p. جَاگِئِو jāg-iō,
having been awake.

کھَتَنُ khatanu, v. a., to gain; p. p. کھَتِئِو khat-yō,
having been gained.

پَرَبھائِنُ parbhāinū, v. caus., to quiet; p. p. پَرَبھائِو
parbhāyō, having been quieted.

پَرکھيَنُ parkhijanu, v. p., to be tested; p. p. پَرکھيِئِو
parkh-iō, having been tested.

Those verbs, which insert euphonic v in the Infinitive, drop it again before the affix of the past participle, as:

چَونُ ča-v-aṇu, to say; p. p. چَیو ča-yō.

نَونُ na-v-aṇu, to bow; p. p. نَیو na-yō.

If a verb end in 'i' or ī, the initial 'i' of the affix iō is dropped in the past participle; the same is commonly the case, when the root ends in one of the Palatals č, čh, ĵ, ĵh.

نِئَنُ ni-aṇu, to take away; p. p. نِئو ni-ō.

تِئَنُ thi-aṇu, to become; p. p. تِئو thi-ō.

جِئَنُ ji-aṇu, to live; p. p. جِئو ĵi-ō.

کُئَنُ kučhaṇu, to speak; p. p. کُئو kučh-ō.

سُؤجَنُ sōjhaṇu, to investigate; p. p. سُؤجِئو sōjhō.

If final ō and ī has been shortened in the Infinitive, it is restored again (with a few exceptions) in the past participles, as:

دُئَوَنُ dhu-aṇu, to wash (Imper. دُئو dhō-u); p. p. دُئوئو dhō-yō.

جِئَوَنُ ĵi-aṇu, to live (Imper. جِئو ĵi-u); p. p. جِئوئو ĵi-ō.

About the compound affixes ya-lu or ia-lu, ya-rō (ia-rō), which are attached to the past participle, in order to impart to it more the nature of an adjective, compare §. 9, 22.

A considerable number of verbs form their past participle in an irregular way, that is to say, they have retained the old Sanskrit-Prākṛit form of the past participle, modified only according to the laws of transmutation of letters, as current in Prākṛit and Sindhī. We subjoin here an alphabetical list of them.

اُبھامَنُ ubhāmaṇu, v. n., to boil up; p. p. اُبھانَو ubhānō.

اُبھانَنُ ubahaṇu, v. n., to stand; p. p. اُبھیتھو ubīthō.

اُتَنُ utaṇu, v. a., to say; p. p. اُتو utō.

اَجُنْ v. n., to be woven, } p. p. اُنْمُو unio.

اُنْ v. a., to weave,

اُجْهَانْ ujhāṇu, to be extinguished; p. p. اُجْهَانُو ujhānō.

اَجِنْ v. n., acaṇu, to come; p. p. آيو āyō.

اُدَامِنْ v. n., uḍāmaṇu, to fly; p. p. اُدَانُو uḍānō.

اُكْرَنْ v. a., ukaraṇu, to engrave; p. p. اُكْرِيُو ukaryō or:
اُكْهَتُو ukhatō.

اُكْهَنْ v. a., ughaṇu, to wipe out; p. p. اُكْهَتُو ughathō.

اَلَنْ v. a., alaṇu, to deny; p. p. اَلْتُو altō.

اَلْهَنْ ulahaṇu, v. n., to descend; p. p. اَلْتَهُو ulathō.

اَنْ اناṇu, v. a., to bring; p. p. اَنْدُو āndō.

بَجْهَنْ bajhaṇu, v. n., to be bound; } p. p. بَجْهُو bajhō or
بَنْدَهَنْ bandhaṇu, v. a., to bind; } بَدْهُو badhō.

بُجْهَنْ bujhaṇu, v. n., to be heard; } p. p. بُدْهُو budhō.
بَنْدَهَنْ bundhaṇu, v. a., to hear; }

بُذَنْ buḍaṇu, v. n., to be drowned; p. p. بُذُو buḍō.

بَهَجَنْ bhaṇaṇu, v. n., to run away; }
to be broken; } p. p. بَهَكُو bhaḡō.

بَهَنْجَنْ bhañṇaṇu, v. a., to break;

بِهَجَنْ bhijaṇu, v. n., to get wet; p. p. بهِنُو bhinō.

بُهَجَنْ bhujaṇu, v. n., to be fried; } p. p. بُهَكُو bhuḡō.
بُهَنْجَنْ bhunaṇu, v. a., to fry; }

بُهَجَنْ bhucaṇu, v. n., to be digested; p. p. بُهْتُو bhutō.

بُهَنْجَنْ bhunaṇu, v. n., to wander about; p. p. بُهْنُو bhunō.

بِهَنْ bihaṇu, v. n., }
to stand up; p. p. بِيْتَهُو biṭhō.
بِيَهَنْ bihaṇu, v. n., }

پَايَنْ pāiṇu, v. a., to get; p. p. پَاتُو pātō.

پُجَنُ pujaṇu, v. n., to be finished; p. p. { پُنُو punō,
پُجَتُو pujitō.

پَچَنُ paçaṇu, v. n., to be cooked; p. p. پَکُو pakō.

پُرْجَهَنُ purjhaṇu, v. a., to understand, p. p. پُرْدَهو purdhō.

پَرَچَنُ parçaṇu, v. n., to be reconciled; p. p. { پَرْتُو partō,
پَرچُو parcō.

پَرَنَنُ parnaṇu, v. a., to entrust, p. p. پَرْتُو partō.

پَوَنُ pavaṇu, v. n., to fall; p. p. پِئُو piō.

پُونُ puṇu, v. a., to string (as beads); p. p. پُوتُو pūtō.

پَهَاتَنُ phāṭaṇu, v. a., to tear; p. p. پَهَاتُو phātō.

پَهَاسَنُ phāsaṇū, v. n., to be caught; p. p. پَهَاتَهو phāthō.

پَهِشَنُ phīṭaṇu, v. n., to be injured; p. p. پَهِشُو phīṭō.

پَهُچَنُ pahuçaṇu, v. n., to arrive; p. p. پَهْتُو pahutō.

پَهَسَنُ phasaṇu, v. n., to be caught; p. p. پَهْتَهو phathō.

پَهِسَنُ phisaṇu, v. n., to burst; p. p. پَهْتَهو phithō.

پَهَنُ pehaṇu, {
پِهَنُ pēhaṇu, } v. n., to enter; p. p. پِهْتَهو pēthō.

پِچَنُ piçaṇu, v. n., to be credited; p. p. پِئُو pītō.

پِيسَنُ pīsaṇu, v. a., to grind; p. p. پِئَهو pīthō.

پِئَنُ pianu, v. a., to drink; p. p. پِئُو pītō.

پِئَهَنُ pīhaṇu, v. a., to grind; p. p. پِئَهو pīthō.

تَپَنُ tapanu, v. n., to be warm; p. p. تَتُو tatō.

تُسَنُ susaṇu, v. n., to be gratified; p. p. { تَتَهو tuṭhō,
تَتَهو tuṭhō.

تَهَكَنُ thakaṇu, v. n., to be weary; p. p. تَهَكُو thakō.

تَرَاهُنْ trāhanu, v. caus., to frighten; } p. p. تَرَاثَهُو trāthō.

تَرَهْنْ trahanu, v. n., to be frightened; } p. p. تَرَثَهُو trāthō.

جَايُنْ jāpanu, v. n., to be born; } p. p. جَايُو jā-ō, جَايُو jāyō or جَانِيُو jāniō.

جَانُنْ jānanu, v. a., to bring forth; } p. p. جَانِيُو jāniō.

جَانُنْ jānanu, v. a., to know; p. p. جَاتُو jātō.

جَبَهْنْ jabhanu, v. n., to be copulated; } p. p. جَدَهو jadhō.

جَهْنْ jahanu, v. a., to copulate;

جُنْبَنْ jumbanu, v. n., to be deeply engaged; p. p. جُتُو jutō or جُنْبِيُو jumbiō.

جُتُو jutō or جُنْبِيُو jumbiō.

جَهْپَامَنْ jhapāmanu, v. n., to decrease; p. p. جَهْپَالُو jhapālō.

jhapānō.

جَهْلَنْ jhalanu, v. a., to seize; p. p. جَهْلَتُو jhaltō.

جَهْلَتُو jhaltō.

چُکَنْ čukanu, v. n., to be finished; p. p. چُکُو čukō.

چُهْپَنْ čhupanu, v. n., to be touched; } p. p. چُهْتُو čhutō.

چُهْهَنْ čhuhanu, v. a., to touch;

چُهْتَنْ čhuṭanu, v. n., to get loose; p. p. چُهْتُو čhutō.

چِهْجَنْ čhijanu, v. n., to break;

چِهْنَنْ čhinanu, v. a., to break off; } p. p. چِهْنُو čhinō.

چُهَنْ čuhanu, v. a., to soak up; p. p. چُتَهو čuthō.

دُهَنْ dhunanu, v. a., to choose; p. p. دُهْتُو dhuō.

دُبَهَنْ ḍubhanu, v. n., to be milked; } p. p. دُدَهو ḍudhō.

دُهَنْ ḍuhanu, v. a., to milk;

دِرِجَنْ drijanu, v. n., to be afraid; p. p. دِرِنُو drinō.

دَرَهَنْ drahanu, v. n., to tumble down; } p. p. دَرَثَهُو drāthō.

دَرَاهَنْ drāhanu, v. caus., to demolish; } p. p. دَرَاثَهُو drāthō.

دِسَنْ ḍisanu, v. a., to see; p. p. دِثَهُو ḍithō.

دَهْرَافِنُ dhrāpanu, v. n., to be satiated; } p. p. دَهْرَافُو dhrāō.
 دَهْرَايِنُ dhrāinu, v. a., to satiate; }

دَاهَنُ dahanu, v. a., to torment; p. p. دَادَهُو dadho.

دَانُ dianu, v. a., to give; p. p. دَنُو dino.

رِجَنُ rijanu, v. n., to be watered; p. p. رِدُو ridō

رِجِيُو rijio.

رَجَهَنُ rajhanu, v. n., to be boiled; } p. p. رَادَهُو radhō.
 رَنْدَهَنُ randhanu, v. a., to cook; }

رُجَهَنُ rujhanu, v. n., to be busy; p. p. رُدَهُو rudhō.

رَچَنُ račanu, v. n., to be immersed; p. p. رَتُو ratō.

رُسنُ rusanu, v. n., to be sulky; p. p. رُتَهُو ruthō.

رُنبَهَنُ rumbhanu, } v. n., to be engaged; p. p. رُدَهُو rudhō
 رُبهَنُ rubhanu, } or رُنبهتُو rumbhiō.

رُونُ ruanu, v. n., to weep; p. p. رُنُو runō.

رِجَهَنُ rijhanu, v. n., to be pleased; p. p. رِيدَهُو rīdhō.

سَامَائِجَنُ sāmājanu, v. n., to arrive at the years of dis-
 cretion; p. p. سَامَانُو sāmānō or: سَامَايُو sāmāyō.

سُجَنُ sujanu, v. n., to be swollen; p. p. سُورُو sūnō.

سُجَنُ sujanu, v. n., to be heard; } p. p. سُئُو suō
 سُنَنُ sunanu, v. a., to hear; } سُئِيُو suniō.

سِجَهَنُ sijhanu, v. n., to be seethed; p. p. سِيدَهُو sidhō.

سُكَنُ sukanu, v. n., to be dry; p. p. سُكُو sukō.

سَلَنُ salanu, v. a., to divulge; p. p. سَلَتُو salto

سَلِيُو salio.

سَمَائِجَنُ samājanu, v. n., to be contained; p. p. سَمَانُو
 samānō.

سَجَّهَنُ samujhaṇu, v. a., to understand; p. p. سَتُو sa-
mutō or سَجَّهُو samujhō.

سَمَّهَنُ sumahaṇu, v. n., to go to sleep; p. p. سَتُو sutō
or سَمَّهَتُو sumhiō.

سَنَبَّهَرَنُ sambhiraṇu, v. n., to be prepared; p. p. سَنَبَّهَرُو sambhūrō,
سَنَبَّهَرُونُو sambhūnō or: سَنَبَّهَرِيَرُو sam-
bhirīō.

كَرَنُ karaṇu, v. a., to do; p. p. كِيُو kiō, كَيُو kayō; كَيْتُو
kitō.

كُومَاجِنُ kūmāṭijaṇu, { v. p., to wither; p. p. كُومَانُو ku-
كُومَاجِنُ kūmāiṇaṇu, { mānō or كُومَايُو kūmāyō.

كَهَامَنُ khāmaṇu, v. n., to be burnt; p. p. كَهَانُو khānō.

كَهَپَنُ khapaṇu, v. n., to be wearied; p. p. كَهَتُو khatō
or كَهَپَتُو khapiō.

كَهَپَنُ khupaṇu, v. n., to be fixed; p. p. كَهَتُو khutō or
كَهَپَتُو khupiō.

كَهَسَنُ khisaṇu, v. n., to be reduced; p. p. كَهَتَهو khithō.

كَهَسَنُ khusaṇu, v. n., to be plucked out; p. p. كَهَتَهو
khuthō or كَهَسَتُو khusiō.

كُهَنُ kuhanu, v. a., to kill; { p. p. كُتَهو kuthō.

كُسنُ kusaṇu, v. n., to be killed; }

كَهَنَنُ khaṇaṇu, v. a., to lift up; p. p. كَهَنِيو khāyō or
كَهَنِيُو khaniō.

كَهَنَنُ khuhaṇu, v. n., to be tired; p. p. كَهَتَهو khuthō.

كَپَنُ gapaṇu, v. n., to stick (in mud); p. p. گَتُو gatō.

گُتَنُ gutaṇu, v. a., to plait together; p. p. گُتُو gūtō.

گَسَنُ gasaṇu, v. n., to abrade; {

گَهَنُ gahaṇu, v. a., to rub; } p. p. گَهَتُو gathō.

كُسِنُ gusaṇu, v. n., to fail; p. p. { كُتِهَوُ guthō,
كُسِيَوُ gusiō.

لَايِنُ lainu, v. a., to apply; p. p. لَاتَوُ lātō or لَايَوُ lāyo.

لَاهَنُ lāhaṇu, v. caus., to cause to descend; p. p. لَاتِهَوُ lāthō.

لَبِهَنُ labhaṇu, v. n., to be obtained; } p. p. لَدِهَوُ ladhō.
لَاهَنُ lahaṇu, v. a., to obtain;

لِكَانُ likāṇu, v. n., to be hidden; p. p. لِكَوُ likō or لِكِيَوُ likiō.

لُبِنُ limbaṇu, v. a., to plaster; p. p. { لِيَتَوُ litō,
لِينِيَتَوُ limbiō.

لُوسَنُ lūsaṇu, v. n., to be scorched; } p. p. لُوتِهَوُ lūthō.
لُوهَنُ lūhaṇu, v. a., to scorch;

مَاجِنُ mačaṇu, v. n., to fatten; p. p. مَاتَوُ matō.

مُسِنُ musaṇu, v. n., to be unlucky; } p. p. مُتِهَوُ muthō.
مُهَنُ muhaṇu, v. a., to cause loss;

مُنْجَهَنُ munjhaṇu, v. n., to be perplexed; p. p. مُورِهَوُ murhō.

وَتَهَنُ vaṭhaṇu, v. a., to take; p. p. وَرَتَوُ vartō, وَرَدَوُ vardō, وَتِهَتَوُ vaṭhitō.

وَجَهَنُ vijhaṇu, v. a., to throw; p. p. وِدِهَوُ vidhō.

وِرْجَنُ virčaṇu, v. n., to be wearied; p. p. وِرْتَوُ virtō.

وِسَامَنُ visāmaṇu, v. n., to be extinguished; p. p. وِسَانَوُ visānō.

وَسَنُ vasaṇu, v. n., to fall (as rain), p. p. وَتِهَوُ vaṭhō,
أُتِهَوُ uthō, وَتِهَوُ vuthō.

وِكَامَنُ vikāmaṇu, v. n., to be sold; p. p. وِكَانَوُ vikānō.

وِكِنَنُ vikiṇaṇu, v. a., to sell; p. p. وِكِيَوُ vikiō.

وَنَجَنُ vanaṇu, v. n., to go; p. p. وِئَوِ viō.

وَنَهَجَنُ vēhejaṇu, v. p., to bathe; p. p. وِهَتَوِ vehetō.

وَهَنُ vahaṇu, v. n., to sit; p. p. وِئَهَوِ vēthō.

وَهَبَانُ hapāmaṇu, v. n., to lessen; p. p. وِهَبَانَوِ hapānō.

وَيَهَنُ yabhaṇu, v. n., to be copulated; } p. p. وِئَدَهَوِ yadhō.

وَيَهَنُ yahaṇu, v. a., to copulate;

§. 46.

The participle of the Future passive or the Gerundive¹⁾.

The participle of the Future passive or the Gerundive is formed by adding to the verbal root the affix inō (or anō, if the verb end in 'i' (ī) and optionally inō and anō, if the verb end in 'u' (ū)). The Gerundive can only be derived from active verbs; neuter verbs form also a similar participial noun by means of the affix inō, but it is not to be confounded with the Gerundive; see §. 9, 12.

The final vowel of a verbal root undergoes the same changes before the affix of the Gerundive, as before the affix of the Infinitive (§. 42), so that for practical purposes the rule may thus be given, that the termination of the Infinitive aṇu is simply changed to anō (inō), in order to form the participle of the Future passive. About the derivation of the affix inō see §. 8, 12.

وَيَجَهَنُ vijhaṇu, v. a., to throw; Gerund. وِئَجِهِنَوِ vijhinō, what is to be thrown.

وَدِيَنُ dīaṇu, v. a., to give; Gerund. وِئَدِيَنَوِ dīanō, what is to be given.

1) A kind of participle of the Future active is formed by attaching the affix hāru to the Infinitive, as: هَلَنَهَارُ halana-hāru, one who is about to go; see §. 9, 33.

دھوَنُ dhuanu, v. a., to wash; Gerund. دھوَنُو dhuanō
or دھوِينُو dhuinō, what is to be washed.

کھائِنُ khāinu, v. a., to eat; Gerund. کھائِنُو khāinō,
what is to be eaten.

§. 47.

Indeclinable past participles.

The Sindhī uses different past conjunctive or indeclinable participles.

1) The form most in use is that ending in ī (ō) or ē.

a) Neuter or such active verbs, as terminate in the Imperative in 'u', form the past conjunctive participle by joining to the verbal root the affix ī, as:

وَرَنُ var-anu, v. n., to return; past part. conj. وَرِي var-ī, having returned.

سُنَنُ sunanu, v. a., to hear; p. part. conj. سُنِي sun-ī, having heard.

Those verbs, which end in a radical ī, coalesce with the affix of the past part. conj. to ī, as:

تِهِنُ thianu, to become; Imper. تِهِي thiū; p. p. conj. تِهِي thī, having become.

Those verbs, which end in ū, shorten ū before the affix ī (as before the affix of the Infinitive), as:

پُونُ pu-anu, to string (beads); Imper. پُو پū-u; p. p. conj. پِي pu-ī.

But those verbs, which shorten radical final ō to 'u' in the Infinitive, restore the same again in the past participle conjunctive, as:

رُونُ ru-anu, to weep; Imper. رُو rō; p. p. conj. رُوِي rō-ī.

If in the Infinitive euphonic *v* has been inserted between the verbal root and the affix of the Infinitive, it is dropped again in the past part. conj., as:

چَرَنُ ča-v-aṇu, to speak; Imper. چَوُ ča-u; p. p. conj.

چَیِ ča-ī, having spoken.

پَرَنُ pa-v-aṇu, to fall, forms either regularly: پَیِ pa-ī,

or irregularly پَیِ pē-ī, having fallen.

The verb اَچَنُ ač-aṇu, to come, makes in the p. p. conj. either regularly اَچِ ač-ī, or irregularly اَچِ ač-ē.

The verbs دَیَنُ dā-aṇu, to give (Imper. دَیِ dē) and نَیَنُ nā-aṇu, to take away (Imper. نَیِ nē) make in the p. part. conj. دَیِ dē-ī and نَیِ nē-ī or نَیِ na-ī.

Passive verbs, be they derived from 'neuter or active themes, form the p. part. conj. quite in the same way, as verbs of the active voice, by adding the increment *ī* (ō) to the passive base, as:

لَوُتَجَنُ lō-ij-aṇu, v. p. to be moistened; p. part. conj.

لَوُتَجِ lō-ij-ī or لَوُتَجَوُ lō-ij-ō, having been moistened.

b) Active and causal verbs, ending in the Imperative in 'e', form the past part. conj. by adding the affix *ē* to the root of the verb, as:

مَلَنُ malaṇu, v. a., to polish; p. p. conj. مَلِ mal-ē, having polished.

لَکَّائِنُ lagāiṇu, v. caus., to apply; p. p. conj. لَکَّائِ lagā-ē, having applied.

2) The second past participle conjunctive is formed by adding to the root of the verb, be it transitive or intransitive, the affix *yō* (or *iō*). This form is only used with a Present, Future or Imperative, and may therefore in most cases be translated by the present participle, as:

مَوْتَانُ mōṭaṇu, v. n., to return; p. p. conj. مَوْتِيُو mōṭ-yō (mōṭ-iō).

سِيْتَهَانُ sithaṇu, v. a., to compress; p. p. conj. سِيْتَهِيُو sith-iō.

If the verb end in 'i' (ī), it coalesces with the affix iō, as:

دِيَانُ dīaṇu, to give; p. p. conj. دِيِيُو dī-iō.

پِيَانُ pi-aṇu, to dink (Imper. پِيِيْ pīū); p. p. conj. پِيِيُو piō.

Those verbs, which shorten original ō to 'u' in the Infinitive, restore the same again in the p. p. conj., as:

دِهْوَانُ dhu-aṇu, to wash (Imper. دِهْوِ dhō-u); p. p. conj. دِهْوِيُو dhō-yō.

رُوَانُ ru-aṇu, to weep (Imper. رُوِ rō); p. p. conj. رُوِيُو rō-yō.

The verbs كَهْنَانُ khaṇaṇu, to lift up, هَانَانُ haṇaṇu, to strike, كَرَانُ karaṇu, to do, drop, as in the past participle, their final radical before the affix yō, as:

كَهْنَانُ khaṇaṇu, p. p. conj. كَهْنِيُو khā-yō or: كَهْيُو kha-yō.

هَانَانُ haṇaṇu, p. p. conj. هَانِيُو hā-yō or: هَاْيُو ha-yō.

كَرَانُ karaṇu, p. p. conj. كَاْيُو ka-yō or: كِيُو ki-yō (ki-ō).

3) The third past participle conjunctive is formed by adding to the root of transitive verbs, irrespectively of their termination in the Imperative, the affix jē (i-jē), and jī (i-jī) to the root of neuter verbs.

This form is generally used with the Present and Past tenses.

كَهْنَانُ khaṇaṇu, v. a., to lift up (Imper. كَهْنِ khaṇu);
p. p. conj. كَهْنِيْ khaṇ-i-jē.

وِرْجَانُ virčaṇu, v. n., to be tired; p. p. conj. وِرْجِيْ virč-i-jī.

4) The fourth past participle conjunctive is formed

by putting **کري** karē, the p. p. conj. of **کرن** karāṇu, after the past partic. conj. ending in ī or ē. This compound form is used with the Present, the Future, the Past tenses and the Imperative, as:

وري varī karē, having returned; Inf. **ورن** varāṇu.

ملي malē karē, having polished; Inf. **ملن** malāṇu.

لوئجي loij-ī karē, having been moistened; Inf. **لوئجن** loij-aṇu.

Annotation. The indeclinable past participles are formed in Sanskrit either by the affix tvā or ya. In Prākṛit tvā is changed to tūṇa and (by elision of t) to ūṇa, and ya becomes ia. In Sindhī the first form of the past participle conjunctive ending in ī (or ē) corresponds to the Prākṛit affix ia. The second form of the p. p. conj., ending in yō, is identical with the first, and the same must be said of the third form ending in jī (or jē), the Sanskrit affix ya (Prākṛit ia) having been changed in Sindhī to ja (= jē), as in the case of the Passive.

This is fully borne out by the kindred idioms. In Hindūs-tānī we find the following forms of the past part. conjunctive (Inf. mār-nā): mār, mār-ē, mār-kē, mār-karkē. In the first form mār the affix ia has apparently been dropped altogether, whereas in the second mār-ē the affix ia has been contracted to ē. The affix kē in mār-kē, corresponds to the Sindhī affix jē, j, having been changed to a guttural, with transition of the Media into a Tenuis. Mār-kar and mār-karkē are compound past participles conj. like the Sindhī form. Similarly we find in Panjābī (Inf. ghall-nā, to send): ghall and ghall-kē.

The Gujārātī uses two forms of the past part. conj., one ending in ī (used especially in compound verbs), as lakhī, having written, and the other in īnī, as lakhīnī. The first form is identical with the Sindhī affix ī, the latter, īnī, corresponds to the Prākṛit affix ūṇa, ī having been substituted for ū.

The Marāṭhī uses only one form of the past part. conj., ending in ūṇ, as karūṇ, having done; this affix quite coincides with the Prākṛit affix ūṇa. — The Bangālī uses either

the affix *yā* (*iyā*), as *dēkhiyā* (*dēk-ē* or *dēkh-ī* also being employed), or the Locative of the past participle, *dēkhītē*, in the state of having seen.

Chapter XIII.

Formation of the Tenses and Persons.

§. 48.

In treating of the Tenses in Sindhī we must distinguish simple and compound Tenses.

I. Simple tenses.

In the Active and Passive Voice there are only three simple tenses, viz.: the Potential, the Aorist and the Future.

1) The Potential, which implies possibility, uncertainty or a wish, is formed by adding to the root of the verb the inflexional terminations. The absolute personal pronouns may also be put before the verb, where any stress is to be laid on the person, but they may also be omitted, where such is not the case, the respective person being sufficiently pointed out by the inflexional termination itself.

Neuter and such intransitive verbs, as end in the Imperative in 'u', and all passive verbs, receive the same personal terminations, whereas those transitive verbs, which end in the Imperative in 'e', differ from them in the I and partly in the II pers. Sing. and in all the persons of the Plural, by retaining their characteristic 'i' (e) before the inflexional terminations.

Personal terminations of the Potential.

Verbs ending in the Imperative in 'u'.		Verbs ending in the Imper. in 'e'.	
Singular.	Plural.	Singular.	Plural.
I pers. -ā	-ū	-yā, -iā	-yū, iū
II pers. -ī, ē	-ō	-iē, yē; ī, ē	-yō, iō
III pers. ē	-ane	-ē	-īne, ine

In reference to verbs, ending in the Imperative in 'u', it is to be observed:

a) A final long vowel is shortened before all the personal terminations in the same way, as before the affix of the Infinitive; e. g. رَوْنُ ru-ā, to weep, Imper. رُو, rō, Potential I pers. رَتَانُ ru-ā, I may weep; پِيْنُ pi-ā, to drink, Imper. پِيِيْ pīu, Potential I pers. پِيَانُ pi-ā, I may drink; پُوْنُ pu-ā, to string (beads), Imper. پُوْءُ pū-u, Potential I pers. پِيَانُ pu-ā, I may string (beads). In poetry an original long vowel may be restored again in the III pers. Sing., the personal termination ē being at the same time shortened to 'e', as: رَوْءُ rō-e, he may weep, instead of رُوِيْ ru-ē.

b) The euphonic v, which is inserted between the root of a verb ending in 'a', and the affix of the Infinitive, is commonly retained in the Singular and the III pers. of the Plural, but dropped commonly in the I and II pers. Plural, as: Inf. پَوْنُ pa-v-ā, to fall, Potential, Sing. I pers. پَوَانُ pa-v-ā, II pers. پَوِيْنُ pa-v-ē, III pers. پَوِيْ pa-v-ē; III pers. Plur. پَوِيْنُ pa-v-ane; Plur. I pers. پَوِيْنُ pa-ū, II pers. پَوِيْنُ pa-ō. In the II and III pers.

Sing. however *v* may be also dropped, as چَئِين ča-ē, thou mayst say; چَئِي ča-ē¹), he may say.

c) In the III pers. Plur. verbs, which end in 'u' (ū) or original ō) and 'a' (with euphonic *v* inserted) frequently contract the inflexional termination *u-ane*, *a-v-ane*, to *ūne*, as: رُونُ rūne, they may weep, instead of رُونُ ru-ane; پُونُ pūne, they may fall, instead of پُونُ pavane; چُونُ čūne, they may say, instead of چُونُ čavane.

A similar contraction takes place in the II pers. Sing. and in the III person Plur., if a verb end in 'i' (ī), as: دِئِين dī, thou mayst give, instead of دِئِين dī-ē; دِئِين dīne, they may give, instead of دِئِين dīane; نِئِين nī, thou mayst take away, نِئِين nīne, they may take away; پِئِين pīne, they make drink; کِئِين khīne, they may eat; but the uncontracted form is equally in use.

d) Verbs, which end in a radical ā, and in the Imperative in 'u', insert in the I pers. Sing. and Plur. and in the II pers. Plur. a euphonic *y* before the flexional termination, as: بُدْهَآيَان būdhā-y-ā, I may become old, بُدْهَآيُون būdhā-y-ū, بُدْهَآيَو būdhā-y-ō, we, you may become old. In the III pers. Plur. they end likewise, for euphony's sake, not in *ane*, but in *ine*, as: کِهَآئِين khā-ine, they may eat. An exception to this rule is کِهَآ khā, I may eat, instead of کِهَآيَان khā-y-ā.

In reference to verbs, ending in the Imperative in 'e', it is to be observed:

1) The characteristic 'i' (e) of the Imperative may be contracted with the inflexional termination of the

1) چَئِي ča-ē is even contracted to چِي čē, when used more in the sense of a particle, to quote the words of the speaker ('says he').

I and II pers. Sing. and the II and I pers. of the Plur. to yā, yē (yī), yū, yō, or not, if the verb end in a consonant; but the contraction must take place, if the verb end in a vowel, as: چھڌيان چھڌيآ chadyā, or چھڌيان چھڌيآ chadyē or چھڌين چھڌيآ chadie etc.; but: بهايان bha-yā, بهايين bha-yē etc. from بهائنُ bhāinu, to think. In poetry however the looser form is also in use, as: بهائيان bhā-iā or بهائيان bhā-iyā. In the II pers. Sing. the inflexional termination yē or yī may also be contracted to ē or ī, as: ساندھين sāndhē or ساندھين sāndhī, thou mayst cherish.

In the III pers. Plural 'i' is generally lengthened to 'ī', and the initial 'a' of the inflexional termination āni dropped in order to distinguish the neuter and active verbs. But ine is again frequently pronounced and written ine, especially when the verb ends in a long ā, as: گالھائين gālhā-ine, they may speak.

2) The verb کړن karanu, to do, forms the III pers. Plural either regularly in کړين karine, or irregularly in کن kane or کين kine.

Annotation. The Sanskrit Potential has already quite disappeared in Prākṛit. But, abstracted from this significant circumstance, there can be no doubt, that the Sindhī Potential corresponds originally to the Prākṛit Present tense. In Sindhī itself there are many reminiscences, that the Potential properly represents the old Present of the Prākṛit; for it is very often, chiefly in poetry, used without the characteristic تھ, in the sense of the Present. After the custom had gained ground, to express the Present by joining the تھ thō to the old Present, the old Present was reserved to denote a Potential mood. The inflexional terminations of the Sindhī Potential correspond very closely to those of the Prākṛit Present, as: Prāk. I pers. Sing. āmi (Sansk. āmi), Sindhī ā; II pers. Sing. asi (Sansk. asi), Sindhī ē (or ī), 'a' being dropped (as a conjunctive vowel) and s

being first changed to *h* and then dropped altogether; III pers. Sing. *a-ti* or *a-di* (Sansk. *a-ti*), and by elision of *t* or *d*: *a-e*, Sindhī *ē*. In the I pers. Plur. the Prākṛit has different terminations, as *ā-mō* (Sansk. *ā-mah*), *ā-mu*, *ā-ma*, or *a-mō*, *a-mū* etc. These latter terminations have given rise to the Sindhī terminations *ū*, *m* being elided and final 'u' lengthened to *ū* and nasalized at the same time; II pers. Plur. *a-ha* (Sansk. *a-tha*), Sindhī *ō*, *h* having been dropped and 'a' lengthened to *ō*; III pers. Plur. *a-nti* (Sansk. *a-nti*), Sindhī *ane*, *t* having been elided in this conjunct letter. — The Hindūstānī, Panjābī and Gujārātī coincide in this respect with the Sindhī, forming the Potential in the same way, as the Sindhī, only with modified inflexional terminations. The proper Potential of the Marāṭhī, which is now commonly called by the Grammarians the "Past Habitual"¹⁾, exhibits likewise the signs of the old Prākṛit Present. — The Bangālī alone has preserved the old Present tense, formed by joining the inflexional terminations to the root of the verb; the Present is in Bangālī also used in the sense of a Potential.

2) The Sindhī has a regular Aorist or Praeterite tense denoting, that an action once took place in time past.

a) The Aorist is formed from neuter verbs, by joining to the past participle the terminations of the (now in Sindhī) obsolete substantive verb *as*, *to be*. This tense is therefore originally a compound, and the participle must be put, according to the gender referred to, either in the masc. or the feminine. The inflexional terminations are only affixed to the I and II pers. of the Sing. masc. and fem., to the I pers. of the Plur. masc. and fem. and to the II pers. of the Plur. masc., the III person of the Sing. and Plur. masc. and fem. being left without any inflexional terminations, as well as the II pers. of the Plur. fem.

b) From transitive verbs, the participle past of which always has a passive signification, the Aorist is

1) As in the Marāṭhī Grammar, published by the American Mission, Bombay 1854.

formed by joining to the past participle the same inflexional terminations, as to that of neuter verbs, the III pers. of the Sing. and Plur. masc. and fem. and the II person of the Plur. fem. being likewise left without inflexional terminations. If the Agent is to be expressed, this must be put in the Instrumental, the participle past agreeing throughout with its subject (expressed or only hinted at) in gender and number.

The inflexional terminations of the Aorist are:

Singular.		Plural.	
Masc.	Fem.	Masc.	Fem.
I pers. -se	-se	-sī, sū	-sī, sū.
II pers. -ē	-ā (ē)	-u	—
III pers. —	—	—	—

The past participle of neuter and active verbs commonly ends, as we have seen, in yō or iō, fem. ī. If therefore the past participle be of the masc. gender, its final ō is shortened before the inflexional termination of the I person to u = u-se, whereas the final ī of the fem. gender is changed, as before the other pronominal suffixes, to ya or ia = ya-se, ia-se; e. g.

هَلِيَّوِ haliō, m., gone, I pers. masc. هَلِيَّوِ haliu-se, I went or have gone, fem. هَلِيَّوِ haliā-se; in the same way دِثَّوِ dithō, past participle of دِثَنُ dīṣṇu, seen: دِثَّوِ dīthū-se, masc. J was seen, fem. دِثَّوِ dīthia-se or: دِثَّوِ dīthya-se. In poetry though iō or yō may keep its place before the inflexional termination se, and ia or ya may be lengthened to ia or yā, as: چَہَدِیَّوِ čhaḍiō-se, I was left, fem. چَہَدِیَّوِ čhaḍiā-se.

Before the inflexional termination of the II person masc., ē, final ō is dropped altogether, as: هَلِيَّوِ hali-ē,

thou hast gone; ڌٿهين ḍiṭh-ē, thou wast seen; before the inflexional termination of the II person fem. ā, final ī is shortened to 'i' = i-ā (occasionally also as in the masc. to i-ē), as: هلي hali-ā; thou hast gone, ڌٿهين ḍiṭhi-ā, thou wast seen.

In the first person Plural the inflexional termination sī (sē), sū is affixed to the masc. or fem. Plural of the past participle, as: هلياين haliā-sī, we have gone, هليونسين haliū-sī (fem.); ڌٿهاسين ḍiṭhā-sī, we were seen, ڌٿهونسين ḍiṭhiū-sī (fem.).

In the II person masc. the final ā of the Plural (هليا) is shortened before the inflexional termination 'u' = a-u, as: هلياو halya-u, you went; ڌٿهاو ḍiṭha-u, you were seen; to the II person fem. no inflexional termination is added, the Plural fem. of the past participle alone being used, the subject of which must be indicated either by the absolute personal pronoun or gathered from the context.

It is to be noticed, that in poetry the inflexional terminations are frequently left out, in which case the subject, if it be not indicated otherwise (by an absolute personal pronoun etc.), must be gleaned from the context.

Annotation. The three praeterite tenses of the Sanskrit, with the exception of a few traces (Varar. VII, 23), have been already discarded in Prākṛit, their formation being apparently too intricate for the conception of the vulgar. In their lieu the past participle has been substituted in the sense of an Aorist, either with or without inflexional terminations, the Perfect proper being denoted by a compound tense. The inflexional terminations, which are affixed in Sindhī to the past participle, are derived from the Sanskrit substantive verb 'as', to be, though they be now so much mutilated and differ so considerably from the forms used in Prākṛit (Lassen, p. 345), that they are scarcely recognisable. The termination of the I person Sing. -s

corresponds to the Sanskrit *asmi* (Prāk. *amhi*), 'm' having been thrown out in *Sindhī*.

In the II pers. (Sansk. and Prāk. *asi*) *s* = *h*, has been dropped and final *i* (*e*) lengthened in the masc. to *ē*, whereas in the feminine the initial 'a' of *asi* has been retained, and the latter half of it dropped altogether. The masculine termination *ē* is however also now and then applied to the feminine.

In the I person Plural the Sanskrit *smāh* (Prākrit *amhō*) has been changed to *si* (*sē*) or *sū*; in the II person masc. the Sanskrit *stha* has been first changed to *tha*, thence to *ha*, and with the elision of 'h' to 'u'.

In *Hindūstānī*, *Panjābī* and *Gujarātī* the Aorist is made up by the past participle without the addition of inflexional terminations, but in *Marāṭhī* inflexional terminations are affixed to the past participle, as in *Sindhī*. The same is the case in *Bangālī*, but with this difference, that it can form an Aorist of the active voice not only from neuter verbs, but also from active verbs; in the Passive though it must have recourse to a composition.

3) The Future,

which implies in *Sindhī* not only the sense of futurity, but also of possibility, uncertainty, is formed

a) In the Active Voice, by affixing to the present participle the same inflexional terminations as to the Aorist.

b) In the Passive Voice, by affixing to the present participle passive the same inflexional terminations, as to the present participle of the Active.

Annotation. The *Sindhī* has quite left the traces of the *Prākrit* in forming the Future and fallen back to a composition, in order to make up for the lost future tense. It has approached in this respect again nearer to the Sanskrit, which likewise forms the I Future of the active voice by affixing the inflexional terminations of the substantive verb 'as', to be, to the participial noun ending in *tā* (*tr*). The modern Arian idioms differ very greatly from each other as to the method, in which they form the Future. The *Hindūstānī* and *Panjābī* express the Future by means of a compound verb; they add to the Potential of a verb the past participle *gā* (instead of the common *giā*), from the root *gam*, to go, the gender of which must agree with the subject.

in question. This is properly a Desiderative, and not a Future; but already in Sanskrit the Desiderative is now and then used in the sense of a Future. Thus we have in Hindūstānī کَرُونْگا karūn-gā, masc., and کَرُونْگِي karūn-gī, fem. I shall do, literally: I am gone (گا gā), that I do (کَرُونْ karū), i. e. I will do or shall do; similarly in Panjābī: karāngā, masc., kā-rāngī, fem.

The Gujārātī on the other hand accedes again more closely to the Prākṛit; the conjunctive vowel of the Prākṛit (i) has been lengthened in the I person Sing. and Plur., in order to make up for the double ss, which has been reduced to a single one (cf. Introd. §. 19), as: lakh-īs, I shall write, Plur. lakh-īsū, we shall write.

In the II and III person Sing. and Plur. the conjunctive vowel has been dropped altogether, as II pers. Sing. lakh-sē, thou wilt write etc.

The Future of the Marāṭhī is quite peculiar, and, as it seems, made up from the different terminations of the Future, used in Prākṛit.

The termination of the I person Sing. in (ēn) seems to have arisen from the Prākṛit termination himi (Varar. VII, 12), and that of the I person Plural ũ, from the Prākṛit sisi (= hisi; Lassen, p. 352), the final 'i' of which has been dropped and in compensation thereof medial 'i' lengthened = sīs; final 's' has been hardened to 'r' and thence to 'l'. The II person Plur. ends in āl, which I would refer to the Prākṛit termination -ssaha, the latter half of which (aha) seems to have been dropped, and the conjunct ss reduced to 's' by lengthening the preceding (conjunctive) vowel = ās; 's' again seems to be hardened to r = l. A similar process appears in the III pers. Sing., ending in īl (ēl); the Prākṛit termination is hidi (= sidi); the initial 'h' has been elided and id(i) lengthened to īd, final 'd' being changed at the same time (as it is usual in the past participle) to 'l'. The III person Plural, ending in tīl is quite perplexing. We would refer to the fact, that in Prākṛit hittha is also used instead of hissa (tth = ss; Lassen, p. 353; Varar. VII, 15), though restricted to the I pers. Plural. In Marāṭhī it appears, that tth has also been used in the III pers. Plural, so that the III pers. Plural would properly terminate in hitthintī; of this initial hi has been elided and the aspirate conjunct tth reduced to tt = t; n is in Marāṭhī always dropped in the termination of the III pers. Plural and

in consequence the preceding vowel (i) lengthened; thus we get tīt, of which final 't' must have been changed to l = tīl.

The Bangālī forms the Future by affixing to the root of the verb the inflexional termination *iba*; this is very remarkable and without any analogy in any of the Prākṛit dialects. It reminds us very strongly of the Latin termination *bo* in the formation of the Active Future of the I and II conjugation, which Bopp (Comp. Gramm. II, §§. 526, 663) derives from the Sanskrit *bhū*. It would be near at hand, to compare this affix with the Sindhī affix *bō*, employed to form the present participle passive; but its origin will hardly allow of such a comparison.

II. Compound tenses.

1) The compound Potential.

The Potential may be compounded:

a) with the present participle and the Potential of the auxiliary verb *هُونُ* huanu, to be, in order to denote an enduring action or state, as: *آئُون پَرَهَنَدُو هُئَان* I may be reading.

b) with the past participle and the Potential of the auxiliary verb *هُونُ* huanu, to be, as: *آئُون رِلْتُو هُئَان* I may have wandered about; *مُونِ دِثَهو هُئِي* it may have been seen by me, i. e. I may have seen it.

2) The present tense.

The Sindhī has two forms for the Present tense:

a) The common or indefinite Present tense, which denotes, that an action is commenced or going on at the time being, is formed by putting after the Potential (and occasionally before it) the augment *تَهو* thō¹), which must

1) Instead of *تَهو* thō: *پِتُو* peō (fem. *پِیٹی* per) is also used, but with this difference, that a more enduring action is thereby denoted. Cf. §. 53, 2.

agree with the gender of the subject, as: **آئُون هَلان تَهو** I go; fem. **آئُون هَلان تهي** I go.

b) The definite Present, which implies habit, usage or that an action is still going on at the time of speaking, is formed by compounding the present participle with the Present of the auxiliary verb **هُون** huanu, as: **آئُون لِكَهَنْدُو آئِيَان** I am writing, or I am used to write; **وَدَنْدُو آهي** he is in the habit of weeping.

In poetry the auxiliary verb is often left out and the participle used by itself, determined by a noun or pronoun as subject.

Annotation. The Potential, which, as stated already, represents the old Present tense, is no longer considered sufficient, to express the Present by itself; the augment **تَهو** thō is therefore added, to render more prominent the sense of the Present. This augment **تَهو** thō is derived from the Sanskrit adjective **स्था** stha (as used at the end of compounds) and signifies 'standing', as: **آئُون پَسَان تَهو** I see, literally: standing I see, I am in the state of seeing.

In Hindūstānī thā is used as an augment for forming the Imperfect, whereas the common or indefinite Present is expressed by the present participle alone, and the definite Present by the addition of the auxiliary verb hōnā. The same is the case in Panjābī, with the only difference, that the Sanskrit stha has been assimilated in Panjābī to sā. In Gujarātī the indefinite Present is formed by adding the auxiliary (defective) verb **चाहू** etc., I am etc. (derived from the Sansk. substantive verb 'as', to be) to the Potential, as: **हू लखू चाहू**, I write, and the definite Present by joining the Present of the auxiliary verb **होवू**, to be, to the present participle, as: **हू लखो होवू चाहू**, I am writing.

The Marāṭhī forms the common or indefinite Present by affixing the inflexional terminations of the Sansk. substantive verb 'as', to be, to the present participle, ending (originally) in tā, with which the terminations coalesce, as **तों**, **तोंस** etc. Besides this the Marāṭhī uses three other compound forms for the definite Present, the first of which is compounded with the present

participle ending in 'at' or 'it', and the irregular form of the auxiliary verb *asaṇē*, viz: *āhē*, as: *mī lihīt āhē*, I am writing; the second adds the auxiliary verb *āhē* etc. to the indefinite Present ending in *tō* etc., as: *mī lihītō āhē*, I am writing. Both these forms of the definite Present, which do not differ from each other as to their signification; denote an action going on or enduring at the time of speaking. The third form adds to the present participle ending in 'at' or 'it', the regular Present of the auxiliary verb *asaṇē* to be, viz: *asatō* etc., as: *mī lihīt asatō*, I am in the habit of writing, and implies a habit, custom or natural disposition; it may therefore be termed the Present Habitual. — The Bangālī has, as noticed already, a simple Present, formed by affixing the inflexional terminations to the root of the verb, and a definite Present formed by uniting the auxiliary verb *āchi* etc. with the present participle ending in *itē*, the initial *ā* of which is dropped in this composition, as: *āmi dēkhitechi*, I am seeing.

3) The Habitual Aorist,

which implies, that an action was repeated in past time or went on at the time indicated, is formed by adding to the Aorist the indeclinable augment *تھی* *thē*, which may follow or precede it, as the augment of the Present; e. g.: *هو آيو تھی* *he came (repeatedly), or: was coming.*

This tense is quite peculiar to the Sindhī, no analogy to it being met with in the kindred idioms. The indeclinable augment *تھی* *thē* is apparently the Locative of *thō*, and signifies: 'in standing', which agrees well with the import of this tense.

4) The Imperfect,

which denotes, that an action was progressing or repeated at a particular time past, is formed by adding to the present participle the Aorist of the auxiliary verb *هون* *huanu*, as: *رُندو هوس* *I was wandering about;* *لودھيو هوس* *I was being driven out.* The Imperfect may be rendered more emphatic by premising the past par-

ticiples **پٿو** piō (having fallen), as: **هُوَ پٿا ڏسندا هئا**, they were in the habit of seeing.

Annotation. In Hindūstānī the Imperfect is formed, as already alluded to, by adding thā to the present participle; the same is the case in Panjabi, which adds sā; the Marāṭhī joins the Aorist of the auxiliary verb asanē, viz: hōtō etc. to the present participle ending in at or it. The same method is kept to in Gujarātī and Bangālī, in the latter language with the slight difference, that the Aorist of the auxiliary verb (viz: ṣhilām etc.) is coalescing with the participle present.

5) The Perfect,

which implies an action, that has been completed in time past, is formed by adding the auxiliary verb **آهيان** āhiyā etc. to the past participle, as: **وڌو آهيان**, I am gone, **جهليو آهيان** I have been seized.

Annotation. All the kindred idioms form the Perfect in the same way as the Sindhī, by adding the Present of the auxiliary verb to the past participle.

6) The Pluperfect,

which implies an action, that has been completed in remote past time chiefly in relation to some other time, expressed or only understood, is formed by adding the Aorist of the auxiliary verb **هون** huanu to the past participle, as: **هليو هوس** I had gone; **دهتي هيس** I had been enticed (fem.).

Annotation. In Hindūstānī and Panjābī the Pluperfect is formed by adding thā and sā respectively to the past participle. In Marāṭhī the Aorist hōtō etc. is joined to the past participle and similarly in Gujarātī hatō etc. In Bangālī (which must not resort to a passive construction in the case of transitive verbs, as the other idioms) the Aorist of the auxiliary verb, viz: ṣhilām etc. is united with the past participle ending in yā.

7) The compound Future tenses.

There are two compound Future tenses in Sindhī:

a) The one is compounded with the participle present and the Future of the auxiliary verb هُونُ huanu, which may be termed the Definite Future, as: ٿِسَندُو هُونْدَسِ I shall be seeing.

b) The other is compounded with the past participle and the Future of the auxiliary verb هُونُ huanu, and may be termed the Past Future, as: هَلِئُو هُونْدَسِ I shall have gone; هُو پڊهَو هُونْدُو he will have been bound.

Both these tenses do not only denote futurity in its strict sense, but imply also possibility, uncertainty or doubt.

Chapter XIV.

The auxiliary verbs.

§. 49.

A. The auxiliary verb هُونُ huanu, to be.

Before we can fully develop the conjugational process of the Sindhī, we must first describe the inflexion of the auxiliary verb هُونُ huanu, to be, by means of which the compound tenses of other verbs are being made up.

Infinitive: هُونُ hu-anu, to be.

Imperative.

SING.

PLUR.

II pers.	هو or هوء	be thou.	هو or هئو	be ye.
	hō	hō-u,	hō	hu-ō,

Precative.

	SING.		PLUR.
II pers.	هَيْج hu-iĵe	} mayst thou be.	هَجُو hu-jo, may ye be.
	هَوَيْج hō-iĵe		
	هَج hu-ju		
	هَوَج hō-ĵe		

Participles.

- 1) Present participle: هُونْدُو hūndō, being.
- 2) Past participle: هُو hō, هَتُو huō, having been.

Verbal noun.

هَنْنُو hu-anō, being.

I. THE POTENTIAL.

1) THE SIMPLE POTENTIAL.

SINGULAR.

- I pers. هَجَانِ أَتُونِ هَنَانِ āũ hu-ā, huĵ-ā, I may be.
 II pers. هَجِينِ تُونِ هَتِينِ tũ hu-ē, huĵ-ē, thou mayst be.
 III pers. هَجِي هُو هَتِي hũ hu-ē; huĵ-ē, he may be.

PLURAL.

- I pers. هَجُونِ أَسِينِ هُونِ asĩ hũ, huĵ-ũ, we may be.
 II pers. هَجُو أَهِينِ هُو هَتُو ahĩ hō, hu-ō, huĵ-ō, you may be.
 III pers. هَجِنِ هُونِ هُو هَتِنِ hũ hu-ane, hũne, huĵ-ane, they may be.

In the II pers. Sing. هَجِينِ هَتِينِ hu-ĩ, huĵ-ĩ is equally in use. In poetry we meet in the III person Sing. frequently هُو hō-e, instead of هَتِي hu-ē.

2) THE COMPOUND POTENTIAL.

a) The present participle with the Potential

هُنَّ etc. 'May be being'.

SINGULAR.

*Masc.**Fem.*

I pers.	هُنَّ، هُونْدُو هُنَّ ¹⁾	هُنَّ، هُونْدِي هُنَّ
	hūdō hu-ā, hūj-ā.	hūndī hu-ā, hūj-ā.
II pers.	هُنَّ، هُونْدُو هُنَّ	هُنَّ، هُونْدِي هُنَّ
	hūdō hu-ē, hūj-ē.	hūndī hu-ē, hūj-ē.
III pers.	هُنَّ، هُونْدُو هُنَّ	هُنَّ، هُونْدِي هُنَّ
	hūdō huē, hūj-ē.	hūndī hu-ē, hūj-ē.

PLURAL.

I pers.	هُنَّ، هُونْدَا هُنَّ	هُنَّ، هُونْدِئُونْ هُنَّ
	hūdā hū, hūj-ū.	hūndiū ²⁾ hū, hūj-ū.
II pers.	هُنَّ، هُونْدَا هُنَّ	هُنَّ، هُونْدِئُونْ هُنَّ
	hūdā hu-ō, hūj-ō.	hūndiū hu-ō, hūj-ō.
III pers.	هُنَّ، هُونْدَا هُنَّ	هُنَّ، هُونْدِئُونْ هُنَّ
	hūdā hu-ane, hūj-ane.	hūndiū hu-ane, hūj-ane.

b) The past participle with the Potential

هُنَّ etc. 'May have been'.

SINGULAR.

I pers.	هُنَّ، هُونْدُو هُنَّ huō huā.	هُنَّ، هُونْدِي هُنَّ huī huā.
II pers.	هُنَّ، " " huē.	هُنَّ، " " huē.
III pers.	هُنَّ، " " huē.	هُنَّ، " " huē.

1) The absolute personal pronouns are left out in the following tenses, as they may be easily supplied.

2) The Plural fem. هُونْدِئُونْ hūndiū may also be pronounced and written هُونْدِئُونْ hūndyū or هُونْدِئُونْ hūndiyū, and so all the present participles in the fem. Plural.

*Masc.**Fem.*

PLURAL.

I pers.	هُنَا huā hū.	هُيُونَ huyū hū.
II pers.	هُنَا huō.	هُنَا huō.
III pers.	هُنَا huane.	هُنَا huane.

II. THE PRESENT.

1) THE INDEFINITE PRESENT.

The Potential with تَهْو thō.
'I am'.

SINGULAR.

I pers.	هُنَا huā thō.	هُنَا huā thī.
II pers.	هُنَا huē thō.	هُنَا huē thī.
III pers.	هُنَا huē thō.	هُنَا huē thī.

PLURAL.

I pers.	هُنَا hū thā.	هُنَا hū thiū.
II pers.	هُنَا huō thā.	هُنَا huō thiū.
III pers.	هُنَا huane thā.	هُنَا huane thiū.

Old Present of the Sansk. substantive verb
'as' to be. 'I am'.

SING.

PLUR.

I pers.	آهِيَا āhiyā.	آهِيُون āhiyū.
II pers.	آهِيَا، آهِيَا āhē, āhī.	آهِيَا āhiyō.
III pers.	آهِيَا āhē.	آهِيَا، آهِيَا āhine, āhine.

This form is commonly used in the Present, and always in compound tenses, whereas هُنَا تَهْو huā thō. is seldom to be met with, and never in a compound tense.

The initial vowel *ā* is often found without a nasal sound as: *آهِيَان* *āhiyā* instead of *آهِيَان* *āhiyā*. When *كُوْ* *kō na*, *كَ* *kā na*, *كِي* *kī na* not any one etc. precedes *آهي*, they are contracted to *كُونَهِي* *kōnhē*, *كَانَهِي* *kānhē*, *كِنَهِي* *kīnhē*; *نَ* *na*, not, preceding *آهِيَان* etc. may coalesce with it, as: *نَاهِي* *nāhē* or: *نَ آهي* *āhē*, he is not.

2) THE DEFINITE PRESENT.

The present participle with the auxiliary: *آهِيَان*
'I am being'.

SINGULAR.

	<i>Masc.</i>	<i>Fem.</i>
I pers.	<i>هوندو آهِيَان</i> <i>hūdō āhiyā.</i>	<i>هوندي آهِيَان</i> <i>hūndī āhiyā.</i>
II pers.	<i>هوندو آهِيَان</i> <i>hūdō āhē.</i>	<i>هوندي آهِيَان</i> <i>hūndī āhē.</i>
III pers.	<i>آهي</i> „ „ <i>āhē.</i>	<i>آهي</i> „ „ <i>āhē.</i>

PLURAL.

I pers.	<i>هوندا آهِيُون</i> <i>hūdā āhiyū.</i>	<i>هونديُون آهِيُون</i> <i>hūndiū āhiyū.</i>
II pers.	<i>هوندا آهِيُو</i> <i>hūdā āhiyō.</i>	<i>هونديُون آهِيُو</i> <i>hūndiū āhiyō.</i>
III pers.	<i>هوندا آهِيِن</i> <i>hūdā āhini.</i>	<i>هونديُون آهِيِن</i> <i>hūndiū āhine.</i>

III. THE IMPERFECT.

The present participle with the Aorist of the auxiliary: *هوس*. 'I was' or: 'was being'.

SINGULAR.

	<i>Masc.</i>	<i>Fem.</i>
I pers.	<i>هوندو هوس</i> <i>hūdō hōse.</i>	<i>هوندي هوس</i> <i>hūndī huyase.</i>

*Masc.**Fem.*

II pers. هُونْدُو هُتِين hūndō huē. هُونْدِي هُتِين hūndī huiā¹).

III pers. هُونْدُو هُو hūndō hō. هُونْدِي هُتِي، هِي hūndī huī, hī.

PLURAL.

I pers. هُونْدَا هُتَاسِين hūnda huāsī. هُونْدِئُون هُيُونْسِين hūndiū huyūsī.

II pers. هُونْدَا هُو، هُتُو hūnda hua-u, huō. هُونْدِئُون هُيُون hūndiū huyū.

III pers. هُونْدَا هَا، هَا hūnda huā, hā. هُونْدِئُون هُيُون hūndiū huyū.

IV. THE AORIST.

1) THE SIMPLE AORIST.

The past participle with the inflexional terminations. 'I was', or: 'have been'.

SINGULAR.

*Masc.**Fem.*

I pers. هُوَس hōse.

هَيَس huy-ase.

II pers. هُتِين huē.

هُتِين، هُي-آ، هُي-Ē hui-ā, hui-ē.

III pers. هُو hō.

هُتِي huī.

PLURAL.

I pers. هُونْدَا هُتَاسِين huā-sī.

هُونْدِئُون هُيُونْسِين huyū-sī.

II pers. هُو، هُتُو، هُو hua-u, hu-ō, hō.

هُيُون huyū.

III pers. هَا، هَا huā, hā.

هُيُون huyū.

1) Or هُتِين huiē.

Instead of *هَاسِيس* huā-sī, *هَاسُون* huā-sū, the contracted forms *هَاسِين* hā-sī, *هَاسُون* hāsū, are also in use. — The inflexional terminations are now and then dropped altogether, but in this case the absolute personal pronoun must always be prefixed, as: *آئون هو* āũ hō, I was etc.

2) THE HABITUAL AORIST.

The simple Aorist with *تهي* thē.

'I used to be'.

SINGULAR.

Masc.

Fem.

I pers.	<i>هوس تهي</i> hōse thē.	<i>هيس تهي</i> huyase thē.
	etc.	etc.

PLURAL.

I pers.	<i>هاسين تهي</i> huāsī thē.	<i>هيونسين تهي</i> huyūsī thē.
	etc.	etc.

V. PERFECT

VI. PLUPERFECT

} not in use.

VII. THE FUTURE.

The present participle with the inflexional terminations. 'I shall be'.

SINGULAR.

Masc.

Fem.

I pers.	<i>هوندس</i> hūndu-se.	<i>هونديس</i> hūndia-se ¹⁾ .
II pers.	<i>هوندين</i> hūnd-ē.	<i>هوندين</i> hūndi-ā ²⁾ .
III pers.	<i>هوندو</i> hūndō.	<i>هوندي</i> hūndī.

1) Instead of *هونديس* hūndia-se we find also *هونديس* hūndi-yase or *هونديس* hūndiyase.

2) Or *هونديين* hūndi-ē.

PLURAL.

*Masc.**Fem.*

I pers. هُونْدَاسِيں hūndā-sī.

هُونْدِئُونْسِيں hūndiū-sī.

II pers. هُونْدُوْ، هُونْدُوْ
hūnda-u, hūndō.

هُونْدِئُونْ hūndiū.

III pers. هُونْدَا hūndā.

هُونْدِئُونْ hūndiū.

The compound future tenses are not in use.

As from all neuter verbs, so also from this auxiliary an impersonal or passive form may be derived, as:

III pers. Sing. Present هُوْجِي تَهوْ hō-iḡe thō, literally: it is been; III pers. Sing. Future: هُوْجِيوْ hō-ibō, literally: it will be been.

Annotation. The root هُوْ hō (Inf. هُوْن hu-aṇu) corresponds to the Sansk. root भू bhū, to become, which is assimilated in Prākṛit to hō or huva; the past participle of it is in Prākṛit huō or hūō, thence the Sindhī huō. In reference to the Potential hujā etc., it is to be kept in mind, that Prākṛit uses already for the Present (and Future) such forms as hojja, hojjā etc., which Lassen derives from the Sansk. Precative भुयात् (Lassen, p. 357).

The root hō is used in all the kindred idioms.

The old Present اَنهِيَان āhiyā, I am, is derived from the Present of the Sansk. substantive verb अस 'as' to be, Prākṛit amhi etc. The Marāṭhī form of it approaches very closely to that of the Sindhī, as: āhē etc. In Hindūstānī (hā, haī, hai etc.) initial 'a', which has been lengthened in Sindhī and Marāṭhī, has been dropped; the same is the case in Panjābī, as hā, haī, hai etc. In Gujarātī, where initial 'a' has been likewise thrown off, we find the forms čhaū, čhē, čhē etc., which correspond to the Prākṛit form अचि ačhi etc. (Lassen, p. 266, 346). In Bangālī we meet with the still more primitive form āchi etc.

§. 50.

B. The auxiliary verb تهنُ thianu, to become, to be.

The verb تهنُ thianu, to become, to be, is also partly used as an auxiliary verb. Its compound tenses are made up by means of the auxiliary verb هُونُ huanu.

Infinitive.

تهنُ thi-anu, to become, to be.

Imperative.

SING.

PLUR.

II pers. تهيُ thī-u,

تهيُ، تهيُو thī-ō, thi-ō,

become thou.

become ye.

Precative.

II pers. تهيجُ، تهيجُ thī-je, thi-je. تهيجُو، تهيجُو thī-jō, thi-jō.

mayst thou become.

may you become.

Participles.

1) Present participle: تهيندو thī-ndō, becoming.

2) Past participle: تهنُو thi-ō, become.

3) Past conjunctive participles:

تهي thī	} having become:
تهينُو thi-ō	
تهي کري thī karē	

4) Verbal noun: تهنُو thi-anō, becoming, being.

I. THE POTENTIAL.

1) THE SIMPLE POTENTIAL.

'May become'.

SING.

PLUR.

I pers. تهيانُ thī-ā.

تهينُ thī-ū.

II pers. تهين، تهينُ thī-ē, thī. تهينُو thī-ō.

III pers. تهينُ thī-ē.

تهين، تهينُ thī-ane, thī-ne.

2) COMPOUND POTENTIAL

a) The present participle with the Potential of
 هُونُ huanu. 'May be becoming'.

SINGULAR.

	<i>Masc.</i>	<i>Fem.</i>
I pers.	تهيندو هَان thīndō huā.	تهيندي هَان thīndī huā.
II pers.	تهيندو هَيْن thīndō huē.	تهيندي هَيْن thīndī huē.
III pers.	تهيندو هِي thīndō huē.	تهيندي هِي thīndī huē.

PLURAL.

I pers.	تهيندا هُون thīndā hū.	تهيندن هُون thīndīū hū.
II pers.	تهيندا هُو thīndā huō.	تهيندن هُو thīndīū huō.
III pers.	تهيندا هُن thīndā huane.	تهيندن هُن thīndīū huane.

b) The past participle with the Potential of
 هُونُ huanu. 'May have become'.

SINGULAR.

	<i>Masc.</i>	<i>Fem.</i>
I pers.	تهئو هَان thīō huā.	تهي هَان thī huā.
II pers.	هَيْن " " huē.	هَيْن " " huē.
III pers.	هِي " " huē.	هِي " " huē.

PLURAL.

I pers.	تهئا هُون thīā hū.	تهئون هُون thīū hū.
II pers.	هُو " " huō.	هُو " " huō.
III pers.	هُن " " huane.	هُن " " huane.

1) Or هَجَان huǎā etc.

II. THE PRESENT.

1) THE PRESENT INDEFINITE.

The Potential with تھو thō.

'I become'.

SINGULAR.

Masc.

Fem.

I pers. تھن تھن thiā thō.	تھي تھن thiā thī.
II pers. تھن تھن thiē thō.	تھي تھن thiē thī.
III pers. تھن تھي thiē thō.	تھي تھي thiē thī.

PLURAL.

I pers. تھن تھن thiũ thā.	تھن تھن thiũ thiũ.
II pers. تھن تھو thiō thā.	تھن تھو thiō thiũ.
III pers. تھن تھن thiane thā.	تھن تھن thiane thiũ.

2) THE PRESENT DEFINITE.

The present participle with آھيان āhiyā etc.

'I am becoming'. etc.

SINGULAR.

Masc.

Fem.

I pers. تھندو آھيان thīndō āhiyā.	تھندي آھيان thīndī āhiyā.
II pers. تھندو آھين thīndō āhē.	تھندي آھين thīndī āhē.
III pers. تھندو آھي thīndō āhē.	تھندي آھي thīndī āhē.

PLURAL.

	<i>Masc.</i>	<i>Fem.</i>
I pers.	تِهيندا آنيون thīndā āhiyū.	تِهيندئون آنيون thīndiū āhiyū.
II pers.	تِهيندا آهيؤ thīndā āhiyō.	تِهيندئون آهيؤ thīndiū āhiyō.
III pers.	تِهيندا آنهين thīndā āhine.	تِهيندئون آنهين thīndiū āhine.

III. THE IMPERFECT.

The present participle with هوس hōse etc.

'I was becoming' etc.

SINGULAR.

	<i>Masc.</i>	<i>Fem.</i>
I pers.	تِهيندو هوس thīndō hōse.	تِهيندي هيَس thīndī huyase.
II pers.	تِهيندو هئين thīndō huē.	تِهيندي هئين ¹ thīndī huiā.
III pers.	تِهيندو هو thīndō hō.	تِهيندي هئي thīndī hui.

PLURAL.

I pers.	تِهيندا هواسين thīndā huāsī.	تِهيندئون هيرنسين thīndiū huyūsī.
II pers.	تِهيندا هئو ² thīndā hua-u.	تِهيندئون هيو thīndiū huyū.
III pers.	تِهيندا هئا thīndā huā.	تِهيندئون هيو thīndiū huyū.

1) Or هئين huiē.

2) Or هئو huō, hō.

IV. THE AORIST.

1) THE SIMPLE AORIST.

The past participle with the inflexional terminations. 'I became' etc.

SINGULAR.

*Masc.**Fem.*I pers. تھیسِ thiuse¹⁾.

تھیسِ thiase.

II pers. تھیںِ thiē.

(تھیںِ²⁾ thiā.

III pers. تھوِ thiō.

تھی thi.

PLURAL.

I pers. تھیاِیں thiāsī.

تھوِںِیں thiūsī.

II pers. تھوِ، تھوِ thiā-u, thiō. تھوِںِ thiū.

III pers. تھیاِ thiā.

تھوِںِ thiū.

2) THE HABITUAL AORIST.

The simple Aorist with تھی thē.

'I was becoming, was in the habit to become' etc.

SINGULAR.

*Masc.**Fem.*

I pers. تھیسِ تھی thiuse thē. تھیسِ thiase thē.
etc. etc. etc. etc.

PLURAL.

I pers. تھیاِیں تھی
thiāsī thē.
etc. etc.

تھوِںِیں تھی thiūsī thē.
etc. etc.

1) In poetry often: تھوِسِ thiōse, fem. تھیاِ thiase.

2) Or: تھیںِ thiē.

V. THE PERFECT.

The past participle with the auxiliary **آنهيان āhiyā.**

'I have become' etc.

SINGULAR.

	<i>Masc.</i>		<i>Fem.</i>
I pers.	تِهتو آنهيان thiō āhiyā.	تِهي آنهيان thī āhiyā.	
II pers.	آنهين „ „ āhē.	آنهين „ „ āhē.	
III pers.	آهي „ „ āhē.	آهي „ „ āhē.	

PLURAL.

I pers.	تِهتو آنهيون thiā āhiyū.	تِهون آنهيون thiū āhiyū.	
II pers.	آهيو „ „ āhiyō.	تِهون آهيو thiū āhiyō.	
III pers.	آنهين „ „ āhine.	آنهين „ „ āhine.	

VI. THE PLUPERFECT.

The past participle with the Aorist **هوس hōse** etc.

'I had become' etc.

SINGULAR.

	<i>Masc.</i>		<i>Fem.</i>
I pers.	تِهتو هوس thiō hōse.	تِهي هوس thī huyase.	
II pers.	هئين „ „ huē.	هئين „ „ huiā.	
III pers.	هو „ „ hō.	هئي „ „ huī.	

PLURAL.

I pers.	تِهتو هواسين thiā huāsī.	تِهون هيوئسين thiū huyūsī.	
II pers.	تِهتو هوا thiā hua-u.	تِهون هيون thiū huyū.	
III pers.	هوا „ „ huā.	هيون „ „ huyū.	

VII. THE FUTURE.

1) THE SIMPLE OR INDEFINITE FUTURE.

The present participle with the inflexional terminations. 'I shall become' etc.

SINGULAR.

*Masc.**Fem.*

I pers. تھیندُسِ thīnduse.	تھیندِئسِ thīndiase ¹⁾ .
II pers. تھیندِینِ thīndē.	تھیندِئا thīndiā. ²⁾
III pers. تھیندِو thīndō.	تھیندِی thīndī.

PLURAL.

I pers. تھیندِاسِینِ thīndāsī.	تھیندِئسِینِ thīndiūsī.
II pers. تھیندِو thīnda-u. ³⁾	تھیندِئو thīndiū.
III pers. تھیندِا thīndā.	تھیندِئو thīndiū.

2) COMPOUND FUTURE TENSES.

a) The definite Future.

The present participle with the Future هوندُسِ hūnduse etc. 'I shall be becoming' etc.

SINGULAR.

*Masc.**Fem.*

I pers. تھیندِو هوندُسِ thīndō hūnduse.	تھیندِی هوندِئسِ thīndī hūndiase.
II pers. تھیندِو هوندِینِ thīndō hūndē.	تھیندِی هوندِئا thīndī hūndiā.
III pers. تھیندِو هوندِو thīndō hūndō.	تھیندِی هوندِی thīndī hūndī.

1) Or تھیندِیاسِ thīndiyase, تھیندِیاسِ thīndiyase.

2) Or تھیندِئینِ thīndiē.

3) Or تھیندِو thīndō.

PLURAL.

	<i>Masc.</i>	<i>Fem.</i>
I pers.	تِهِنْدَا هُونْدَانْسِيں thīndā hūndāsī.	تِهِنْدِيُون هُونْدِيُونْسِيں thīndiū hūndiūsī.
II pers.	تِهِنْدَا هُونْدُو thīndā hūnda-u.	تِهِنْدِيُون هُونْدِيُون thīndiū hūndiū.
III pers.	تِهِنْدَا هُونْدَا thīndā hūndā.	تِهِنْدِيُون هُونْدِيُون thīndiū hūndiū.

b) The past Future.

The past participle with the Future هُونْدُسِ hūnduse.

'I shall have become' etc.

SINGULAR.

	<i>Masc.</i>	<i>Fem.</i>
I pers.	تِهْتُو هُونْدُسِ thiō hūnduse. etc. etc.	تِهِي هُونْدِيَسِ thī hūndiase. etc. etc.

PLURAL.

I pers.	تِهْيَا هُونْدَانْسِيں thiā hūndāsī. etc. etc.	تِهْيُون هُونْدِيُونْسِيں thiū hūndiūsī. etc. etc.
---------	--	--

Chapter XV.

Inflection of the regular verb.

§. 51.

A. Inflection of the neuter or intransitive verb.

All the neuter verbs end in the Imperative in 'u' (§. 43) and in the participle present in andō (§. 44).

But there is also a considerable number of transitive verbs ending in the Imperative in 'u' and in the participle present in andō, which take in consequence thereof the same inflexional terminations as the neuter verbs, with the only difference, that in the Past Tenses they must invariably resort to the passive construction.

We exhibit now the inflexion of a regular neuter verb.

Infinitive.

هَلَنُ hal-anu, to go.

Imperative.

SING.

PLUR.

II pers. هَلْ hal-u, go thou. هَلُو hal-ō, go ye.

Precative.

هَلِجْ hal-iḡe,	}	mayst	هَلِجُو hal-iḡ-ō, may ye go.
هَلِجْ hal-iḡu,		thou go.	

Participles:

- 1) present participle: هَلَنْدُو hal-andō, going.
- 2) past participle: هَلِئُو hal-iō, having gone.
- 3) past conjunctive participles:

هَلِي hal-ī,	}	having gone.
هَلِئُو hal-iō,		
هَلِجِي hal-iḡī,		
هَلِي كَرِي hal-ī kare,		

Verbal noun.

هَلَنْو hal-anō, going.

I. THE POTENTIAL.

D) THE SIMPLE POTENTIAL.

'I may go' etc.

SING.

PLUR.

I pers.	هَلَانْ أَتُونْ ḥālān ātūn	hal-ā.	أَسِيْنْ هَلُونْ asīn ḥālūn	asī hal-ū.
II pers.	تُونْ هَلِيْنْ tūn ḥālīn	hal-ē.	أَهِيْنْ هَلُوْ ahīn ḥālū	ahī hal-ō.
III pers.	هُوْ هَلِيْ hū ḥālī	hal-ē.	هُوْ هَلَنْ hū ḥālān	hū hal-ane.

2) COMPOUND POTENTIAL.

a) The present participle with the Potential

هُنَّ huā etc. 'I may be going'.

SINGULAR.

*Masc.**Fem.*

I pers.	هَلَنْدُوْ هُنَّ ḥalandū ḥūn	halandī ḥūn	هَلَنْدِيْ هُنَّ ḥalandī ḥūn	ḥuā.
	halandō ḥuā.			
II pers.	هَلَنْدُوْ هُنَّ ḥalandū ḥūn	ḥūn	هُنَّ ḥūn	ḥuē.
	halandō ḥuē.			
III pers.	هَلَنْدُوْ هُنَّ ḥalandū ḥūn	ḥūn	هُنَّ ḥūn	ḥuē.
	halandō ḥuē.			

PLURAL.

I pers.	هَلَنْدَا هُونْ ḥalandā ḥūn	ḥalandīū ḥūn	هَلَنْدِيْ تُونْ ḥalandīū ḥūn	ḥū.
	halandā ḥū.			
II pers.	هَلَنْدَا هُوْ ḥalandā ḥū	ḥū	هَلَنْدِيْ تُونْ ḥalandīū ḥū	ḥū.
	halandā ḥuō.			
III pers.	هَلَنْدَا هُنَّ ḥalandā ḥūn	ḥūn	هَلَنْدِيْ تُونْ ḥalandīū ḥūn	ḥuane.
	halandā huane.			

b) The past participle with the Potential هُنَّ.

'I may have gone'.

SINGULAR.

Masc.

Fem.

I pers.	هَلِئُو هُنَّ	haliō huā.	هَلِي هُنَّ	halī huā.
II pers.	هَتَيْنِ	” ” huē.	هَتَيْنِ	” ” huē.
III pers.	هَتِي	” ” huē.	هَتِي	” ” huē.

PLURAL.

I pers.	هَلِئَا هُون	haliā hū.	هَلِيُون هُون	haliū hū.
II pers.	هَتُو	” ” huō.	هَتُو	” ” huō.
III pers.	هَتِي	” ” huane.	هَتِي	” ” huane.

II. THE PRESENT.

1) THE PRESENT INDEFINITE.

The Potential with تَهْوَ thō.

'I go' etc.

SINGULAR.

Masc.

Fem.

I pers.	هَلَان تَهْوَ	halā thō.	هَلَان تَهِي	halā thī.
II pers.	هَلَيْن تَهْوَ	halē thō.	هَلَيْن تَهِي	halē thī.
III pers.	هَلِي تَهْوَ	halē thō.	هَلِي تَهِي	halē thī.

PLURAL.

I pers.	هَلُون تَهَا	halū thā.	هَلُون تَهْنُون	halū thiū.
II pers.	هَلُو تَهَا	halō thā.	هَلُو تَهْنُون	halō thiū.
III pers.	هَلِن تَهَا	halane thā.	هَلِن تَهْنُون	halane thiū.

2) THE PRESENT DEFINITE.

The present participle with أَنِهْيَان āhiyā etc.

'I am going' etc.

SINGULAR.

	<i>Masc.</i>	<i>Fem.</i>
I pers.	هَلَنْدَو أَنِهْيَان halandō āhiyā.	هَلَنْدِي أَنِهْيَان halandī āhiyā.
II pers.	هَلَنْدَو أَنِهْيِين halandō āhē.	هَلَنْدِي أَنِهْيِين halandī āhē.
III pers.	هَلَنْدَو أَهِي halandō āhē.	هَلَنْدِي أَهِي halandī āhē.

PLURAL.

I pers.	هَلَنْدَا أَنِهْيُون halandā āhiyū.	هَلَنْدُون أَنِهْيُون halandiū āhiyū.
II pers.	هَلَنْدَا أَهِيَو halandā āhiyō.	هَلَنْدُون أَهِيَو halandiū āhiyō.
III pers.	هَلَنْدَا أَنِهْيِين halandā āhine.	هَلَنْدُون أَنِهْيِين halandiū āhine.

III. THE IMPERFECT.

The present participle with هُوس hōse etc.

'I was going' etc.

SINGULAR.

	<i>Masc.</i>	<i>Fem.</i>
I pers.	هَلَنْدَو هُوس halandō hōse.	هَلَنْدِي هُيس halandī huyase.
II pers.	هَلَنْدَو هُيِين halandō huē.	هَلَنْدِي هُيِين halandī huiā.
III pers.	هَلَنْدَو هُو halandō hō.	هَلَنْدِي هُيِي halandī hui.

PLURAL.

	<i>Masc.</i>	<i>Fem.</i>
I pers.	هَلَنْدَا هُتَّاسِينْ halandā huāsī.	هَلَنْدِئُونْ هُيُونْسِينْ halandiū huyūsī.
II pers.	هَلَنْدَا هُوْ halandā hua-u.	هَلَنْدِئُونْ هُيُونْ halandiū huyū.
III pers.	هَلَنْدَا هُتَّا halandā huā.	هَلَنْدِئُونْ هُيُونْ halandiū huyū.

IV. THE AORIST.

1) THE SIMPLE AORIST.

The past participle with the inflexional terminations. 'I went' etc.

SINGULAR.

	<i>Masc.</i>	<i>Fem.</i>
I pers.	هَلِئْسِ haliu-se.	هَلِئْسِ halia-se.
II pers.	هَلِئْسِ hali-ē.	هَلِئْسِ hali-ā. ¹⁾
III pers.	هَلِئْوَ haliō.	هَلِئْوَ hali.

PLURAL.

I pers.	هَلِئْسِينْ haliā-sī.	هَلِئْونْسِينْ haliū-sī.
II pers.	هَلِئْوَ halya-u.	هَلِئْونْ haliū.
III pers.	هَلِئْوَ haliā.	هَلِئْونْ haliū.

2) THE HABITUAL AORIST.

The simple Aorist with تَهِي thē.

'I used to go' etc.

SINGULAR.

I pers.	هَلِئْسِ تَهِي haliuse thē.	هَلِئْسِ تَهِي haliase thē.
	etc.	etc.

1) Or هَلِئْسِينْ hali-ē.

PLURAL.

	<i>Masc.</i>	<i>Fem.</i>
I pers.	هَلِيَّاسِينَ تَهِي هَلِيَّاسِينَ تَهِي	هَلِيَّوَسِينَ تَهِي هَلِيَّوَسِينَ تَهِي
	haliāsī thē.	haliūsī thē.
	etc. etc.	etc. etc.

V. THE PERFECT.

The past participle with أَهْيَان āhiyā etc.

‘I am gone’ or ‘have gone’ etc.

SINGULAR.

	<i>Masc.</i>	<i>Fem.</i>
I pers.	هَلِيَّو أَهْيَان haliō āhiyā.	هَلِيَّو أَهْيَان hali āhiyā.
II pers.	أَهْيَان ” ” āhē.	أَهْيَان ” ” āhē.
III pers.	أَهِي ” ” āhē.	أَهِي ” ” āhē.

PLURAL.

I pers.	هَلِيَّو أَهْيُون haliā āhiyū.	هَلِيَّو أَهْيُون haliū āhiyū.
II pers.	أَهْيُو ” ” āhiyō.	أَهْيُو ” ” āhiyō.
III pers.	أَهْن ” ” āhine.	أَهْن ” ” āhine.

VI. THE PLUPERFECT.

The past participle with the Aorist هَوَس hōse.

‘I was gone’ or ‘had gone’ etc.

SINGULAR.

	<i>Masc.</i>	<i>Fem.</i>
I pers.	هَلِيَّو هَوَس haliō hōse.	هَلِيَّو هَوَس hali huyase.
II pers.	هَوَس ” ” huē.	هَوَس ” ” huiā.
III pers.	هُو ” ” hō.	هُي ” ” huī.

PLURAL.

*Masc.**Fem.*

I pers.	هَلِيَّا هُوَاسِيْنَ	هَلِيَّوْ هُوَيْوَسِيْنَ
	haliā huāsī.	haliū huyūsī.
II pers.	هَلِيَّا هُوَا هُوْ	هَلِيَّوْ هُوَا هُوْ
	haliā hua-u.	haliū huyū.
III pers.	هَآ ” ” هُوَا	هَيَّو ” ” هُوَا
	huā.	huyū.

VII. THE FUTURE.

1) THE SIMPLE or INDEFINITE FUTURE.

The present participle with the inflexional terminations. 'I shall go' etc.

SINGULAR.

*Masc.**Fem.*

I pers.	هَلَنْدُسِ	هَلَنْدِيْسِ
	halandu-se.	halandia-se. ¹⁾
II pers.	هَلَنْدِيْنِ	هَلَنْدِيْئِ
	haland-ē.	halandi-ā. ²⁾
III pers.	هَلَنْدُوْ	هَلَنْدِيْ
	halandō.	halandī.

PLURAL.

I pers.	هَلَنْدَاسِيْنَ	هَلَنْدِيْوَسِيْنَ
	halandā-sī.	halandiū-sī.
II pers.	هَلَنْدُوْ	هَلَنْدِيْوْ
	halanda-u.	halandiū.
III pers.	هَلَنْدَا	هَلَنْدِيْوْ
	halandā.	halandiū.

2) COMPOUND FUTURE TENSES.

a) The definite Future.

The present participle with هُوَنْدُسِ hūnduse.

'I shall be going' etc.

SINGULAR.

I pers.	هَلَنْدُوْ هُوَنْدُسِ	هَلَنْدِيْ هُوَنْدُسِ
	halandō hūnduse.	halandī hūndiase.

1) Or هَلَنْدِيْيَسِ halandiyase, هَلَنْدِيْيَسِ halandyase.

2) Or هَلَنْدِيْئِيْنِ halandi-ē.

SINGULAR.

*Masc.**Fem.*

II pers. هَلَنْدَوُ هُونْدِيْن هَلَنْدِي هُونْدِيْن
 halandō hūndē. halandī hūndiā.

III pers. هَلَنْدَوُ هُونْدَوُ هَلَنْدِي هُونْدِي
 halandō hūndō. halandī hūndī.

PLURAL.

I pers. هَلَنْدَا هُونْدَاسِيْن هَلَنْدِيْن هُونْدِيْنَسِيْن
 halandā hūndāsī. halandiū hūndiūsī.

II pers. هَلَنْدَا هُونْدَوُ هَلَنْدِيْن هُونْدِيْن
 halandā hūnda-u. halandiū hūndiū.

III pers. هَلَنْدَا هُونْدَا هَلَنْدِيْن هُونْدِيْن
 halandā hūndā. halandiū hūndiū.

b) The Past Future.

The past participle with the Future هُونْدُوسِ
 hūnduse. 'I shall have (be) gone' etc.

SINGULAR.

I pers. هَلِيَوُ هُونْدُوسِ هَلِي هُونْدِيَسِ
 haliō hūnduse. halī hūndiase.

II pers. هَلِيَوُ هُونْدِيْن هَلِي هُونْدِيَا
 haliō hūndē. halī hūndiā.

III pers. هَلِيَوُ هُونْدَوُ haliō hūndō. هُونْدِي „ „ hūndī.

PLURAL.

I pers. هَلِيَا هُونْدَاسِيْن هَلِيَوُ هُونْدِيْنَسِيْن
 haliā hūndāsī. haliū hūndiūsī.

II pers. هَلِيَا هُونْدَوُ هَلِيَوُ هُونْدِيْن
 haliā hūnda-u. haliū hūndiū.

III pers. هَلِيَا هُونْدَا هَلِيَوُ هُونْدِيْن
 haliā hūndā. haliū hūndiū.



Neuter verbs very often take in the Potential and in the Present tense the passive form, without altering in any way their signification, and are then inflected like other passive verbs (see the inflexion of the passive verb), as: **پَهَرَنُ** pharanu, v. n., to be fruitful, or **پَهَرَجَنُ** phar-j-anu; **لُرَهَنُ** v. n., lurhanu, to float, or **لُرَهَجَنُ** lurhe-j-anu, **کَاوَرَنُ** kāviranu, v. n., to be angry or **کَاوَرَجَنُ** kāvir-j-anu, **اَچَنُ** v. n. ačanu, to come, **اَچَجَنُ** ač-ij-anu, **پَوَنُ** v. n. pavanu, to fall, or **پَچَنُ** pa-ij-anu etc.

The III pers. Sing. of neuter verbs in the passive form is frequently employed impersonally throughout all the tenses with the exception of the Aorist and Perfect, as: **هَلِجِي** halijē, it may be gone, **تَهو هَلِجِي** halijē thō, it is gone, **هَلِبو آهي** halibō āhē, it is being gone, **هو هَلِبو** halibō hō, it was being gone; **هَلِبو** halibō, it will be gone.

Many neuter verbs are in Sindhī considered both active and neuter, and therefore in the Past tenses constructed either as neuter (i. e. personally) or as transitive verbs (i. e. passively, the agent being put in the Instrumental), as: **وَرِهِيُسَ** virhiuse, I quarrelled or: **وَرِهِيُو مُنَ** mū virhiō, by me it was quarrelled, from **وَرِهَنُ** virhanu, v. n., to quarrel; **کِهَلِيُسَ** khiliuse, I laughed, or: **کِهَلِيُو مُنَ** mū khiliō, by me it was laughed, from **کِهَلَنُ** khilanu, v. n., to laugh; but **رُونُ** ruanu, v. n., to weep, is always constructed passively in the past tenses, as: **رُونَاڻِيَنَ** runā-ī, he wept (it was wept by him).

On the other hand there are also some active verbs

(but ending in the Imperative in 'u'), which are constructed in the Past tenses like neuter verbs, and not passively, as: [†]سِيكْهِيُسِ sikhiuse, I learnt (not سِيكْهِيَتُو sikhiyatu) from سِيكْهَانُ sikhanu, v. a., to learn; سِيكْيُسِ sikiuse, I longed for, from سِيكْئَانُ sikanu, v. a., to long for.

§. 52.

B) Inflexion of the transitive verb.

The inflexion of the transitive and causal verb agrees on the whole with that of the neuter verb in the Potential, the Present, the Imperfect and the Future; but it differs from the inflexion of the neuter verb by being destitute of the Past Tenses of the Active Voice, which must be circumscribed by the past tenses of the Passive Voice, the past participle of transitive verbs having always a passive signification. The agent must therefore in the past tenses be put in the Instrumental, or it may, if that be a pronoun, be affixed to the past participle in the shape of a Suffix. It is understood, that the past participle passive must agree with its substantive in gender and number, as well as the adjective.

From every transitive and causal verb (and partly also, as noted already, from the neuter verb) a passive theme may be derived, which is regularly inflected through all tenses.

We exhibit now the inflexion of a transitive verb, ending in the Imperative in 'e'.

1) ACTIVE VOICE.

Infinitive:

چَهْدَنُ čhaḍ-anu, to give up.

Imperative.

SING.

PLUR.

II pers. چَهْدِ چَهْدِ čhaḍ-e, give up. چَهْدِ تُو čhaḍ-iō¹),
give ye up.

Precative.

چَهْدِ چَهْدِ čhaḍ-ije.	}	چَهْدِ چَهْدِ čhaḍ-ijō, please to give up.
چَهْدِ چَهْدِ čhaḍ-iju.		

Participles:

- 1) Present participle: چَهْدِ چَهْدِ čhaḍ-iṇḍō, giving up.
- 2) Past participle: چَهْدِ چَهْدِ čhaḍ-iō, having been given up.
- 3) Past conjunctive participles:

چَهْدِ چَهْدِ čhaḍ-e	}	having given up.
چَهْدِ چَهْدِ čhaḍ-iō		
چَهْدِ چَهْدِ čhaḍ-ijē		
چَهْدِ چَهْدِ čhaḍ-ē karē		

I. THE POTENTIAL.

1) THE SIMPLE POTENTIAL

‘I may give up’ etc.

SING.

PLUR.

I pers. اَنُون چَهْدِ تَان ānū čhaḍ-iā.
چَهْدِ تَان čhaḍ-iā.

II pers. تُون چَهْدِ تَيْن tū čhaḍ-iē.²)
چَهْدِ تَيْن čhaḍ-iē.

III pers. هُو چَهْدِ هِي hū čhaḍ-ē. هُو چَهْدِ هِي chū čhaḍ-ine.³)

1) Or چَهْدِ چَهْدِ čhaḍ-yō; the form چَهْدِ چَهْدِ čhaḍ-ehō is also in use.

2) Or چَهْدِ چَهْدِ čhaḍ-ē, چَهْدِ چَهْدِ čhaḍ-ī.

3) Or چَهْدِ چَهْدِ čhaḍ-ine.

2) COMPOUND POTENTIAL.

- a) The present participle with the Potential هُنَّ.
'I may be giving up' etc.

SINGULAR.

	<i>Masc.</i>	<i>Fem.</i>
I pers.	چَهْدِ يَنْدِوْ هُنَّ čhaḍīndō huā.	چَهْدِ يَنْدِ ي هُنَّ čhaḍīndī huā.
II pers.	چَهْدِ يَنْدِوْ هُنَّ čhaḍīndō huē.	چَهْدِ يَنْدِ ي هُنَّ čhaḍīndī huē.
III pers.	چَهْدِ يَنْدِوْ هُنَّ čhaḍīndō huē.	چَهْدِ يَنْدِ ي هُنَّ čhaḍīndī huē.

PLURAL.

I pers.	چَهْدِ يَنْدَا هُون čhaḍīndā hū.	چَهْدِ يَنْدِ تُون هُون čhaḍīndiū hū.
II pers.	چَهْدِ يَنْدَا هُون čhaḍīndā huō.	چَهْدِ يَنْدِ تُون هُون čhaḍīndiū huō.
III pers.	چَهْدِ يَنْدَا هُون čhaḍīndā huane.	چَهْدِ يَنْدِ تُون هُون čhaḍīndiū huane.

- b) The past participle, with the III pers. Singular and Plural of the Potential of the auxiliary verb هُون, the agent being put in the Instrumental.

'By me etc. may have been given up.'

SINGULAR.

The object being masc.	The object being fem.
مُون چَهْدِ تُو هُنَّ mū čhaḍiō huē.	مُون چَهْدِ ي هُنَّ mū čhaḍi huē.
تُو چَهْدِ تُو هُنَّ tō čhaḍiō huē.	تُو چَهْدِ ي هُنَّ tō čhaḍi huē.
” ” هُنَّ huna ” ” ” ” هُنَّ huna ” ”	

SINGULAR.

The object being fem.

اَسَانْ چَهْدِئُوْ هُئيْ

asā čhađiō huē.

اَهَانْ چَهْدِئُوْ هُئيْ

ahā čhađiō huē.

هُنْ چَهْدِئُوْ هُئيْ

hune čhađiō huē.

The object being masc.

اَسَانْ چَهْدِئِيْ هُئيْ

asā čhađī huē.

اَهَانْ چَهْدِئِيْ هُئيْ

ahā čhađī huē.

هُنْ چَهْدِئِيْ هُئيْ

hune čhađī huē.

PLURAL.

مُونْ چَهْدِئَاْ هُنْ

mū čhađiā huane.

etc. etc.

مُونْ چَهْدِئُونْ هُنْ

mū čhađiū huane.

etc. etc.

II. THE PRESENT.

1) THE PRESENT INDEFINITE.

The Potential with تَهْوُ thō.

‘I give up’ etc.

SINGULAR.

*Masc.**Fem.*

I pers. تَهْوُ چَهْدِئَانْ thō. čhađiā thō. تَهْيِ چَهْدِئَانْ thī. čhađiā thī.

II pers. تَهْوُ چَهْدِئَيْنْ thō. čhađiē thō. تَهْيِ چَهْدِئَيْنْ thī. čhađiē thī.

III pers. تَهْوُ چَهْدِئِيْ thō. čhađē thō. تَهْيِ چَهْدِئِيْ thī. čhađē thī.

PLURAL.

I pers. تَهْوُ چَهْدِئُونْ thā. čhađiū thā.

čhađiū thā.

چَهْدِئُونْ تَهْمُونْ thiū. čhađiū thiū.

čhađiū thiū.

II pers. تَهْوُ چَهْدِئُونْ thā. čhađiō thā. تَهْمُونْ چَهْدِئُوْ thiū. čhađiō thiū.

III pers. تَهْوُ چَهْدِئِينْ thā. čhađīne thā.

čhađīne thā.

چَهْدِئِينْ تَهْمُونْ thiū. čhađīne thiū.

čhađīne thiū.

2) THE PRESENT DEFINITE.

The present participle with **آهِيَان** āhiyā etc.

'I am giving up' etc.

SINGULAR.

	<i>Masc.</i>	<i>Fem.</i>
I pers.	چَهْدِيَنْدَوِ آهِيَان čhaḍīndō āhiyā.	چَهْدِيَنْدِي آهِيَان čhaḍīndī āhiyā.
II pers.	چَهْدِيَنْدَوِ آهِيَنِ čhaḍīndō āhē.	چَهْدِيَنْدِي آهِيَنِ čhaḍīndī āhē.
III pers.	چَهْدِيَنْدَوِ آهِي čhaḍīndō āhē.	چَهْدِيَنْدِي آهِي čhaḍīndī āhē.

PLURAL.

I pers.	چَهْدِيَنْدَا آهِيُون čhaḍīndā āhiyū.	چَهْدِيَنْدِيُون آهِيُون čhaḍīndiū āhiyū.
II pers.	چَهْدِيَنْدَا آهِيَوِ čhaḍīndā āhiyō.	چَهْدِيَنْدِيُون آهِيَوِ čhaḍīndiū āhiyō.
III pers.	چَهْدِيَنْدَا آهِيَنِ čhaḍīndā āhine.	چَهْدِيَنْدِيُون آهِيَنِ čhaḍīndiū āhine.

III. THE IMPERFECT.

The present participle with the Aorist **هَوَس** hōse.

'I gave up' or: 'was giving up' etc.

SINGULAR.

	<i>Masc.</i>	<i>Fem.</i>
I pers.	چَهْدِيَنْدَوِ هَوَس čhaḍīndō hōse.	چَهْدِيَنْدِي هَوَس čhaḍīndī huyase.
II pers.	چَهْدِيَنْدَوِ هَوَسِي čhaḍīndō huē.	چَهْدِيَنْدِي هَوَسِي čhaḍīndī huiā.
III pers.	چَهْدِيَنْدَوِ هَوِ čhaḍīndō hō.	چَهْدِيَنْدِي هَوِ čhaḍīndī hui.

PLURAL.

*Masc.**Fem.*

I pers.	چَهْدِ يَنْدَا هُئاسِيَن	چَهْدِ يَنْدِئُون هُيُونَسِيَن
	čhaḍindā huāsī.	čhaḍindiū huyūsī.
II pers.	چَهْدِ يَنْدَا هُو، هُئو	چَهْدِ يَنْدِئُون هُيُون
	čhaḍindā hua-u, huō.	čhaḍindiū huyū.
III pers.	چَهْدِ يَنْدَا هُأ، هَا	چَهْدِ يَنْدِئُون هُيُون
	čhaḍindā huā, hā.	čhaḍindiū huyū.

IV. THE AORIST.

1) THE SIMPLE AORIST.

The past participle (passive), with the agent in the Instrumental.

'By me etc. was given up'.

The object being masc.	SINGULAR.	The object being fem.
چَهْدِئُو mū čhaḍiō.		چَهْدِئِي mū čhaḍī.
” تُو tō ”	” تُو tō ”	” تُو tō ”
” هُن huna ”	” هُن huna ”	” هُن huna ”
” آسَا asā ”	” آسَا asā ”	” آسَا asā ”
” أَهَان ahā ”	” أَهَان ahā ”	” أَهَان ahā ”
” هُن hune ”	” هُن hune ”	” هُن hune ”

PLURAL.

چَهْدِئَا mū čhaḍiā.	چَهْدِئُون mū čhaḍiū.
etc.	etc.

2) THE HABITUAL AORIST.

The simple Aorist with تَهِي thē.

'By me etc. used to be given up'.

The object being masc.	SINGULAR.	The object being fem.
چَهْدِئُو تَهِي mū čhaḍiō thē.		چَهْدِئِي تَهِي mū čhaḍī thē.
etc.	etc.	etc.

PLURAL.

The object being masc.

مُون چھڏڻا ٿهي
mũ čhaḍiā thē.
etc. etc.

The object being fem.

مُون چھڏڻون ٿهي
mũ čhaḍiũ thē.
etc. etc.

V. THE PERFECT.

The past participle (passive) with آهي āhē and آهيڻ āhine, the agent being put in the Instrumental.

‘By me etc. has been given up’.

SINGULAR.

The object being masc.

مُون چھڏڻو آهي
mũ čhaḍiō āhē.
etc. etc.

The object being fem.

مُون چھڏي آهي
mũ čhaḍi āhē.
etc. etc.

PLURAL.

مُون چھڏڻا آهيڻ
mũ čhaḍiā āhine.
etc. etc.

مُون چھڏڻون آهيڻ
mũ čhaḍiũ āhine.
etc. etc.

VI. THE PLUPERFECT.

The past participle (passive) with هو hō, هئا huā etc.

‘By me etc. had been given up’.

SINGULAR.

The object being masc.

مُون چھڏڻو هو
mũ čhaḍiō hō.
etc. etc.

The object being fem.

مُون چھڏي هئي
mũ čhaḍi hui.
etc. etc.

PLURAL.

مُون چھڏڻا هئا
mũ čhaḍiā huā.
etc. etc.

مُون چھڏڻون هيون
mũ čhaḍiũ huyũ.
etc. etc.

VII. THE FUTURE.

1) THE SIMPLE or INDEFINITE FUTURE.

The present participle with the inflexional terminations.

'I shall give up' etc.

SINGULAR.

Masc.

Fem.

I pers. چەڤىندۇس چەڤىندۇسە. čaḡāḡinduse. چەڤىندىسە چەڤىندىسە. čaḡāḡindia-se.

II pers. چەڤىندىن چەڤىندىنە. čaḡāḡind-ē. چەڤىندىن چەڤىندىنە. čaḡāḡindi-ā.

III pers. چەڤىندۇ چەڤىندۇ. čaḡāḡindō. چەڤىندى چەڤىندى. čaḡāḡindī.

PLURAL.

I pers. چەڤىندايسىن چەڤىندىنۇسىن. čaḡāḡindā-sī. čaḡāḡindiū-sī.

II pers. چەڤىندۇ چەڤىندۇ. čaḡāḡinda-u. چەڤىندىن چەڤىندىن. čaḡāḡindiū.

III pers. چەڤىندا چەڤىندا. čaḡāḡindā. چەڤىندىن چەڤىندىن. čaḡāḡindiū.

2) COMPOUND FUTURE.

a) The definite Future.

The present participle with هۇندۇس hūḡduse.

'I shall be giving up' etc.

SINGULAR.

Masc.

Fem.

I pers. چەڤىندۇ هۇندۇس چەڤىندى هۇندىسە. čaḡāḡindō hūḡduse. čaḡāḡindī hūḡdiase.

II pers. چەڤىندۇ هۇندىن چەڤىندى هۇندىنە. čaḡāḡindō hūḡdē. čaḡāḡindī hūḡdiā.

III pers. چەڤىندۇ هۇندۇ چەڤىندى هۇندى. čaḡāḡindō hūḡdō. čaḡāḡindī hūḡdī.

PLURAL.

*Masc.**Fem.*

I pers.	چَهْدِيْندَا هُونْدَا سِيْن	چَهْدِيْندِيْئُون هُونْدِيْئُوْنِسِيْن
	čhaḍīndā hūndāsī.	čhaḍīndiū hūndiūsī.
II pers.	چَهْدِيْندَا هُونْدُوْ	چَهْدِيْندِيْئُون هُونْدِيْئُون
	čhaḍīndā hūnda-u.	čhaḍīndiū hūndiū.
III pers.	چَهْدِيْندَا هُونْدَا	چَهْدِيْندِيْئُون هُونْدِيْئُون
	čhaḍīndā hūndā.	čhaḍīndiū hūndiū.

b) The Past Future.

The past participle (passive) with هُونْدُو hūndō etc.,
the agent being put in the Instrumental.

‘By me etc. will have been given up’.

SINGULAR.

The object being masc.

The object being fem.

مُون چَهْدِيْئُوْ هُونْدُوْ
mū čhaḍiō hūndō.
etc. etc.

مُون چَهْدِيْ هُونْدِيْ
mū čhaḍi hūndī.
etc. etc.

PLURAL.

مُون چَهْدِيْئَا هُونْدَا
mū čhaḍiā hūndā.
etc. etc.

مُون چَهْدِيْئُون هُونْدِيْئُون
mū čhaḍiū hūndiū.
etc. etc.

2) PASSIVE VOICE.

Infinitive.

چَهْدِيْجَن čhaḍ-ij-aṇu, to be given up.

Imperative.

SING.

PLUR.

II pers. چَهْدِيْجُ čhaḍ-ij-u,
be given up.

چَهْدِيْجُو čhaḍ-ij-ō,
be ye given up.

Participles.

- 1) Present participle: چَهْدَبُو čhaḍibō, being given up.
- 2) Past participle: چَهْدَتُو čhaḍiō, having been given up.
- 3) Future participle or gerundive: چَهْدِنُو čhaḍinō, to be given up.
- 4) Past conjunctive participles:

چَهْدِجِي čhaḍ-ij-i or چَهْدِجُو čhaḍij-ō, } having been
 چَهْدِجِي کَرِي čhaḍijī karē, } given up.

I. THE POTENTIAL.

1) THE SIMPLE POTENTIAL.

'I may be given up'.

SING.

PLUR.

I pers. چَهْدِجَان čhaḍij-ā.	چَهْدِجُون čhaḍij-ū.
II pers. چَهْدِجِي čhaḍij-ē. ¹⁾	چَهْدِجُو čhaḍij-ō.
III pers. چَهْدِجِي čhaḍij-ē.	چَهْدِجَان čhaḍij-ane.

2) COMPOUND POTENTIAL.

- a) The present participle with the Potential هُئَان huā.
 'I may be being given up' etc.

SINGULAR.

Masc.

Fem.

I pers. چَهْدَبُو هُئَان čhaḍibō huā.	چَهْدِبِي هُئَان čhaḍibī huā.
II pers. چَهْدَبُو هُئِي čhaḍibō huē.	چَهْدِبِي هُئِي čhaḍibī huē.
III pers. چَهْدَبُو هُئِي čhaḍibō huē.	چَهْدِبِي هُئِي čhaḍibī huē.

1) Or چَهْدِجِي čhaḍijī.

PLURAL.

	<i>Masc.</i>	<i>Fem.</i>
I pers.	چەڭدېبا ھون čhaḍibā hū.	چەڭدېبۇن ھون čhaḍibiū hū.
II pers.	چەڭدېبا ھۇ. čhaḍibā huō.	چەڭدېبۇن ھۇ. čhaḍibiū huō.
III pers.	چەڭدېبا ھىن čhaḍibā huane.	چەڭدېبۇن ھىن čhaḍibiū huane.

b) The past participle with the Potential

ھىان huā.

‘I may have been given up’ etc.

SINGULAR.

	<i>Masc.</i>	<i>Fem.</i>
I pers.	چەڭدېتۇ ھىان čhaḍiō huā.	چەڭدې ھىان čhaḍī huā.
II pers.	ھىين ” ” huē.	ھىين ” ” huē.
III pers.	ھىي ” ” huē.	ھىي ” ” huē.

PLURAL.

I pers.	چەڭدېتا ھون čhaḍiā hū.	چەڭدېتۇن ھون čhaḍiū hū.
II pers.	ھۇ ” ” huō.	ھۇ ” ” huō.
III pers.	ھىن ” ” huane.	ھىن ” ” huane.

II. THE PRESENT.

1) THE INDEFINITE PRESENT.

The Potential with تەۋ thō.

‘I am given up’ etc.

SINGULAR.

	<i>Masc.</i>	<i>Fem.</i>
I pers.	چەڭدېجان تەۋ čhaḍijā thō.	چەڭدېجان تەي čhaḍijā thī.

SINGULAR.

*Masc.**Fem.*

II pers. چھڏجین تھو
čhaḍijē thō.

چھڏجین تھی
čhaḍijē thī.

III pers. چھڏجي تھو
čhaḍijē thō.

چھڏجي تھی
čhaḍijē thī.

PLURAL.

I pers. چھڏجون تها
čhaḍijū thā.

چھڏجون تھنوں
čhaḍijū thiū.

II pers. چھڏجو تها
čhaḍijō thā.

چھڏجو تھنوں
čhaḍijō thiū.

III pers. چھڏجن تها
čhaḍijane thā.

چھڏجن تھنوں
čhaḍijane thiū.

2) THE DEFINITE PRESENT.

The present participle with آہیان āhiyā.

'I am being given up' etc.

SINGULAR.

*Masc.**Fem.*

I pers. چھڏبو آہیان
čhaḍibō āhiyā.

چھڏبي آہیان
čhaḍibi āhiyā.

II pers. چھڏبو آہین
čhaḍibō āhē.

چھڏبي آہین
čhaḍibi āhē.

III pers. چھڏبو آهي čhaḍibō āhē. چھڏبي آهي čhaḍibi āhē.

PLURAL.

I pers. چھڏبا آہیون
čhaḍibā āhiyū.

چھڏبئون آہیون
čhaḍibiū āhiyū.

II pers. چھڏبا آہیو
čhaḍibā āhiyō.

چھڏبئون آہیو
čhaḍibiū āhiyō.

III pers. چھڏبا آہین
čhaḍibā āhine.

چھڏبئون آہین
čhaḍibiū āhine.

III THE IMPERFECT.

The present participle with هوس hōse.

'I was being given up' etc.

SINGULAR.

	<i>Masc.</i>	<i>Fem.</i>
I pers.	چەڭدېۋ هوس چەڭدېۋ هوس čhaḍibō hōse.	چەڭدېۋى هوس چەڭدېۋى هوس čhaḍibī huyase.
II pers.	چەڭدېۋ هۋىن چەڭدېۋ هۋىن čhaḍibō huē.	چەڭدېۋى هۋىن چەڭدېۋى هۋىن čhaḍibī huiā.
III pers.	چەڭدېۋ هۋ چەڭدېۋ هۋ čhaḍibō hō.	چەڭدېۋى هۋى چەڭدېۋى هۋى čhaḍibī hui.

PLURAL.

I pers.	چەڭدېۋا هۋاسىن چەڭدېۋا هۋاسىن čhaḍibā huāsī.	چەڭدېۋىن هۋىنسىن چەڭدېۋىن هۋىنسىن čhaḍibiū huyūsi.
II pers.	چەڭدېۋا هۋا هۋا چەڭدېۋا هۋا čhaḍibā hua-u, huō.	چەڭدېۋىن هۋىن چەڭدېۋىن هۋىن čhaḍibiū huyū.
III pers.	چەڭدېۋا هۋا چەڭدېۋا هۋا čhaḍibā huā.	چەڭدېۋىن هۋىن چەڭدېۋىن هۋىن čhaḍibiū huyū.

IV. THE AORIST.

1) THE SIMPLE AORIST.

The past participle with the inflexional terminations.

'I was given up' etc.

SINGULAR.

	<i>Masc.</i>	<i>Fem.</i>
I pers.	چەڭدېۋىس چەڭدېۋىس čhaḍiu-se. ¹⁾	چەڭدېۋىس چەڭدېۋىس čhaḍia-se.
II pers.	چەڭدېۋىن چەڭدېۋىن čhaḍi-ē.	چەڭدېۋىن چەڭدېۋىن čhaḍi-ā.
III pers.	چەڭدېۋ چەڭدېۋ čhaḍiō.	چەڭدېۋ چەڭدېۋ čhaḍi.

1) Or چەڭدېۋىس چەڭدېۋىس chadyuse, چەڭدېۋىس چەڭدېۋىس chadyase.

PLURAL.

Masc.

Fem.

I pers. چھڏيا سڀن čhaḍiā-sī. چھڏيُون سڀن čhaḍiū-sī.

II pers. چھڏيو čhaḍya-u. چھڏيُون čhaḍiū.

III pers. چھڏيا čhaḍiā. چھڏيُون čhaḍiū.

2) THE HABITUAL AORIST.

The simple Aorist with ٿي thē.

‘I used to be given up’ etc.

SINGULAR.

Masc.

Fem.

چھڏيس ٿي čhaḍiuse thē. چھڏيس ٿي čhaḍiase thē.
etc. etc. etc. etc.

V. THE PERFECT.

The past participle with آهيان āhiyā.

‘I have been given up’ etc.

SINGULAR.

Masc.

Fem.

I pers. چھڏيو آهيان čhaḍiō āhiyā. چھڏي آهيان čhaḍī āhiyā.

II pers. چھڏيو آهين čhaḍiō āhē. چھڏي آهين čhaḍī āhē.

III pers. چھڏيو آهي čhaḍiō āhē. چھڏي آهي čhaḍī āhē.

PLURAL.

I pers. چھڏيا آهيون čhaḍiā āhiyū. چھڏيُون آهيون čhaḍiū āhiyū.

II pers. چھڏيا آهيو čhaḍiā āhiyō. چھڏيُون آهيو čhaḍiū āhiyō.

III pers. چھڏيا آهن čhaḍiā āhine. چھڏيُون آهن čhaḍiū āhine.

VI. THE PLUPERFECT.

The past participle with هُوس hōse.

'I had been given up' etc.

SINGULAR.

	<i>Masc.</i>	<i>Fem.</i>
I pers.	چَهْدِئُو هُوس čhađiō hōse.	هَهْدِي هُيس čhađi huyase.
II pers.	چَهْدِئُو هُين čhađiō huē.	چَهْدِي هُين čhađi huiā.
III pers.	چَهْدِئُو هُو čhađiō hō.	چَهْدِي هُي čhađi hui.

PLURAL.

I pers.	چَهْدِئَا هُاسِين čhađiā huāsī.	چَهْدِئُون هُيُونْسِين čhađiū huyūsī.
II pers.	چَهْدِئَا هُو čhađiā hua-u.	چَهْدِئُون هُيُون čhađiū huyū.
III pers.	چَهْدِئَا هَا čhađiā huā.	چَهْدِئُون هُيُون čhađiū huyū.

VII. THE FUTURE.

1) THE SIMPLE or INDEFINITE FUTURE.

The present participle with the inflexional terminations.

'I shall be given up' etc.

SINGULAR.

	<i>Masc.</i>	<i>Fem.</i>
I pers.	چَهْدِئُبُس čhađibu-se.	چَهْدِئِبِس čhađibia-se.
II pers.	چَهْدِئِبِين čhađib-ē.	چَهْدِئِبِس čhađibi-ā.
III pers.	چَهْدِئَبُو čhađibō.	چَهْدِئِبِي čhađibi.

PLURAL.

*Masc.**Fem.*

I pers.	چھڌِ بَاسِینَ čhaḍibā-sī.	چھڌِ بِئُونِیَسِینَ čhaḍibiū-sī.
II pers.	چھڌِ بَ چھڌِ بَ čhaḍiba-u.	چھڌِ بِئُونِ čhaḍibiū.
III pers.	چھڌِ بَ čhaḍibā.	چھڌِ بِئُونِ čhaḍibiū.

2) COMPOUND FUTURE.

a) The definite Future.

The present participle with هُونْدُسِ hūnduse.

'I shall be being given up' etc.

SINGULAR.

*Masc.**Fem.*

I pers.	چھڌِ بُو هُونْدُسِ čhaḍibō hūnduse.	چھڌِ بِی هُونْدِیَسِ čhaḍibī hūndiase.
II pers.	چھڌِ بُو هُونْدِینَ čhaḍibō hūndē.	چھڌِ بِی هُونْدِیَنَ čhaḍibī hūndiā.
III pers.	چھڌِ بُو هُونْدُو čhaḍibō hūndō.	چھڌِ بِی هُونْدِی čhaḍibī hūndī.

PLURAL.

I pers.	چھڌِ بَا هُونْدَاسِینَ čhaḍibā hūndāsī.	چھڌِ بِئُونِ هُونْدِئُونِیَسِینَ čhaḍibiū hūndiūsī.
II pers.	چھڌِ بَا هُونْدُو čhaḍibā hūnda-u.	چھڌِ بِئُونِ هُونْدِئُونِ čhaḍibiū hūndiū.
III pers.	چھڌِ بَا هُونْدَا čhaḍibā hūndā.	چھڌِ بِئُونِ هُونْدِئُونِ čhaḍibiū hūndiū.

b) The Past Future.

The past participle with هُونْدُسِ hūnduse.

'I shall have been given up' etc.

SINGULAR.

	<i>Masc.</i>	<i>Fem.</i>
I pers.	چَهْدِ تُو هُونْدُسِ čhaḍiō hūnduse.	چَهْدِي هُونْدِسِ čhaḍī hūndiase.
II pers.	چَهْدِ تُو هُونْدِيں čhaḍiō hūndē.	چَهْدِي هُونْدِسِ čhaḍī hūndiā.
III pers.	چَهْدِ تُو هُونْدُو čhaḍiō hūndō.	چَهْدِي هُونْدِي čhaḍī hūndī.

PLURAL.

I pers.	چَهْدِ تَا هُونْدَا سِيں čhaḍiā hūndāsī.	چَهْدِ تُون هُونْدِ تُون سِيں čhaḍiū hūndiūsī.
II pers.	چَهْدِ تَا هُونْدُو čhaḍiā hūnda-u.	چَهْدِ تُون هُونْدِ تُون čhaḍiū hūndiū.
III pers.	چَهْدِ تَا هُونْدَا čhaḍiā hūndā.	چَهْدِ تُون هُونْدِ تُون čhaḍiū hūndiū.

Chapter XVI.

Compound verbs.

§. 53.

The Sindhi possesses a great facility in giving different shadows of meaning to a verb by compounding it with another verb.

1) The most common way of compounding a verb with another is to put the past conjunctive par-

ticiples of the active or passive mood, ending in *i* or *ē*¹⁾, before it.²⁾ The construction of a verb thus compounded depends entirely on the definite verb, not in any way on the past conjunctive participle. In this way are formed

a) So-called Intensitives, which impart to the definite verb a peculiar signification, arising out of the sense of the preceding past conjunctive participle, as:

وَجَنُ vathī vaṇaṇu, to take off, literally: to go having taken; مَرِي وَجَنُ marī vaṇaṇu, to be dead, lit.: to go having died; چَرِهِي وَجَنُ čarhī vaṇaṇu, to ascend, lit.: to go having ascended; کھَلِي پَوَنُ khulī pavaṇu, to be opened, lit.: to fall having been opened; جِي پَوَنُ jī pavaṇu, to become alive, literally: to fall having lived; وَهِي پَوَنُ vahī pavaṇu, to pour down (as rain), literally: to fall having flown. — وَدْهِي وَجَهَنُ vadhē vijhaṇu, to cut down, lit.: to throw having cut; سَوَرِي کَدَهَنُ sōrē kaḍhaṇu, to pull out, lit.: to pull having moved; چَارْهِي آَنُنُ čarhē āṇaṇu, to hang up, lit.: to bring having caused to ascend; لَوڙْهِي چَهْدَنُ lōrḥē čaḍaṇu, to float off (act.), lit.: to give up having floated away; تَانِئُو جَهَنُنُ tāniō čhinaṇu, to pluck out, lit.: to pluck out having pulled; مَوْتَايِي نِسَنُ mōtā-ē niaṇu, to bring back, lit.: to take away having caused to return, etc. etc. It is to be noted, that کَهَنِي khanī, the past conjunctive participle of کَهَنُنُ khaṇaṇu, to lift up, is used with all

1) The past conjunctive participle ending in *iō* is also occasionally used to make up a compound verb.

2) In poetry though the past conjunctive participle may also follow the definite verb.

sorts of verbs, to intensify their signification, implying, that the action is done forthwith, as: **ڪُهَني لِيڪَهنُ** *khañī likhañu*, to set to writing; **ڪُهَني اُجَارَنُ** *khañī ujārañu*, to set to polish, **ڪُهَني وَجائِنُ** *khañī vajāñu*, to set to play (an instrument); **ڪُهَني وَجَنُ** *khañī vañañu*, to be off.

In the same way the past conjunctive participle of **پَوَنُ** *pavañu*, to fall, viz.: **پَئي** *paī* or **پيئي** *pēī*, is put before a verb, to intensify its signification, as **پَئي ڪُهَنُ** *paī khañu*, to eat on or up, literally: to eat having fallen upon it. The augment **تَهو** *thō* of the Present tense is dropped, when the verb is thus compounded with **پَئي** *paī* or **پيئي** *pēī*.

سَو جَدِهِن وَدَو تَهئو تَدِهِن مَري وَئو

When he was grown up, he died. Abd-ul-Latīf's life, p. 2.

سُونَهِن جِي صَلاحَ وَتَه تَ وِپر لَنڪهي وَجِين

Take the advice of the pilots, that thou mayst pass the full tide. Sh. Surāg. V, 7.

لَرَتو پَوَن لَطِيف ڪهي ڪوڙا مَتَهي مَل

Tears trickle down to the kind one upon the cheek. Maj. 459.

سَاندَاري سَوَندَرَ جِي ڏِهَڙي نِئا

In crossing the ocean they were forcibly carried off. Sh. Sām. I, 11.

آئي پاڻ اڙاءَ ڪُهَني ڪُهَري وَجَ مِين

Bring (and) fasten thy own self in the midst of the furnace. Sh. Jam. Kal. III, 13.

جَان ڪَهِڻِي وَجَائِي تَه چئونَ هَرَنَ مِرُون پڪهي هَلِئاَ اچن

When he sets to play, then four times as many deer, wild beasts, birds come on. Story of Rāe Diācu, p. 3.

وڪهرُ سَوَ رِهاَ جو پَڻي پُرائو تَه تهي

Buy those goods, which do not become old. Sh. Surāg. III, 2.

پوءِ هن ڏهندَھ مَنجھان مِٽي کڏهي حَجِرا ۽ مَسْجِدِ

جَوَزَّانُون

Then having taken out earth from this tank they built cells and a mosque. Abd-ul-Latif's life, p. 22.

ڪِهيندو جو خوشي پَڻي سَوَئي مُنهن جو سين

He who will eat (it) with pleasure, that is my friend. Maj. 319.

b) Compound verbs, implying possibility, and power are formed by putting a past conjunctive participle before the verbs سَڪَھَنُ saghanu¹), to be able, and جَانَنُ jānanu, to know, as: ڪَريو سَڪَھَنُ karē, karyō sa-ghanu, to be able to do; ڏيئي جَانَنُ ڏيئي jānanu, to know to give.

ڪَنهن پَر رُٿان پرنئي ڪهي روئي تَه جَانان

In what manner shall I weep for my friend? I do not know how to weep. Sh. Kōh. VI, 1.

اوجاگو آڪهن ڪهي جائِي تَه ڏيئي

Thou didst not understand to give sleeplessness to (thy) eyes. Sh. Kōh. I, 12.

1) With سَڪَھَنُ the Infinitive may also be joined.

c) The idea of completion is expressed by putting a past conjunctive participle before the verbs: رَهَنُ ra-haṇu, to remain, وَتَهَنُ vaṭhaṇu, to take, چُڪَنُ čukaṇu, to be at an end; نِبَهَنُ nibhaṇu or نِبَنُ nibaṇu, to be ended; similarly before بَسِ ڪَرَنُ base karaṇu, to leave off, to have done, as: وَتَهي رَهَنُ vathī rahaṇu, to have taken; رَمِي رَهَنُ ramī rahaṇu, to be off; ڪَهاڻي وَتَهَنُ khāē vaṭhaṇu, to have done eating; ڪَري چُڪَنُ karē čukaṇu, to have done; ڇَڻي بَسِ ڪَرَنُ čaī base karaṇu, to have done speaking.

انهي ڪهڙين جي ڏسَن واسطي بهي رهئو

In order to see those lightnings he sat down. Amulu Mān. p. 146.

ڇَارَن چَنڊ ڪلهي ڪري زمي رهئو رات

The Čāran, having slung the harp upon his shoulder, went in the night. Sh. Sōr. III, 5.

جيڪو زال ڏي حَرَامَ جي ڍل سان تهو ڏسي اهو انهي

ميني هُن سان مَن مين حَرَامَ ڪري چڪو

Who so ever looks upon a woman with a heart of fornication, that one has even therein committed already fornication with her in his mind. Matth. 5, 4.

تنهن سين ڪري پريتڙي نبهائي نبي

With him friendship has been already made. Maj. 196.

پوءِ جڏهين عيسيٰ اهي ڳالهائون چئي بس ڪيون تڏهين

ماڙهون هُن جو مَت بُندهي وڌا تها

When Jesus had ended these sayings, then the people, having heard his doctrine, became astonished. Matth. 7, 28.

d) Duration or repetition is expressed by putting before the definite verb the past conjunctive participle ending in iō, to which also the emphatic ī

is affixed, als: پَرِهَتُو پَرِهَتُو parhiō parhanu, to read again, to keep on reading.

پَرِهَتُو پَرِهِيَا سَبَقُ اِنْهِي سَوَرِ جَو

Read over again the lesson of this very pain. Sh. Jam. Kal. V, 31.

سَوِي سَوِ حَرْفُ پَرِهَتُوِي تَهَو پَرِهَان

Even that, that letter I read over and over again Sh. Jam. Kal. V, 33.

2) Another kind of Intensitives is formed by putting the past participle of پَوَنُ pavanu, to fall, viz.: پِيُو piō, before the Imperative, Present¹⁾ or Imperfect of a definite verb, as: پِيُو مَانِجَانِسِ piō manijāse, enjoy her; پِيَا تِهِنِ piā thiane, they become هَبَا هَبَا they were seeing.

جَدِهِيَن كِهَتِ تِي اچي تَدِهِيَن تُون پَرِ پَتِي كَدِهَجَانِسِ

پَوَم پِيُو مَانِجَانِسِ

When she comes to the couch, then pull out her feathers; afterwards enjoy her. Amulu Mān. p. 147.

تَنِهِن مِيَن تَجَلَا كِهَوْنِ زَانِكِي پِيَا تِهِنِ

In that (palace) sparks are made like lightnings. Ibid. p. 140.

سَدَسِ اچَرَج كِهَنَا چِهَوَكَرِ پِيَا پِيَا دِسَنَدَا هَبَا

Many of his miracles the other boys used to see. Abd-ul-Latīf's life, p. 3.

1) In this case the augment تَهَو thō is dropped as unnecessary.

3) The idea of continuation is expressed by putting a present participle before the verbs رَهَنُ *rahanu*, to remain and وَتَنُ *vatanu*, to go about, as: وَيَنْدَو رَهِي *vēndō rahī*, he continues going; چَارِيَنْدَو وَتِي *čārīndō vatē*, he keeps on grazing.

وِيَنْدَو رَهَنْدَو وَرَجِي مَجْهَان مِصْرَ شَامَ

He kept on travelling in fatigue from Egypt (and) Syria. Maj. 357.

سَنْدُسِ پِي شَاهُ حَبِيبُ كَهِيَسِ كُولِيَنْدَو پَهُولِيَنْدَوِي رَهْتَو

His father Shāh Habib continued searching (and) seeking him. Life of Abd-ul-Latīf, p. 9.

بِيَجَلُ كَهَوَرَا چَارِيَنْدَو وَتِي

Bījalu goes on grazing the horses. Story of Rāe Diāču, p. 2.

4) Two verbs may also be joined by putting the Infinitive of a verb in the Formative case before the verbs: لَگَنُ *laḡanu*, v. n. to apply, اَچَنُ *ačanu*, to come, وَجَنُ *vaḡanu*, to go. In this way so-called Inceptives are formed, as: رُونُ لَگَنُ *ruṇa laḡanu*, to begin to cry; وَسَنَ اَچَنُ *vasana ačanu*, to come to rain; سَدَنَ وَجَنُ *saḡana vaḡanu*, to go to call.

وَجُونِ وَسَنَ آئِيُونِ سَارَنُكُ چَرَهْتَو سِيَجِ

The lightnings have come to flash (to rain); the monsoon has ascended (his) couch. Sh. Sōr. IV, 13.

پَوِ جِيَسِيَن هُو كِنَهَنَ وَيِيُونِ نِيَسِيَن كَهَوْتُ اَجِي سَهَرِيَو

Then whilst they went to buy, the bridegroom arrived. Matth. 25, 10.

Chapter XVII.

The Verb with the Pronominal Suffixes.

§. 54.

The Sindhī uses the pronominal suffixes far more extensively with the verbs, than with the nouns (cf. §. 30). The suffixes attached to the verbs express, strictly speaking, only the Dative and Accusative (the object), and, with the past participle passive, also the Instrumental, though we may translate them by any case, save the Nominative.

The pronominal suffixes attached to verbs are identical with those attached to nouns, with this difference, that the suffix of the I person Plural, ū, which is not in use with nouns (but with adverbs and postpositions), is used throughout the verb. There is further a peculiar Instrumental affix, attached to the past participle passive, which is never used with nouns or adverbs, viz.: ī for the Singular, and ū for the Plural.

It appears, that the suffix ī is originally the Instrumental Sing. اِنَ ina, by him (from هِي hī, this), and ū the Instrumental Plural اُنَ une, by them (from هُو hū or اُو ū, that).

To the first person Sing. and Plur. the suffix of the same person is never attached, as in this case the reflexive pronoun پَانِ pāna, self, must be employed.

In the compound tenses and in compound verbs the suffix always accedes to the latter part of the compound, though it properly belongs to the first member of the compound. Similarly the suffix is never attached to the augment تھو thō or تھی thē, but always to the verb itself.

To the past participle passive even two suffixes may accede, the first expressing the Instrumental and the second the Dative or Accusative, as will be shown afterwards.

The way, in which the several suffixes are attached to the inflexional terminations of the verb, will be best seen from the following survey.

§. 55.

I. The pronominal suffixes attached to the auxiliary

verbs **تَهْنُنْ** and **هُرُنْ**

1) The Imperative.

The same as the II pers. Sing. and Plur. of the Potential.

The Precative.

		SING.	PLUR.
Sing.	Suffix		
	I pers.	هُجَانِمِ huj-ā-me. be to me.	هُجُونِمِ hujō-me. be to me.
	III pers.	هُجَانِسِ huj-ā-se. be to him.	هُجُونِسِ hujō-se. be to him.
Plur.	Suffix		
	I pers.	هُجَانُونِ huj-ā-ū. be to us.	هُجُونُونِ hujō-ū. be to us.
	III pers.	هُجَانِ huj-ā-ne. be to them.	هُجُونِ hujō-ne. be to them.

In the same way the suffixes are attached to **تَهْجُ** thiġu, as: **تَهْجَانِمِ** thiġ-ā-me, become to me, **تَهْجَانِسِ** thiġ-ā-se, become to him.

يَوْدُ هُو تَهْيِنِ اَكُ مَيْن تَهْ تُون يُوْتِه مَيْن تَجَانِ

Then if those are in front, be thou in their back.
Amulu Mān. p. 144.

2) The Potential هُئَانِ huā, I may be.

SINGULAR.

	Suffixes of the I pers.	Suffixes of the II pers.	Suffixes of the III pers.
Sing.	I	هُئَانِي huā-e.	هُئَانِس huā-se.
	II هُئِينِم huē-me.	. . . . .	هُئِينِس huē-se.
	III هُئِيم huē-me.	هُئِيثِي huē-ī.	هُئِيْس huē-se.
Plur.	I	هُؤْنِي hū-e.	هُؤْنِس hū-se.
	II هُؤُونِم huō-me. ¹⁾	هُؤُونِس huō-se.
	III هُؤِينِم huani-me.	هُؤِينِي huan-ī. ²⁾	هُؤِينِس huani-se.

PLURAL.

Sing.	I	هُئَانَر huā-va.	هُئَان huā-ne.
	II هُئِينُون huē-ū.	. . . . .	هُئِين huē-ne. ³⁾
	III هُئِينُون huē-ū.	هُئِيَو huē-va.	هُئِين huē-ne.
Plur.	I	هُؤُونَر hū-va.	هُؤُون hū-ne.
	II هُؤُونُون huō-ū.	. . . . .	هُؤُون huō-ne.
	III هُؤِينُون huane-ū.	هُؤِينَو huani-va.	هُؤِين huani-ne.

1) Or هُؤَم hō-me, هُؤَس hō-se.

2) Or هُؤِينِي huane-ī.

3) When a nasalized vowel (ē) is followed by a dental nasal, the sign of nasalisation (ن in Arabic characters) is generally dropped as superfluous; thus هُئِين huē-ne, instead of هُئِينِن huē-ne, هُؤُون hū-ne, instead of هُؤُونِن hū-ne.

In the same way the suffixes are attached to the Potential تِهَآن thiā, I may become, and to the Indefinite Present هُآن huā thō and تِهَآن تِهَو thiā thō, as: هُئِينِمِ huē-me thō, thou art to me etc.

آخِرِ اُهرِينَسِ تَهَ جَوَكَهَو تِهِيئِي تَهَ جَهَارَ كِهِي

Finally push it off, lest any damage befall the ship (literally: lest any damage befall thee as regards the ship). Sh. Surāḡ. III, 7.

جِي پورو تِهِيئِمِ پَسَاهُ تَهَ بَهَ جَوَ مَرَهَ مَلِيرَ ڌِي

If my breath may expire, yet carry (my) corpe to the Malīr. Sh. Um. Mār. V, 14.

جِي هُئِي هَوَتَن لَكَهَ تَهَ پَارِجَ كَوَ مَهَ پُنَهَو سَان

If there be to thee lakhs of sweethearts, compare none with Punhū. Sh. Maḡḡ. V, 4.

3) The Present آنهيان āhiyā.

SINGULAR.

	Suffixes of the I pers.	Suffixes of the II pers.	Suffixes of the III pers.
Sing.	I	آنهيانِ āhiyā-e.	آنهيانِ āhiyā-se.
	II آنهيئِمِ āhē-me. ¹⁾	آنهيئِسِ āhē-se.
	III آهيئِمِ āhē-me.	آهيئِي āhē-i.	آهيئِسِ āhē-se.
Plur.	I	آنهيونِ āhiyū-e.	آنهيونِ āhiyū-se.
	II آهيئومِ āhiyō-me.	. . . . .	آهيئوسِ āhiyō-se.
	III آنهينِ āhini-me.	آنهيني āhin-i. ²⁾	آنهينِ āhini-se.

1) Or آنهيئِمِ āhī-me.

2) Or آنهيني āhine-i.

PLURAL.

	Suffixes of the I pers.	Suffixes of the II pers.	Suffixes of the III pers.
Sing.	I	آهِيَانَوِ āhiyā-va.	آهِيَانِ āhiyā-ne.
	II آهِيُونُ āhē-ū.	. . . . .	آهِيَنِ āhē-ne.
	III آهِيُونُ āhē-ū.	آهِيَوِ āhē-va.	آهِيَنِ āhē-ne.
Plur.	I	آهِيُونَوِ āhiyū-va.	آهِيُونِ āhiyū-ne.
	II آهِيُونُ āhiyō-ū.	. . . . .	آهِيُونِ āhiyō-ne.
	III آهِيُونُ āhine-ū.	آهِيُونِ āhini-va.	آهِيُونِ āhini-ne.

Instead of آهي āhē and آهين āhine the form آهه atha is also in use, but only when joined by suffixes. It corresponds to the old Prākṛit form अथि athi (the III pers. Sing. of the substantive verb asmi, I am, see Lassen; p. 345), which in Sindhī has also been transferred to the Plural.

The suffixes are attached to it in the following manner:

	Suffixes of the I pers.	Suffixes of the II pers.	Suffixes of the III pers.
Plur.	آهَه اَٲَهَمِ atha-me.	آهَه اَٲَهِي ath-ī,	آهَه اَٲَهَسِ atha-se.
and Sing.		آهَه اَٲَهِيٲِي athē-ī.	
	آهَه اَٲَهُونِ ath-ū.	آهَه اَٲَهَوِ atha-va.	آهَه اَٲَهَنِ atha-ne.

In the Present Definite: هُونْدَوِ آهِيَانِ the suffixes accede, as noted already, to the latter part of the compound.

سَرَتَنِ سَانِ سَنَ آهِمِ اُتْهِي مِينَهَرِي

With girls of my age I have an appointment, after rain has fallen. Sh. Um. Mār. V, 21.

اُتْهِي اُنْهَمِ مَگَالَهَرِي آءِ اُوري تان اُورِيان

I have a secret matter, come near, then I will tell (it). Sh. Sōr. II, 22.

تَدِهِنِ سُنِي سَبَقُ سَرَهو تَهتو نَاهِسِ كو نِيَاُز

Then having heard the lesson he became glad; he has no other want. Maj. 189.

جِي اُنْهِي سَدَه پَسَن مِين تَه كَهَن مَ پِير پَرِي

If thou hast a desire in seeing, then lift not thy step far off. Sh. Kal. II, 4.

بَنَا بَهَجَن بَهَكَرَان جِي اُتْهِي پِي سَبِه خُودِي خَام

Except the worshipping of the Lord all other things are to thee selfishness, o ignorant one! Mānghō 4.

مَتْهِي نَه آهَرُون مَن مِين اُوءِ جُوْتَهَا مَارِنِ جَكَه

We have no wickedness in our heart; those liars calumniate. Maj. 255.

اَسَانِ كَهِي اُنْهِنِ پَانْهَنِي سَانِ كو كَم نَه آهِي مَگَرِ پَنْهَن

جِي دَهَنِي سَانِ كَم اَتْهُون

We have nothing to do with those stones, but our concern is with their master. Life of Abd-ul-Latīf, p. 20.

سَاءِ نَه اَتْهَو سُوَرِ جُو هَانِي تَهْمُونِ هَسُو

You have no taste of the pain; now you laugh. Sh. Sām. III, Epil. 1.

مَنْدِي نَهْ أَهِيْنِ مَنْ مِيْنِ سُنْجَاتَانْشُونِ ثَوَابْ

No wickedness is in their heart; they have known the retribution. Maj. 218.

4) The Aorist.

a) The masc. form هَوَسِ hōse.

SINGULAR.

	Suffix I pers.	Suffix II pers.	Suffix III pers.
Sing.	I	هَوَسَانِي hōsā-e.	هَوَسَانْسِ hōsā-se.
	II هُوَيْنِم huē-me.	. . . . .	هُيْنِسِ huē-se.
	III هُوِم hō-me.	هُوِم hō-e.	هُوِسِ hō-se.
Plur.	I	هُوَاسُونِي huāsū-e.	هُوَاسُونْسِ huāsū-se.
	II هُوْتُوِم huō-me.	. . . . .	هُتُوِسِ huō-se.
	III هُوِم ^١ hua-me. ¹⁾	هُيْ hua-e.	هُيْسِ hua-se.

PLURAL.

Sing. { I	هَوَسَانُو hōsā-va.	هَوَسَانِ hōsā-ne.
II هَوَسَانُو huē-ū.	. . . . .	هَوَسَانِ huē-ne.
III هَوَسَانُو hō-sū.	هَوَسَانُو hō-va.	هَوَسَانِ hō-ne.
Plur. { I	هَوَسَانُوُو huāsū-va.	هَوَسَانُوُو huāsū-ne.
II هَوَسَانُوُو huō-sū.	. . . . .	هَوَسَانُوُو huō-ne.
III هَوَسَانُوُو huā-sū.	هَوَسَانُوُو hua-va.	هَوَسَانُوُو hua-ne.

1) In poetry long ā is frequently retained, as; هَوَسَانِ huā-me, هَوَسَانِ huā-e, هَوَسَانِ huā-se etc.

b) The fem. form هَيَّسَ huyase.

SINGULAR.

	Suffix I pers.	Suffix II pers.	Suffix III pers.
Sing.	I	هَيَّسَانِي huīsā-e.	هَيَّسَانِسِ huīsā-se.
	II هَيَّيْنِمِ huiyā-me. ¹⁾	هَيَّيْنِسِ huiyā-se.
	III هَيَّيْمِ huya-me.	هَيَّيْ huya-e.	هَيَّيْسِ huya-se.
Plur.	I	هَيَّوْنُسُونِي huyūsū-e.	هَيَّوْنُسُونِي huyūsū-e.
	II هَيَّيْنِمِ huyū-me.	. . . . .	هَيَّيْنِسِ huyū-se.
	III هَيَّيْنِمِ huyū-me.	هَيَّيْنِي huyū-e.	هَيَّيْنِسِ huyū-se.

PLURAL.

Sing.	I	هَيَّسَانَوِ huīsā-va.	هَيَّسَانِ huīsā-ne.
	II هَيَّيْنُسُونِ huyē-sū.	. . . . .	هَيَّيْنِ huiyā-ne.
	III هَيَّيْسُونِ huī-sū.	هَيَّيْ huya-va.	هَيَّيْ huya-ne.
Plur.	I	هَيَّوْنُسُونَوِ huyūsū-va.	هَيَّوْنُسُونِ huyūsū-ne.
	II هَيَّيْنُسُونِ huyū-sū.	. . . . .	هَيَّيْنِ huyū-ne.
	III هَيَّيْنُسُونِ huyū-sū.	هَيَّيْنَوِ huyū-va.	هَيَّيْنِ huyū-ne.

1) Or هَيَّيْنِمِ huiē-me, هَيَّيْنِمِ huyē-me, هَيَّيْنِمِ huyā-me.

That to هو *hō*, هُوَ *huī* etc., when forming with the past participle passive the Pluperfect, also a suffix, denoting the Instrumental, may be attached, will be shown in §. 56, 5.

It is to be observed, that the inflexional termination of the I pers. Sing. masc. and fem., *se*, becomes *sā* before the accession of the suffixes; the fem. termination هُيَس *huyase* is at the same time reduced to its original form هِي *huī*, as: هُيَسَانِي *huī-sā-e*. The suffix of the I pers. Plur. is in the Aorist *sū* or *sī*, and not *ū*, as in the Imperative, Potential and Present. In the II pers. fem. Sing. the form هُيَس *huyē* or هِيَس *huyī* is employed, when followed by the heavy suffix *sū* or *sī*, the accent being then thrown on the last syllable of the verb, as: *huyē-sū* or *huyī-sū*.

In the same way as to هُوس *hōse* and هُيَس *huyase* the suffixes accede to تِهَس *thiuse* and تِهَس *thiase*, and to every other neuter verb in the Aorist, for which تِهَس *thiuse* may serve as paradigm.

The Aorist تِهَس *thiuse*.

a) The masculine form تِهَس *thiuse*.

SINGULAR OF THE SUFFIX.

	Suffix I pers.	Suffix II pers.	Suffix III pers.
Sing.	I	تِهَسَانِي <i>thiōsā-e</i> .	تِهَسَانَس <i>thiōsā-se</i> .
	II تِهَسِين <i>thiē-me</i>.	. . . . .	تِهَسِينَس <i>thiē-se</i> .
	III تِهَس <i>thiu-me</i> . ¹⁾	تِهَسِي <i>thiyu-e</i> .	تِهَس <i>thiu-se</i> .

1) In poetry the diminutive affix رُو *rō* is frequently attached to the past participle, to which the suffixes accede according to the common

SINGULAR OF THE SUFFIX.

	Suffix I pers.	Suffix II pers.	Suffix III pers.
Plur.	I	تِهَّاسُونِيّ thiāsū-e.	تِهَّاسُونِسِ thiāsū-se.
	II تِهَّاسُونِ thiō-me.	. . . . .	تِهَّاسُونِ thiō-se.
	تِهَّاسِ thia-me.	تِهَّاسِيّ thiya-e.	تِهَّاسِ thia-se.

PLURAL OF THE SUFFIX.

Sing.	I	تِهَّاسَاوَنِ thiōsā-va.	تِهَّاسَا thiōsā-ne.
	II تِهَّاسِينِ thiē-ū.	. . . . .	تِهَّاسِينِ thiē-ne.
	III تِهَّاسُونِ thiō-sū.	تِهَّاسِ thiu-va.	تِهَّاسِ thiu-ne.
Plur.	I	تِهَّاسَاوَنِ thiāsū-va.	تِهَّاسُونِ thiāsū-ne.
	II تِهَّاسُونِ thiō-sū.	. . . . .	تِهَّاسُونِ thiō-ne.
	III تِهَّاسُونِ thiā-sū.	تِهَّاسِ thia-va.	تِهَّاسِ thia-ne.

b) The feminine form تِهَّاسِ thiase.

SINGULAR OF THE SUFFIX.

	Suffix I pers.	Suffix II pers.	Suffix III pers.
Sing.	I	تِهَّاسَانِيّ thīsā-e.	تِهَّاسَانِسِ thīsā-se.
	II تِهَّاسَانِ thiā-me.	. . . . .	تِهَّاسَانِ thiā-se.
	III تِهَّاسِ thia-me.	تِهَّاسِيّ thiya-e.	تِهَّاسِ thiya-se.

rules, as: تِهَّاسَانِ thiaru-me, تِهَّاسَانِ thiaru-se etc. But in the I. and II pers. the diminutive affix is never added.

SINGULAR OF THE SUFFIX.

	Suffix I pers.	Suffix II pers.	Suffix III pers.
Plur.	I	تِهُونْسُونِيْ thiūsū-e.	تِهُونْسِينْسِ thiūsī-se.
	II تِهْنِمِ thiū-me. ¹⁾		تِهْنِسِ thiū-se.
	III تِهْنِمِ thiū-me.	تِهْنِيْ thiū-e.	تِهْنِسِ thiū-se.

PLURAL OF THE SUFFIX.

Sing.	I	تِهِسَانَوِ thiṣā-va.	تِهِسَانِ thiṣā-ne.
	II تِهْنِسُونِ thiē-sū.	. . . . .	تِهْنِ thia-ne.
	III تِهْسُونِ thi-sū.	تِهْيَوِ thiya-va.	تِهْيَنِ thiya-ne.
Plur.	I	تِهُونْسِينَوِ thiūsī-va.	تِهُونْسِينِ thiūsī-ne.
	II تِهُونْسُونِ thiū-sū.	. . . . .	تِهْنِ thiu-ne.
	III تِهُونْسُونِ thiū-sū.	تِهْنَوِ thiū-va.	تِهْنِ thiu-ne.

جَدَّهٖنِ پُنْسِ وَنَجِيْ كَوْلِيْ وَتِهْيِ اَنِندُوْ هُوْسِ تَدَّهٖنِ بَاهِرِ

اِندُوْ هُوْ

When his father having gone and searched (after him) took and brought him, then he was coming forth. Life of Abd-ul-Latīf, p. 3.

جِيْتِرُوْ كَهْرَبُوْ هُوْسِ بِيْتِرُوْ اَنْ بَرْتَنِ مَانَ كَهْلَنْدُوْ هُوْ

As much as was necessary to him, he was taking out of that vessel. Ibid. p. 21.

1) Or without the final nasal: تِهْنِمِ thiū-me.

اِيئِي سُنِينْدَهِي ڳالهڙي چَرِئُو تِهٽَس چُتُ

Hearing this story her mind became mad. Maj. 375.

تِي رِي تَنُورَ مِينِ تِهٽَم سُرَ سَرَسُ

Without them (i. e. removed from them) abundant pains have befallen me in the furnace. Maj. 663.

دِهڙِي ڪهي اُتَهاري پَنهن جي ڪهرِ وهاري پاڙهيُنڊا هُئسِ

Having removed the little daughter and placed her in their own house, they made her read (i. e. they instructed her). Life of Abd-ul-Latif, p. 46.

جِيڪي تَڪَر ڪهائِن ڪهان پَچَنڊا هُنن سِي اُن لَئي جي

ڏهنڏهرَ مِين رَڪهنڊا هُئا

Whatever pieces were remaining to them from eating, those they used to put in the hole of that tamarisk tree. Abd-ul-Latif's life, p. 23.

5) The Future.

a) The masculine form هُونْدُسِ hūnduse.

SINGULAR OF THE SUFFIX.

Sing.	Suffix I pers.	Suffix II pers.	Suffix III pers.
	I	هُونْدُوسَانِي hūndōsā-e.	هُونْدُوسَانِسِ hūndōsā-se.
	II هُونْدِينِمِ hūndē-me.	. . . . .	هُونْدِينِسِ hūndē-se.
	III هُونْدِمِ hūndu-me. ¹⁾	هُونْدِمِ hūndu-e. ²⁾	هُونْدُسِ hūndu-se.

1) In poetry frequently هُونْدُومِ hūndō-me, هُونْدَامِ hūndā-me etc.

2) Or هُونْدِي hūnde.

SINGULAR OF THE SUFFIX.

	Suffix I pers.	Suffix II pers.	Suffix III pers.
Plur.	I	هُونْدَاسُونِي hündāsū-e.	هُونْدَاسُونِس hündāsū-se.
	II هُونْدَوْم hündō-me. ¹⁾	هُونْدَوِس hündō-se.
	III هُونْدَم hūnda-me.	هُونْدَه hūnda-e.	هُونْدَسِ hūnda-se.

PLURAL OF THE SUFFIX.

Sing.	I	هُونْدَوَسَانَو hündōsā-va.	هُونْدَوَسَان hündōsā-ne.
	II هُونْدَيَنْتُون hündē-ū.	. . . . .	هُونْدَيِن hündē-ne.
	III هُونْدَوَسُون hündō-sū.	هُونْدَو hūndu-va.	هُونْدَن hūndu-ne.
Plur.	I	هُونْدَاسُونَو hündāsū-va.	هُونْدَاسُون hündāsū-ne.
	II هُونْدَوَسُون hündō-sū.	. . . . .	هُونْدَوِن hündō-ne.
	III هُونْدَاسُون hūndā-sū.	هُونْدَو hūnda-va.	هُونْدَن hūnda-ne.

b) The feminine form هُونْدِيَسِ hündiase.

SINGULAR OF THE SUFFIX.

	Suffix I pers.	Suffix II pers.	Suffix III pers.
Sing. I		هُونْدِيَسَانِي hündīsā-e.	هُونْدِيَسَانِس hündīsā-se.

1) Or هُونْدَوْم hūnda-u-me.

SINGULAR OF THE SUFFIX.

	Suffix I pers.	Suffix II pers.	Suffix III pers.
Sing.	II هُونْدِيْمَ hündiā-me. ¹⁾	هُونْدِيْسَ hündiā-se.
	III هُونْدِيْمَ hündya-me. ²⁾	هُونْدِيَّ hündya-e.	هُونْدِيْسَ hündya-se.
Plur.	I	هُونْدِيْئُسُوْ hündiūsū-e.	هُونْدِيْئُسُوْ hündiūsū-se.
	II هُونْدِيْمَ hündyū-me.	.....	هُونْدِيْسَ hündyū-se.
	III هُونْدِيْمَ hündyū-me.	هُونْدِيْئِيَّ hündyū-e.	هُونْدِيْسَ hündyū-se.

PLURAL OF THE SUFFIX.

Sing.	I	هُونْدِيْسَانَوْ hündisā-va.	هُونْدِيْسَانِ hündisā-ne.
	II هُونْدِيْئِيْمَ hündiē-ū.	.....	هُونْدِيْئِي hündia-ne.
	III هُونْدِيْسُونِ hündī-sū.	هُونْدِيَّوْ hündya-va.	هُونْدِيْئِي hündya-ne.
Plur.	I	هُونْدِيْئُسُوْ hündiūsū-va.	هُونْدِيْئُسُونِ hündiūsū-ne.
	II هُونْدِيْئُسُونِ hündiū-sū.	.....	هُونْدِيْئِي hündyu-ne.
	III هُونْدِيْئُسُونِ hündiū-sū.	هُونْدِيْئُوْ hündyū-va.	هُونْدِيْئِي hündyu-ne.

1) Or هُونْدِيْئِيْمَ hündiē-me.

2) The final i (y) of هُونْدِيْ hündī is frequently dropped in poetry, as, هُونْدِمَ hunda-me, instead of هُونْدِيْمَ hündya-me (hündia-me).

In the same way as to هُونْدُسِ hūnduse and هُونْدِسِ hūndiase the suffixes are also attached to the Future of the active and passive voice, and consequently to the present participle of both voices.

مَتَهُو مِیْنِ کَهِیْکَارَ یَارَ ثَانُ دِیْنْدُوسَانِی مَنکِنَا

The head, o friend, I shall give to thee with salutation as a present, o bard! Sh. Sōr. III, Epil.

سَبَاجَهُو بَاجَهَ کَرِی تَنْهَیْنِ سِیْنِ مِیْزِیْنْدُومِ

The merciful one, having bestowed mercy, will join me with him. Maj. 182.

هَوْتُ گَدُبُی حَبِّ مِیْنِ رَهَبَرُ مَتَهِی رَاهَ

(Thy) sweetheart will join thee on the Habb, as a guide on the way. Sh. Mazd. V, 5.

بَثُو ۛ جِیْکِی کُھَرَنْدُو سُو دِیْسِ

Whatever else he will ask, that shall be given to him. Story of Rāe Diācu, p. 7.

جِیْکَدِھِنِ لَیْلَهَرَاتِی کِی تَان پُن کَالِ کِی نَ چَھَدِیْنْدُوسِیْنِ

If laziness will be made, then also death will by no means give us up. Sindhī Read. book, p. 63.

اَوَهَان مَوْنِ سَانِ جِزَنْدُو ۞ پِیْلِی مَان کَدَھَنْدُومِ

You will be angry with me and turn me out of the service. Sindhī Read. book, p. 51.

اَدِیُونِ عَبْدُ اَلطِیْفِ چَری سِیْنِ لَهَنْدَمِ سَارَ

Sisters, says Abd-ul-Latīf, my friends will remember me. Sh. Um. Mār. I, Epil.

تُون جَنُهِن جِي نَكَ تِي وِينْدَهو ڏسِين سَا سُنَجَانِي ڪڏِهيج
تَه اُها هُونْدِيَسَانِي

On whose nose thou seest the nose ring, that one, having recognised, take out, then that one I shall be to thee. *Amulu Mān.* p. 150.

هڪڙو هُمُ هُشيارُ ڪِهون ڪِهونْدَه اوجِي

Be ready (and) careful, the lightening will flash upon thee suddenly. *Sh. Surāg.* VI, 5.

اِئين مَوچارو تَه مِين وِجي پئون ۽ هڪ ٻئي جِي وَاهر
سَان ماري مَنجائِيندِيُونسِين

So it is good, that we having gone fall amongst them and with the assistance of each other we shall beat and subject them. *Sindhī Read. book,* p. 64.

تَه چَوْنْدِيُونس پاشاهَرادي راتِ تَماشي تي. هلي هُئين

Then they will say to her: o princess, last night thou hadst gone to an amusement. *Amulu Mān.* p. 145.

§. 56.

II. The pronominal suffixes attached to the regular verb.

1) The Imperative.

(The same as the Potential.)

اچي چيَانِئين ماءُ ڪهي رُخصَتَ ڏيئِم رَضا

Having come he said to (his) mother: give me leave (and) permission. *Maj.* 77.

ماڙهن چيو مائِس ڪهي تَه تان پاڻ پُجهينس

The people said to his mother: ask thou thyself him. *Maj.* 42.

سا ڏيکهارئون جو جڻان لاهوتي لال تهڻو

Show us that place, where the devotee has become red. Sh. Mūm. Rānō III, 9.

رَبَّ پَسايُون رُو انهيڻ جي احسان سان

O Lord, show to us their face with (out of) kindness. Sh. Ked. IV, 5.

تاري ڏٺوش تڪڙو جوهر پائي زين

Give him a quick arab horse, having placed jewels on the saddle. Sh. Sōr. I, 18.

The Precative.

SINGULAR.

PLURAL.

Suffix

I p. Sing.	چھڏِ جانم چھاڏِجآ-me.	چھڏِ جوم چھاڏِجِو-me.
	Give me up.	Give ye me up.

Suffix

III p. Sing.	چھڏِ جانس چھاڏِجآ-se.	چھڏِ جوس چھاڏِجِو-se.
	Give him up.	Give ye him up.

Suffix

I p. Plur.	چھڏِ جانشون چھاڏِجآ-ū.	چھڏِ جوشون چھاڏِجِو-ū.
	Give us up.	Give ye us up.

Suffix

III p. Plur.	چھڏِ جان چھاڏِجآ-ne.	چھڏِ جون چھاڏِجِو-ne.
	Give them up.	Give ye them up.

هُر جي ڏھ ٻارھن ڏھاڪا سي تون مٽھونئين ڪھاڻي

ونچجانس

Those ten (or) twelve dishes having eaten from above go away from her. Amulu Mān. p. 144.

اسين جڏھين ٻئي گڏجي اچون تڏھين هي نانو ڏجانئون

When we both come together, then please to give us this money. Stack's Gram. p. 135.

جَدِّهَيْنِ آن كَجَهْرِي بَاهَزَّايَان تَدِّهَيْن مَارِي وَجَهْوَسِ

When I dismiss the court, then kill him. Story of Rāo Diāču, p. 4.

2) The Potential.

SINGULAR OF THE SUFFIX.

	Suffix I pers.	Suffix II pers.	Suffix III pers.
Sing.	I	چَهْدِ تَانِي čhaḍiā-e.	چَهْدِ تَانِسِ čhaḍiā-se.
	II چَهْدِ يَنِمِ čhaḍē-me. ¹⁾	چَهْدِ يَنِسِ čhaḍē-se.
	III چَهْدِ يَمِ čhaḍē-me.	چَهْدِ يِي čhaḍē-i.	چَهْدِ يِسِ čhaḍē-se.
Plur.	I	چَهْدِ تُونِي čhaḍiū-e.	چَهْدِ تُونِسِ čhaḍiū-se.
	II چَهْدِ تُونِمِ čhaḍiō-me.	. . . . .	چَهْدِ تُونِسِ čhaḍiō-se.
	III چَهْدِ نِمِ čhaḍini-me.	چَهْدِ نِي čhaḍin-i.	چَهْدِ نِسِ čhaḍini-se.

PLURAL OF THE SUFFIX.

Sing.	I	چَهْدِ تَانَوِ čhaḍiā-va.	چَهْدِ تَانِ čhaḍiā-ne.
	II چَهْدِ يَنْتُونِ čhaḍē-ū.	. . . . .	چَهْدِ يَنْ čhaḍē-ne.
	III چَهْدِ يْتُونِ čhaḍē-ū.	چَهْدِ يَوِ čhaḍē-va.	چَهْدِ يَنْ čhaḍē-ne.

1) Or چَهْدِ يَنِمِ čhaḍiē-me, چَهْدِ يَمِ čhaḍī-me.

PLURAL OF THE SUFFIX.

	Suffix I pers.	Suffix II pers.	Suffix III pers.
Plur.	I	چَهْدِ نُونَوَ čhaḍiũ-va.	چَهْدِ نُونِ čhaḍiũ-ne.
	II چَهْدِ نُونَوَنَ čhaḍiō-ũ.	. . . . .	چَهْدِ نُونِ čhaḍiō-ne.
	III چَهْدِ نُونِ čhaḍine-ũ.	چَهْدِ نُونِ čhaḍini-va.	چَهْدِ نُونِ čhaḍini-ne.

In the same way the suffixes accede to the Potential of the passive voice. The Potential and Present of the regular passive is however very rarely found with a suffix, more frequently that of intransitive verbs in the passive form, as: گَدْ جَانِي تَهو gadjā-e thō, I meet with thee.

In the Imperfect the suffixes accede, as stated already, to the auxiliary verb هوس hōse.

سَانِيَن صَاحِبْزَادِي كَهِي مَوَكَلْ ڏِي تَه آئون فَقِيرَ جِي
پيرين رجھارائي آچانس

Lord, give leave of absence to the prince, that I may come having laid him at the feet of the Faqir. Amulu Mān., p. 1.

مَتَهو هِيئي مِهَبَانِ هِييَ چَو تَه هِتِ ڏِنَانِي

Having gone speak, o guest, that I may give thee there this head. Sh. Sōr. I, 13.

نُونِهِيَن رَهِيَنمَ رُوحَ مِيَن تَوَهِيَن ڏَانِهَ نِيَن

Even thou remainest me in the heart, even towards thee (are my) eyes. Maj. 211.

تَذْهِنَ پَرِ مِیں پَنَہَن جُنُونِ کِٹُو مَتُونِ ڈِیسِ مَاءِ

Then the mother in (her) wise gives her her own advices. Maj. 288.

جِیکِ کُہَرِجِیٹی سُو ہِن مَان کَہَنجِ

Whatever may be necessary to thee, take that out of this (vessel). Life of Abd-ul-Latif, p. 21.

جِیکِ کُہَرِیو سُو اَنی ڈِجوسِ

Whatever he may ask you for, that bring and give him. Amulu Mān., p. 148.

بَانَبَہَن تَہِیٹی بُوٹیون دَ کُتَا کَہَنی کِچَ جَا

O Brahmanī woman! become pieces of flesh, in order that the dogs of Kēč may eat thee! Sh. Maṣḍ. I, 1.

رَاثَا رَہَانِ جَا تَہَا مَارِیُونِ مَذْکُورِ

O Rānō, the record (pl.) of our conversations kills us. Sh. Mūm. Rānō V, 10.

تَوڑِی چَکِنَ چَاکَ دَ بَہِی آہ دَ سَلَنِ عَامَ کَہِی

Though their wounds flow, yet do they not their sigh divulge to the people. Sh. Kal. II, 23.

3) The past participle.

(The III pers. of the Aorist.)

The way, in which the pronominal suffixes accede to the Aorist of neuter verbs, may be seen from the paradigm of تَہِیسِ thiuse. In the Aorist of the passive voice the suffixes are only attached to the III pers. Sing. and Plur. or to the past participle passive. The suffixes thus attached imply either a Dative-Accusative (the object in general) or an Instrumental. The suffixes of the I and II pers. of the Sing. and Plur. may at the same time denote the object or the agent, but

in the III pers. Sing. and Plur. different suffixes are employed to express the object or the agent, *se* and *ne* denoting the object, and *ī* and *ū* the agent (see §. 54). Both *ī* and *ū* are considered as heavy suffixes, which draw the accent from the first to the last syllable of the verb; final *ō* of the past participle must therefore be changed to *ā* before them (and for euphony's sake with an additional nasal to *ā*), to give a support to the following heavy suffix. In the fem. Sing. an *ā* must likewise be inserted between the final *ī* and the suffixes *ī* and *ū*, to which even the feminine Plural termination *ū* must give way, so that the Singular and Plural of both genders become alike, if joined by the instrumental suffixes *ī* and *ū*.

a) The past participle with single suffixes.

The masc. Sing. چەڊئۆ *čhaḍiō*.

	Suffix I pers.	Suffix II pers.	Suffix III pers.
Sing.	چەڊئم <i>čhaḍiu-me.</i>	چەڊئي <i>čhaḍyu-e.¹⁾</i>	چەڊئانئين <i>čhaḍiā-ī.</i>
Plur.	چەڊئوسون <i>čhaḍiō-sū.</i>	چەڊئو <i>čhaḍyu-va.²⁾</i>	چەڊئانئون <i>čhaḍiā-ū.</i>

The masc. plur. چەڊئا *čhaḍia*.

Sing.	چەڊئم <i>čhaḍia-me.</i>	چەڊئي <i>čhaḍya-e.³⁾</i>	چەڊئانئين <i>čhaḍiā-ī.</i>
Plur.	چەڊئاسون <i>čhaḍiā-sū.</i>	چەڊئو <i>čhaḍya-va.</i>	چەڊئانئون <i>čhaḍiā-ū.</i>

1) Or چەڊئي *čhaḍie* (*čhaḍye*).

2) Occasionally also: چەڊيان *čhaḍy-ā.*

3) Or contracted چەڊئي *čhaḍye.*

The fem. Sing. چَهْدِي čhaḍī.

	Suffix I pers.	Suffix II pers.	Suffix III pers.
Sing.	چَهْدِيَمِ čhaḍīa-me.	چَهْدِي čhaḍya-e.	چَهْدِيَانِي čhaḍiā-i.
Plur.	چَهْدِيَسُونِ čhaḍī-sū.	چَهْدِيَوِ čhaḍya-va.	چَهْدِيَانُونِ čhaḍiā-ū.

The fem. Plur. چَهْدِيُونِ čhaḍiū.

Sing.	چَهْدِيُومِ čhaḍiū-me. ¹⁾	چَهْدِيُونِي čhaḍyū-e.	چَهْدِيُويَانِي čhaḍiā-i.
Plur.	چَهْدِيُونُونِ čhaḍiū-sū.	چَهْدِيُونَوِ čhaḍyū-va.	چَهْدِيُويَانُونِ čhaḍiā-ū.

هِنَ مِثْهَائِي مِيوِو پَتُو كَدِهِنَ نَ كَدِهَوِمَ

Another fruit of this sweetness was never eaten by me. Maj. 129.

اچي سَوِو تِهَوِو جَوِو كِرِو سِي كَنِ سِينِ

Having come thou hast seen that high bank, of which thou hast heard with (thy) ears. Sh. Surāg. III, 9.

جَانِي كِرِو جَدَا سَوَرَقِه تِهِي سَارِي

(My) friend has been separated by thee, calculates Sōrathī. Sh. Sōr. I, Epil.

پَتُرُ جِنَانِيَن تَنِهِنِ جَوِو قَالُو مِيَانِ غُلَامِ شَاهِ رَكِهَانُونِ

By her a son was born, to whom by them the name Miā Ghulām Shāh was given. Abd-ul-Latīf's life, p. 35.

1) Written and pronounced frequently چَهْدِيُومِ čhaḍiū-me, without an intervening nasal.

پي پيالو عشق جو سبھڪي سمجھوسون

Having drunk a cup of love we understood every thing. Sh. Kal. II, Epil.

ڏٺھو جي ٻروچ مون جان ھوٽ آھن سين

If by you the Barōč, the sweetheart, had been seen with the eyes, as by me. Sh. Hus. XI, 1.

ڪو نہ مڪانئون ڪڏھن تہ ڏھن نياپو سين نيئھ

Was never sent by them to thee any message with love? Maj. 648.

ھوند نہ ستهيم ھيتري ڪوھياري جي کان

Would that I had not suffered so much anxiety about the mountaineer. Sh. Ābirī V, 17.

وچانئي وڌھڻو وکھ نہ ڪھڻي ھيڪري

Even from the midst he was cut off by thee; thou didst not make one step. Sh. Hus. X, 27.

مون ڪر نہ لدھي ڪڏھين ساجن تھن جي سار

I have never informed me about thee nor remembered thee, o friend! Maj. 757.

انٻھا سنبھا نہ ڪري سونھ وڃايس سور

What wants unction she does not anoint; her beauty has been wasted by grief. Sh. Um. Mār. III, 7.

ماني ڪھڻيسين ڪي نہ انھي واسطي ائين چئانئين

We have not any bread taken with us, therefore he spoke thus. Matth. 16, 7.

ھوند نہ پليو مان ڪھريون سبھ ڪھڙا ڪھڻي

I likely would not have been stopped by you; you all would have slid down (into the river), having taken jars (to swim upon). Sh. Suh. I, 3.

پَسَنَ خَاطِرِ پَرِنَ جِي پَاتِيَمِ جِهَاتَرِيُون

For the sake of seeing my friend I applied little peepings, i. e. I peeped a little through. Sh. Kambh. II, Epil. 1.

چَهَنُ چَوَنِ کي تَه لَاجَانِي تَهَر جَائِيُون

Lest some say to me: by thee the daughters of the Thar have been put to shame. Sh. Um. Mār. II, 17.

تَه بَانُهَن رِجِهِي وَات رِيهُون کِيُو رَنج مِين

Then having thrown (your) mouth into (your) sleeves, you would have made wailings in the desert. Sh. Hus. XII, 6.

Suffixes of the III pers. Sing. and Plur. denoting the object.

چَهْدِئُو

Sing. چَهْدِئَسِ čhaḍiu-se.

Plur. چَهْدِئَنِ čhaḍiu-ne.

چَهْدِئَا

Sing. چَهْدِئَسِ čhaḍia-se.

Plur. چَهْدِئَنِ čhaḍia-ne.

چَهْدِي

Sing. چَهْدِئَسِ čhaḍia-se.

Plur. چَهْدِئَنِ čhaḍia-ne.

چَهْدِئُون

Sing. چَهْدِئُسِ čhaḍiū-se.

Plur. چَهْدِئَنِ čhaḍiu-ne.

کُو چَوِي پُسِ جِنُ جُسي مِين کُو چَٻِي عَقْلُ پَهَرِئُسِ

One says: a jinn has fallen into his body, another says: his understanding has turned round (i. e. he has become mad). Maj. 40.

کَالَه گَدِئُسُون کَپَرِي بَابُو بِيکَهَارِي

Yesterday met with us a Kāparī, a mendicant bābū. Sh. Mūm. Rānō III, 4.

سَہِیٿِي وَتَمِ وَسِرِي جِيڪِي سَڪَا سِينَ

All those have been forgotten by me, whoever (be) my relatives and friends. Maj. 212.

تَرِي تَن پَناسِ پَاسَنئون پَآڙِي وَهي
ڪُهو هُو جهُرُ جَهُنُو تَهُنُو لَآجُو سَبُو لَڙَنَاسِ

In the bottom she has got leaks, from the sides water flows in,

The mast has become old, all her ropes are dangling. Sh. Surāg. III, 6.

اَها دِهِيڙِي پُن جَدِهِن مَآلِها اَن جُو بُندِهِندي هِيئي تَدِهِن
پَنهن جي سِرِ اُهي تَڪَرُ مَآني جُو ڪَهِي آئي ڏيندي هِيَسِ

That little daughter also, when she was hearing the talk of him, used to stand up herself, and having taken and brought a piece of bread, was giving it him. Abd-ul-Latif's life, p. 46.

جي هِيُو هُوَتَ پُنهُو سِين مُون ڪَها مُلَاقَاتِ

If there had been to you, like as to me, a meeting with the sweetheart Punhū. Sh. Hus. XII, 6.

هِن آسان جي حَالِ جي خَبَرُ تان نَ پَٿِي¹

No intelligence of this our state has come to thee. Maj. 229.

تَنهين جي وائي هُونَدَ نَ ويِيوِ وَسِرِي

Their speech perhaps would not be forgotten by you. Sh. Hus. XII, 7.

1) پَٿِي pi-e instead of پِيِي piya-e.

مُون ڪهي ڇهڙي هلياَ ڪا پيڻ مٽهي پتي

They went having given me up; some (word) has fallen upon their gall bag. Sh. Maṣḥ. III, Epil.

جڻين آئنس مٽئون وڻجڻو ٿهي واري

In that wise, as the advices came to her, she, having gone, answers him. Maj. 424.

سري ڪي نه ڪڙون وڍن موڪهي جي مارا

By the wine nothing was done to them; by the ill-language of the released one they were killed. Sh. Jam. Kal. IV, 18.

اوڻن رسي سڻڪو مڻين پرين رڻها

At a vice every body takes offence; (my) friends have taken offence at (my) virtues. Sh. Āsa IV, 24.

ڪنهن ڪامن ڪيائ ڪينئ بهنبهولئين ڪرها

آڪهن مٽهي آڪها پڙ مين پير ڪٽها

By whom were enchantments made to thee? how wast thou confused, o camel?

Upon (thy) eyes are hoods; in the plain (thy) feet were grated. Sh. Kambh. II, 39.

سهي لڪ نڪ سڻين ڪڙل بهرين نين

Of slender loin, of straight nose, their eyes filled with lamp-black. Sh. Sam. I, 35.

b) The past participle with two suffixes.

To the past participle passive two suffixes may be attached, the first denoting the agent and the latter the object (Dative-Accusative), as:

مُون تُو کھی چھڌڻو چھاڊيؤ-مڙ-ه = chadiō-mā-e

thou wast given up by me, literally: by me it was given up in reference to thee.

To suffixes of the II pers. Sing. and Plur. no further suffix is added, joint suffixes of this kind being mostly found in the III pers. Sing and Plur., very seldom in the I pers. Sing. and Plur.

The suffix used for the I person Singular is in this case not *me*, but *mā* (the Instrumental of آئون āū), as 'me' would not be strong enough to support the following suffix. The Instrumental suffix of the III pers. Singular *ī* is either contracted with the preceding *ā* to *ā*, or is retained before a following suffix; the suffix of the III. person Plural keeps its place before another acceding suffix, but is frequently shortened to *ū* (u).

No change of gender and number can take place in the participle, when joined by the suffix of the III person Singular or Plural; but when the participle is provided with a suffix of the I person Singular or Plural, it must agree with its subject in gender and number.

SINGULAR.

Masc.

Fem.

چھڌڻو

چھڌي

Suffix I pers. Sing.	{	چھڌڻو ماني چھاڊيؤ-مڙ-ه.	چھڌي ماني چھاڊي-مڙ-ه.
		چھڌڻو مانس چھاڊيؤ-مڙ-ه.	چھڌي مانس چھاڊي-مڙ-ه.
		چھڌڻو مانو چھاڊيؤ-مڙ-ه.	چھڌي مانو چھاڊي-مڙ-ه.
		چھڌڻو مان چھاڊيؤ-مڙ-ه.	چھڌي مان چھاڊي-مڙ-ه.

Masc. and Fem. Sing. and Plur.

Suffix III pers. Sing.	چەڤ تانئىنم چەڤ تانئىنم	čhaḍiā-i-me or:	چەڤ تانم چەڤ تانم	čhaḍiā-me.
	چەڤ تانئىنە چەڤ تانئىنە	čhaḍiā-i-e or:	چەڤ تانە چەڤ تانە	čhaḍiā-e.
	چەڤ تانئىنس چەڤ تانئىنس	čhaḍiā-i-se or:	چەڤ تانس چەڤ تانس	čhaḍiā-se.
	چەڤ تانئىنسۇن چەڤ تانئىنسۇن	čhaḍiā-i-sū or:	چەڤ تانسۇن چەڤ تانسۇن	čhaḍiā-su.
	چەڤ تانئىنۋ چەڤ تانئىنۋ	čhaḍiā-i-va or:	چەڤ تانۋ چەڤ تانۋ	čhaḍiā-va.
	چەڤ تانئىنە چەڤ تانئىنە	čhaḍiā-i-ne or:	چەڤ تانە چەڤ تانە	čhaḍiā-ne.

Suffix I pers. Plur.	چەڤ تۇسۇنە چەڤ تۇسۇنە	čhaḍiō-sū-e.	چەڤ تۇسۇنە چەڤ تۇسۇنە	čhaḍi-sū-e.
	چەڤ تۇسۇنس چەڤ تۇسۇنس	čhaḍiō-sū-se.	چەڤ تۇسۇنس چەڤ تۇسۇنس	čhaḍi-sū-se.
	چەڤ تۇسۇنۋ چەڤ تۇسۇنۋ	čhaḍiō-sū-va.	چەڤ تۇسۇنۋ چەڤ تۇسۇنۋ	čhaḍi-sū-va.
	چەڤ تۇسۇنە چەڤ تۇسۇنە	čhaḍiō-sū-ne.	چەڤ تۇسۇنە چەڤ تۇسۇنە	čhaḍi-sū-ne.

Masc. and Fem. Sing. and Plur.

Suffix III pers. Plur.	چەڤ تانئۇنم چەڤ تانئۇنم	čhaḍiā-ū-me. ¹⁾
	چەڤ تانئۇنە چەڤ تانئۇنە	čhaḍiā-ū-e.
	چەڤ تانئۇنس چەڤ تانئۇنس	čhaḍiā-ū-se.
	چەڤ تانئۇنسۇن چەڤ تانئۇنسۇن	čhaḍiā-ū-sū.
	چەڤ تانئۇنۋ چەڤ تانئۇنۋ	čhaḍiā-ū-va.
	چەڤ تانئۇنە چەڤ تانئۇنە	čhaḍiā-ū-ne.

1) Or shortened: چەڤ تانئۇم چەڤ تانئۇم čhaḍiā-ū-me and with elision of the final nasal: چەڤ تانئۇم چەڤ تانئۇم čhaḍiā-u-me.

PLURAL.

*Masc.**Fem.*

چَهْدَنَ

چَهْدَنُون

Suffix I pers. Sing.

چَهْدَنَامَانِي

چَهْدَنُونَمَانِي

čhađiā-mā-e.

čhađiū-mā-e.

etc.

etc.

Suffix I pers. Plur.

چَهْدَنَاسُونِي

چَهْدَنُونَسُونِي

čhađiā-sū-e.

čhađiū-sū-e.

etc.

etc.

تُنهن جي چيلن وٽ وڻهي آندو مانس پَر هو چُهٽائي

نہ سگھيس

I brought him to thy disciples, but they could not cure him. Matth. 17, 16.

سِيدها پادها ڏنائينس

He gave him provisions (and) victuals. Story of Rāe Diācu, p. 5.

ميان غلام شاهه ڪهت تان ٿرپو ڏيئي اچي هته صاحبزادي

جو وڻهي ڪهت تي سيراندهي ڪهن وهاريائينس

Miā Ghulām Shāh, having jumped from the couch, having come (and) seized the hand of the gentleman, seated him upon the couch at its upper part (literally: from its upper part). Abd-ul-Latif's life, p. 7.

انهي آيو اُستاد ڏانهن ابهي عرض چيائس

Having risen he came to (his) master and addressed to him standing the petition. Maj. 6.

چِٽائين ابو تهان جو انهي پُجهن جو واسطو ڪهڙو

She said to them: fathers, what reason have you to ask after this? Amulu Mān. p. 140.

اَهُو سَبْهُ قَقِيرَ جُو نَدَرُ ثِيثِي هَلَايَانِ

Having given all this as a gift to the Faqīr he started them off. *Amulu Mān.* p. 140.

سِي پَنَهَن جُو نَانُو هِكِرِي بُدْهِي وَت دَهْرَاوَت رَكْهِي
چَانُونَسِ

They, having placed their money in deposit with an old woman said to her. *Stack's Gram.* p. 135.

مَازِي جُوڑِي آيِي اَكِيَان دَهْرَانُونَسِ

Having prepared bread and brought (it), they placed it before him. *Abd-ul-Latif's life*, p. 48.

4) The past participle with the auxiliary

آهي āhē etc.

(The Perfect.)

The single suffixes, be they referring to the agent or the object, are joined to آهي āhē and آنهي, but chiefly to the form اُتھ at̥ha (§. 55), and not to the participle itself.

But to the form اُتھ at̥ha a double suffix may be joined, the first implying the agent and the latter the object, as: دِنُو اُتھِيَانِي, I have given to thee, literally: it has been given by me in reference to thee. The suffix of the III. person Singular and of the II. person Plural does not admit of a second suffix.

The original i of अत्थि at̥thi reappears again and is lengthened at the same time, when followed by a double suffix in the II. and III. person Singular, to give a support to the heavy joint-suffix.

Singular and Plural.

Suffix I pers. Sing.	{	آتِهِيَانِي	چَهْدِئُو	čhađiō	athī-mā-e.
		آتِهِيَانِسِ	چَهْدِئَا	čhađiā	athī-mā-se.
		آتِهِيَانَو	چَهْدِي	čhađi	athī-mā-va.
		آتِهِيَانِ	چَهْدِئُون	čhađiū	athī-mā-ne.
Suffix II pers. Sing.	{	آتِهِيَايِمِ	”	”	athē-ī-me.
		آتِهِيَايِسِ	”	”	athē-ī-se.
		آتِهِيَايِسُونِ	”	”	athē-ī-sū.
		آتِهِيَايِينِ	”	”	athē-ī-ne.
Suffix I pers. Plur.	{	آتِهُونِي	”	”	ath-ū-e.
		آتِهُونِسِ	”	”	ath-ū-se.
		آتِهُونَو	”	”	ath-ū-va.
		آتِهُونِ	”	”	ath-ū-ne.
Suffix III pers. Plur.	{	آتِهَنِمِ	”	”	atha-ni-me.
		آتِهَنِي	”	”	atha-ne-ī.
		آتِهَنِسِ	”	”	atha-ni-se.
		آتِهَنُونِ	”	”	atha-ne-ū.
		آتِهَنَو	”	”	atha-ni-va.
		آتِهَنِ	”	”	atha-ni-ne.

سُنْهَنِي مِينِ هُنْ كَرِي كَهَنِيُونِ مَگَالِهَنُونِ سَتَهِيُونِ اَتَهَمِ

In a dream I have suffered many things for his sake. Matth. 27, 19.

حُسَيْنِ پَرِي رَانِي جِي كُوڏَ تِي كَندهُ رَكهڻو آهيسَ

He has placed his neck upon the knee of Husine, the fairy queen. Amulu Mān. p. 152.

پوءِ وَارَ سَڪائي ڪپڙا ڪُهرايا اَتَهِيئي

Then having dried the hairs thou hast asked for clothes. Ibid. p. 146.

شِينَهَنِ جَاگائيسَ تَه پَرِيُونِ آيون اَتَهِيئي

The lions awakened him (saying): the fairies have come to thee. Ibid. p. 150.

5) The past participle with the auxiliary هُو etc.

(The Pluperfect.)

The single suffixes are joined to هُو hō etc., which see. Thus in the III person Singular and Plural the instrumental suffix *ī* and *ū* is also attached to هُو etc., as: چَهڏِئُو هُئَانِيَنِ čhaḍiō huā-ī¹), by him it had been given up, چَهڏِئُو هُئَانُونِ čhaḍiō huā-ū, by them it had been given up.

But to هُو hō etc. a double suffix may also be attached, the first denoting the agent and the latter the object, as: چَهڏِئُو هُوَمَانِي čhaḍiō hō-mā-e, thou hadst been given up by me, literally: it had been given up by me in reference to thee. These double suffixes however are of rare occurrence; in the II person Singular and Plural they are not in use.

1) Instead of هُئَانِيَنِ huā-ī and هُئَانُونِ huā-ū the contracted forms هَانِيَنِ hā-ī and هَانُونِ hā-ū (from هُو) are also in use.

SINGULAR.

*Masc.**Fem.*Suffix
I pers. Sing.

چَهْدِئُو هُوْمَانِي	چَهْدِي هُئِيْمَانِي
čhađiō hō-mā-e.	čhađi huī-mā-e.
چَهْدِئُو هُوْمَانِسِ	چَهْدِي هُئِيْمَانِسِ
čhađiō hō-mā-se.	čhađi huī-mā-se.
چَهْدِئُو هُوْمَانَو	چَهْدِي هُئِيْمَانَو
čhađiō hō-mā-va.	čhađi huī-mā-va.
چَهْدِئُو هُوْمَانِ	چَهْدِي هُئِيْمَانِ
čhađiō hō-mā-ne.	čhađi huī-mā-ne.

Masc. and Fem. Sing. and Plur.

Suffix
III pers. Sing.

چَهْدِئُو هُوْمَانِيْمِ	چَهْدِئُو	čhađiō huā-ī-me.
چَهْدِئَا هُوْمَانِيْنِي	چَهْدِئَا	čhađiā huā-ī-e.
چَهْدِي هُوْمَانِيْنِسِ	چَهْدِي	čhađi huā-ī-se.
چَهْدِئُونِ هُوْمَانِيْنِسُونِ	چَهْدِئُونِ	čhađiū huā-ī-sū.
هُْمَانِيْنِيْتُو	”	” huā-ī-va.
هُْمَانِيْنِي	”	” huā-ī-ne.

Suffix
I pers. Plur.

چَهْدِئُو هُوْسُونِي	چَهْدِي هُئِيْسُونِي
čhađiō hō-sū-e.	čhađi huī-sū-e.
چَهْدِئُو هُوْسُونِسِ	چَهْدِي هُئِيْسُونِسِ
čhađiō hō-sū-se.	čhađi huī-sū-se.
چَهْدِئُو هُوْسُونَو	چَهْدِي هُئِيْسُونَو
čhađiō hō-sū-va.	čhađi huī-sū-va.
چَهْدِئُو هُوْسُونِ	چَهْدِي هُئِيْسُونِ
čhađiō hō-sū-ne.	čhađi huī-sū-ne.

1) Or shortened: هُوْمَانِيْمِ huā-ī-me, and with elision of the final nasal of the first suffix: هُوْمَانِيْمِ huā-i-me etc.

Masc. and Fem. Sing. and Plur.

Suffix III pers. Plur.	{	چَهْدِئُوْ (هَئَانُوْمَ)	čhađiō huā-ū-me.
		چَهْدِئَا هَئَانُوِي	čhađiā huā-ū-e.
		چَهْدِئِي هَئَانُوْسِ	čhađi huā-ū-se.
		چَهْدِئُوْ هَئَانُوْسُوْن	čhađiū huā-ū-sū.
		هَئَانُوْرَ	„ „ huā-ū-va.
		هَئَانُوْن	„ „ huā-ū-ne.

PLURAL.

		Masc.	Fem.
Suffix			
I pers. Sing.	چَهْدِئَا هَئَامَانِي	čhađiā huā-mā-e.	چَهْدِئُوْن هَيُونَمَانِي
	etc. etc.	etc. etc.	etc. etc.
Suffix			
I pers. Plur.	چَهْدِئَا هَئَاوُونِي	čhađiā huā-sū-e.	چَهْدِئُوْن هَيُونَسُوْنِي
	etc. etc.	etc. etc.	etc. etc.

رِي كُنْبَهَر جَا پُتَر مُون سَان پِيْن مَهِينِيْن جُو كَهْن كِتُو هُوْ

O son of the potter! with me thou hadst made a term of two months. Story of Rāe Diācu, p. 5.

اَسَان كَهِي جَا چَتِهِي بَاسِي هِيْئِي سَا ڌِي

Give us that letter, which thou hadst promised. Abdul-Latīf's life, p. 49.

جَنِيْن خِدْمَتَكَر كَهِي اَكِي سِيكَهَارَتُو هَانِيْن تَنِيْن ڌِي

نَهَارَانِيْن

He looked towards that servant, whom he had instructed beforehand. Ibid. p. 9.

1) Or shortened هَئَانُوْمَ huā-ū-me, and with elision of the final nasal of the first suffix: هَئَانُوْمَ huā-u-me, etc.

جَا فَقِيرَ اَوْهَانِ سَانَ مَکَالِهَ کِي هُئَانِئِي تَنُهِنِ سَبَبَانِ پَانِ نَ اِيُو

By reason of that word, which the Faqīr had spoken to you, he has not come himself. Abd-ul-Latif's life, p. 49.

اَهُو وَيَنْدَهُو جِنِّي پَرِي چِئُو هُوسِ تِنِّي بَانِهِي چِي كَهَرِ مِيِنِ
وَدَهَانِئِي

That nose ring, as it had been said to him by the fairy, he threw into the jar of the slave-girl. Amulu Mān., p. 150.

جُو پَاتِشَاهِي قَوْلِ چِئُو هَانُونِ

What royal word had been spoken by them. Ibid. p. 143.

6) The Future.

(Active and passive voice.)

See the paradigm of هُونْدُسِ hūnduse.

SECTION IV.

ADVERBS, POSTPOSITIONS, CONJUNCTIONS
AND INTERJECTIONS.

Chapter XVIII.

Adverbs.

§. 57.

The Sindhī has only a limited number of original adverbs.¹⁾ Adverbs are not derived from adjectives by any change of the adjectival termination, but the adjective as such (in the masc. Sing.) is either used in an adverbial sense, or the adjective, agreeing in gender and number with the subject referred to, is employed, where we would use an adverb as a complement to the verb, as:

هُوَ رَمِي مَانِي كَهَائِي تَهو he weeps much: كَهَنُو رُئي تَهو
he eats only bread.

A number of substantives are at the same time also used adverbially, either in the Nominative, the Instrumental, the Locative or the Ablative case, similarly some adjectives in the Locative and Ablative have received an adverbial signification.

1) Adverbs borrowed from the Arabic or Persian are here only so far taken into consideration, as they are commonly used in Sindhī.

I. Original adverbs.¹⁾

The most common of them are:

آپَاکَ apāka, accidentally.	پَرَهَنَ parehā, after to-
آپَرِ apare, excessively.	morrow.
آتَ ate, very.	تُرْتُ turtu, quickly.
آجُ aju, to-day.	تَوَ tōe, then.
آچَانَاکَ ačanaka, { suddenly;	تَهَّهَّهَّهَّ thahapaha, quickly.
آچَاچَیْتِ ačāčēte, { unawares.	جَاۤیِ jāi, positively; ne-
آرَهَنَ arehā, { on the	nessarily.
fourth day	جَنُ janu, to say so; as if.
تَرَهَنَ tarehā, { (from the	جَهَّتَپَتِ jhatepate, { instantly.
present).	چَٓتَپَتِ čatepate, {
آسَهُ asahu, wholly; com-	جَکُسَ jēkuse, perhaps.
pletely.	چَهَّ čhō, why?
آلَبَّتَّهْ albattah, certainly	سَدَا sadā, always.
(arab.).	شَاۤیِدَ šāyad, {
اُمَالَاکَ umālaka, in a moment.	perhaps.
اَنَّا anā, till now.	شَاۤیِتَ šāita, { (pers.)
بَسَ base, enough.	شَاتَ šāta, {
بِلْکُلِ bilkule, wholly; ab-	کَالَهَ kālha, { yesterday.
solutely (arab.).	کَلَهَ kalha, {
بِنَهْ bineha, completely.	کَدَاچَٓتِ kadāčite, perhaps.
پَتِی patia, { completely;	کَرَّ kara ²⁾ , as if; to say
پَهَتِ phate, { at all.	so; like.

1) The numeral adverbs see §. 29.

2) Or کَرَّ karu.

گڏُ gaḍu, together.	نڪڻينَ nikaṇī, thoroughly;
لُرُ lura, straight-	wholly.
forward; instantly.	نِٿه neṭhe, finally; at last.
مَسَ masa, }	وِٽَرِ vētare, very greatly.
مَسَان masā, }	هَائي hānē, }
مَسِين masē, }	هَائيِ hānē-i, }
مُفْتُ muftu, gratuitously.	now; im-
(pers.)	mediately.
نَ na, not.	هَرُوبَهَرُ harūbharū, certainly.
نِپَٽُ nipaṭu; very; ex-	هَنَرِ hāra, now.
ceedingly.	هُونَدَ hūnda, possibly;
نِٽُ nitu, }	perhaps.
نِٽُ پَرُٽُ nitu pratu, }	هَيرِ hēra, now.
always.	هِيڪَاري hēkāri, still more;
نِچُ niču, with a wellcome.	still further.

اَبَ اَڪُنڌِي اَنهِيانَ تِنِي آتَنَ تِنِي ڏِيهَ

I am very longing as well after the spinning place as after the country. Sh. Um. Mār. II, 1.

اَڃا تون اَنوٽُ ڪهُوري خَبَرَ نَ لَهينَ

As yet thou art ignorant, thou takest no notice of the furnace. Sh. Jam. Kal. III, 11.

تَهَهِيَهَ جَهِي اُتِي اُڏائي

Having snatched (it) quickly she rose and flew away. Amula Man. p. 147.

جَو مُنِهَ مُومَلَ جِي پُوڙَ موٽَنَ تَنهينَ مَسَ تَهِي

The returning of him, who falls into the face of Mūmala, is effected with difficulty. Sh. Mūm. Rānō III, 5.

نَيْتَه پَاتِشَاهُ وَيَهِي وَيَهِي كَهْتُو تَهِي

At length the king, sitting (and) sitting, becomes dissatisfied. Amulu Mān. p. 143.

كَنْزُ قُدُورِي كَافِيَا جِي پَرَوَرِي سَبِه
جَن مَنَدِي مَآكَوَرِي كَهَوَه مِين پِيئي كَنهِي اُبِه

If thou having read the Kanz, the Qudūrī, the Kāfiā¹), understandest them all,

It is as if a lame ant, which has fallen into a well, contemplates the sky. Sh. Jam. Kal. V, 4.

جِيكْسِي وُسِي وَسِرِي اَنُورِن مَنَان مَعُشُورِن

Perhaps I have been forgotten from the mind of the beloved. Maj. 507.

پَاوَرَهَنَدِيئي پَدِهَرَا كَر كِهَلِن كَهْتَنَهَار

In smiling they (i. e. the teeth) are apparent, as if the sunflowers would laugh. Maj. 55.

بَهَلِي آئِن نِيچ آئِن

Thou art welcome, thou art welcome! Amulu Mān. p. 141.

II. Peculiar use of Adjectives.

The following adjectives may be either used as (indecl.) adverbs or they may agree with their subject in gender and number even in such constructions, where in English an adverb would be used.

1) Grammatical treatises in Arabic.

2) بَهَلِي is substantive, after which كَرِي karī is to be supplied; i. e. having made a favour thou art come = thou art welcome!

آڏو āḍō¹), opposite; in front.

اڻڻو ȧṇitōly, unexpected; unexpected; suddenly; by chance.

اڻڏو ṇḍō, }
اڻڏيرو ṇḍirō, dim, } near.

اڻيلو avēlō, out of time; late.

چَوڏھاري čaudhārī, round about.

ڏاڏھو ḍaḍhō, hard, intense; very much.

سَڃھڙو sājḥuru, early.

سامھڙو sāmuhō, in front.

سَوارو savārō, }
سَڀيرو savērō, } early; at an early hour.

سُڏھو sūdhō²), } accompanied by; along with (with
سَڻو saṇ, } the Instrumental).

مَھڻي مَھڻي mahanḍiyō, in front; before.

ڀڄھو vējhō, }
ڀڄھيرو vējhirō, dim, } near; close to.

In the same way the Adjectives, implying time or place, derived from adverbs by the affixes āhō or ārō are either used adverbially or they may agree with their subject in gender and number, as:

1) آڏو، اڻڏو، سامھڙو، ڀڄھو may be constructed with جي or ڪھي.

2) سُڏھو is probably derived from the Sansk. सार्द्धम्, with; سَڻو from मंहित, joined by.

اوراهون ōrahō, somewhat on this side; from اوري ore, on this side.

اگاهون agāhō, somewhat in front; from اگي agē, before, in front.

پوتاهون poētahō, a little behind; from پوتي poētē, in the rear.

متاهون mathāhō, somewhat higher up; from متي mathē, on; upon.

منجھارو manjhārō, } somewhat inside; from منجھ man-
منجھاهون manjhāhō, } jhe, in.

When used adverbially (which is commonly the case), they take also the fem. termination, as:

اگاہیں agāhī, in front; in advance.

متاہیں mathāhī, on the top; above.

The Adjectives, ending in āitō (§. 10, 20) may at the same time be used adverbially, as:

سُہائتو sūhāitō, suitable and suitably.

وَساتو vasāitō, optional and optionally.

etc.

etc.

etc.

The Adjectives of one ending, which are not inflected, may all be used as adverbs; as:

برابر barābare, right and rightly.

جَارَ jara, }
جَالَ jala, } much; very.

جلدُ jaldu, quick and quickly.

سوڈیتُ sōḍitu, true and truly.

عَبَثُ abathu, vain and vainly.

etc.

etc.

etc.

اوجتوئي کٽي هڪڙي اُن بهانڊي جي بهر مين ٻر کٽو

By chance one mouse made a hole in the vicinity of that garner. Sindhī Read. Book, p. 54.

سينن ساجهر لڏڻو ٿو هاري نهارين آڃ

(Thy) friends have departed early, look thou, o lost one! to-day. Sh. Sam. II, Epil. 2.

تڏهين جر هاري جال ڪهنو روئي ماء ورئاس

Then his mother, having shed tears (and) having wept very much, returned. Maj. 99.

تڏهين آهي آڳاڙهي ڪهنو ڪا مصرن مروت

Then there is some very ancient generosity of the Egyptians. Maj. 135.

لايو لام آلف سين خرب لڪهن خط

Joining the Lām with the Alif they write nicely letters. Maj. 144.

جي پنڊ ٻارڻئون تڏ سڪهائي سڪها تهئا

If they had performed the advice, they would have quickly become whole. Sh. Jam. Kal. II, 2.

لڪهن لکن ڪوسيون ڏاڏها ٿين ڏينھ

Hot winds blow, the days are excessively hot. Sh. Dēsi III, Epil.

هن سان رڳيون ڪالهون آهن

With him there are only words. Amulu Mān. p. 150.

چوڏهاري چڙا تهئا ٻرن ٻيلائن جا

Round about sound the bells of the woodmen. Sh. Suh. IV, 2.

اَكْهَنُونِ اَكْهِنِ سَامْهِنُونِ ذِيْنَهْ سَجْوَتِي رَاتِ

The eyes are opposite to the eyes the whole day (and) night. Maj. 219.

سُتْنَن سَوَارِي دِيژِهِي مُنْهْ مُنِّي جَان

Thou hadst fallen asleep early, having wrapt up (thy) face like the dead ones. Sh. Kāh. I, 11.

مُون كَهِي دَ مَوْتَاءَ اَنُونِ اَكَاهِينِ اَنِيَانِ

Do not turn me back; I am ahead. Sh. Sōr IV, 12.

III. Substantives used adverbially in the uninflected state.

A number of substantives are at the same time also used as adverbs, as:

اَوِيرَ avēra, } out of time, late; subst. f. اَوِيرَ avēra,
اَوِيلَ avēla, } delay.

بُحْهَانِ bučhā, unpleasingly; subst. f. بُحْهَانِ bučhā, disgust.

تَارِيخَ tāriḫa, daily; subst. f. تَارِيخَ tāriḫa, a date.

جُورُ jōru, } forcibly; very; subst. m. جُورُ jōru, force.
زُورُ zōru, }

دِيْهَارِي dīhārī, daily; subst. f. دِيْهَارِي dīhārī, day.

سُبْهَانِ subahā, to-morrow; subst. f. سُبْهَانِ subahā, the morrow.

سَوِيرَ savēra, early; subst. f. سَوِيرَ savēra, the early hour of day.

تَدْهِيْنِ سُنْهَنْدِيُونِ جُوْ اَوِيْلَ سُوْ اَتِيْثِي سِجْ اَبْهَرِي دِيْنْدَنَ

Then, because they will sleep out of time, therefore the sun will even there rise to them. Amulu Mān., p. 145.

حُبُّ مَنْهَنْ حَوْ عَجَنُو بُجْهَانَ سُو بِمَرَارُ

My lover Majnō is sorely displeased. Maj. 294.

دِينْهَانِي جَهَجْهَوُ بَهَانَكُو اَنْ مَانَ سَنَكْتِيْنَ كَانِ خَرْجِيَانِشِيْنَ

تھی

Daily it (the mouse) used to spend a great portion from it for the sake of the companions. Sindhī Read. Book, p. 55.

IV. Substantives and Adjectives used adverbially in the inflected state.

1) Substantives.

اَگَہِي agāhī (instead of agēhī), before, Locat. with emphatic hī, from اَکُو agū, the front.

اَگَی agē, before; Loc. from اَکُو agō, the forepart.

اَنْدَرِ andare, inside; within; Loc. from اَنْدَرُ andarū, the inside.

اَنْدَرَانِ andarā, } from within; Abl. from اَنْدَرُ andarū,
اَنْدَرُونِ andarō, }

اَنَنْدَ ananda, well; in good health; Instrum. from
اَنَنْدُ anandu, happiness.

اَوْرَکِ ōrake, at last; Loc. from اَوْرَکُ ōraku, the end.

بَاهَرِ bāhare, outside, Loc. } from بَاهَرُ bā-
بَاهَرَانِ bāharā, from the outside, Abl. } haru, the
outside.

پَارِ pāre, on the opposite }
side, Loc. } from پَارُ pāru, the
پَارَانِ pārā, from the opposite } opposite side.
side, Abl. }

پاسی pāsē, on the side; near; Loc. from پاسو pāsō, the side.

پُتھان putheā, behind; from the back; Abl. from پُتھ puthe, the back.

پوءِ pōe, after; Loc.

پُٺان puā¹), } from behind; } from پوءِ pou, the
پُٺون puō, } after; Abl. } latter part.

حقون haqqō, justly; Abl. from حَق haqqu, justice.

حُکمان hukumā, } violently; Abl. } from حُکْم huku-
حُکمن hukumane, } by force; Instr. } mu, command.

خوشتون xušeō, willingly, Abl. from خوش xuše, pleasure.

دِلتون dileō, willingly; Loc. from دِل dile, heart.

زور zōre, forcibly; Loc. from زورُ zōru, force.

مَای māge,

مَاکھین māgahī, emph. } at all; completely; Loc. from
مَای māgu, place.

مَتھی mathē, on the top; Loc. } from مَتھو mathō,

مَتھان mathā, from upon; Abl. } the head.

مُور mūre,

مُورھین mūrahī, emph. } at all; Loc. } from مُورُ mūru,
مُورانی mūrā-ī, emph. } completely; Abl. } capital.

مَہند mahande, in the beginning;
before; Loc.

مَہندان mahandā; from the beginning;
before; Abl. } from مَہند mahandu, be-
ginning.

1) پُٺان puā etc. instead of پُٺان pōā.

نِهِيحِي nihicē, certainly; Instrum. from نِهِيحُو nihicō, certainty.

وِج viče, in the midst; Loc. from وِجُ viču, the midst.

هَدِهِيْن haḍehī, emph. } at all; Loc. from هَدُ haḍu,
هَدِ haḍe¹), } the core.

هَيْتِه hēṭhe, below; Loc. } from هَيْتُه hēṭhu,
هَيْتِهْ hēṭhā, from below; Abl. } the bottom.

اَنْدَرِ اَدِسِيْن كِهِي دِهْرَانِي دِهِي

Inside is to the Ādēsīs (Jōgīs) the Lord personally.
Sh. Rāmak. II, 6.

بَاهَرِ بُولِي بِي پَهْرِي كِهَت مِيْن كِهَائِل كِهَوَر

Outside another speech is used; in the heart there is a wounded fierce look. Sh. Rāmak. III, 2.

بِتَو دَ مَنَكِي مُوَرِ اَمَلِ دِثَو اِن كِهِي

Nothing else at all he asks; give the invaluable (thing) to this one. Sh. Sōr. I, 8.

مَهَنْدِ تِهِيَنْدَوِ مُصْطَقِي پُتِهِي لَوَكُ لَدِيَنْدَوِ

In front will be Mustafa; in the rear the world will march. Sh. Barvō Sindhī II, Epil. 2.

2) Adjectives.

اَغِيَاْ agiyā, before; Abl. from اَغِيَاْ agiyō, first; prior.

اَنْتِ anante, exceedingly; Loc. from اَنْتُ anantu, endless.

¹ مَآيِ and هَدِ signify in a negative sentence, 'by no means'.

اُڙي ōrē, on this side; near; Loc. } from اُڙيُو ōriyō, of
 اُڙيَان oriyā, from this side; this side; near.
 near; Abl. }

اَوَس avase, helplessly; Loc. from اَوَسُ avasu, helpless.

بَهَلِي bhalē, well; Loc. from بَهَلُو bhalō, good.

بِيڏُوھ beḍōhe, faultlessly; Loc. from بِيڏُوھ beḍōhu, faultless.

پَرِي parē, far off; Loc. } from پَرُ paru, re-
 پَرِيَان pareā, from a distance; mote, distant.
 beyond; Abl. fem. }

پَهَرِي peherē, at first; Loc. } from پَهَرُون pe-
 پَهَرِيَان peherā-ī, from the first; Abl. } herō, the first.
 چَنڪِيَان čaniā, well; in a good manner; Abl. fem. from
 چَنڪُو čanō, good.

دِهيري dhirē, gently; Loc. from دِهيرو dhīrō, gentle.

ڏاڏهيَان ḍāḍhiā, violently; Abl. fem. from ڏاڏهو ḍā-
 ḍhō, violent.

سَابهيَان sabheā, effectually; Ablat. from سَابِه sābhe, effectual.

سَامُهَنِي sāmhuṇē, in front; Loc. from سَامُهَنُو sāmhuṇō, of the front.

سَوِيرِي savērē, early; Loc. from. سَوِيرُو savērō, early.

مَتِهِيَان maṭhiā, disgustingly; Abl. fem. from مَتِهُو ma-
 ṭhō, bad.

هَوَرِي haure or هَوَرِي hōre, gently; Loc. } from هَوَرُو
 هَوَرِيَان hauriā; Abl. fem. } haurō, gentle.

پيڙ پري ڏيئي آڇن سان عجيب ڇي

The pain went far off with the coming of (my) friend. Sh. Jan. Kal. II, 10.

اوهين ڪهنو متهيان بهائيندو

You will feel very disgusted. Sindhi Read. Book, p. 51.

رات تي ٻيھي ڏاڏهيان ٿري هوکا گري ڇو

Standing on the road give forcibly three cries and say. Ibid. p. 66.

V. Adverbs derived from the Pronominal bases.

From the pronominal bases a number of adverbs is derived by means of certain affixes, which coalesce with the pronominal base. We exhibit them in the following survey.

Pron. base.	Manner.	Place.	Direction.	Time.
i, ī, ē hē.	اينِي īa ¹⁾	اِت ite ²⁾	ايڏِي ēḍē ³⁾	ايسين ē-sī ⁴⁾
	هينِي hīa	هتِ hete	هيڏِي hēḍē	هيسين hē-sī
	اينِ iē	here.	in this direction.	up to this time (or place).
	in this wise.			

1) Or short: اِنِي īa, هِنِي hīa; اُنِي ūa, ڄِنِي jīa etc.

2) Or اِنِي ite, هِنِي hete; also اِتهِي ithe; اُنِي ute etc.

3) There are many other forms of this adverb, as: ايڏهن ēḍahā, ايڏهن ēḍahū, هيڏهن hēḍahā etc.; see Stack's Sindhi Dictionary under the different forms.

4) Or ايسينِي ēsia, ايسِنِي e-sīa etc. This set of adverbs is generally compounded with the postpositions تائين tā-ī, تڙين tō-ī or ٿوڻي tōṇī, as: ايسينَتائين ēsitāī etc., or shortened: ايسَتائين es-tāī etc.

Pron. base.	Manner.	Place.	Direction.	Time.
u, ū, ō, hō.	اُونِي ūa	اُت u-te	اُوڏِي ō-dē	اوسين ō-sī
	هُرَنِي hūa	هُت hu-te	هُوڏِي hō-dē	هُوسين hō-sī
	اُئين uē	there.	in that direction.	up to that time.
	هُئين huē			
	in that wise.			

jō	جِينِي jīa	جِت ¹ ji-te	جِيڏِي jē-dē	جِيسين ² je-sī	جڏهين jaḍe-hī
	جِئين jī-ē.	جِت ja-te		جَاسين ja-sī	جَان ja
	in which wise.	where.	in which direction.	as long as.	when.

sō	تِينِي tī-a	تِت ti-te	تِيڏِي tē-dē	تِيسين tē-sī	تڏهين taḍe-hī
	تِئين ti-ē	تِت ta-te		تَاسين tā-sī	تَان tā
	in that wise.	there.	in that direction.	so long.	then.

1) Or جِتي ji-te; جَتي ja-te, جِته ji-the, جِتهي ji-the.

There is also a lengthened form جَاتِي jā-te, جَاتهي jā-the. All these forms may equally be used with the Correlative ti (as ti-te etc.) and ki.

2) Instead of the postfix سين sī, the postfixes تَائِين tāī, تَوَّيْن tōī, تَوَّي تَوَّي tōī, may also be joined to جِي je and تِي tē, as: جِيَتَائِين je-tāī, تِيَتَائِين tē-tāī etc.

kō	كَيْنِي kī-a	كِت ki-te	كِبْدِي kēdē	كِسِين kē-sī	كَدْهِين kaḍe-hī
	كِثِين ki-ē	كِت ka-te		كَسِين kā-sī	
in what wise?		where?	in what direction?	how long.	when?

Some of these adverbs are again compounded with adverbial postfixes (and partly prefixes): as: جَانِكِي jā-kī or جَانِكِيَتَان jā-kī-tā, so long as; جَدِّهَاكُو jaḍeh-ā-kō, جَدِّهَاكُو جَدِّهَاكُر jaḍeh-ō-kō, جَدِّهَاكُر jaḍeh-ā-kura (ā-kara), from such a time as, since. تَائِكِي tā-kī or تَائِكِيَتَان tā-kī-tā, as long as; تَدِّهَاكُو taḍeh-ākō, تَدِّهَاكُو تَدِّهَاكُو taḍeh-ō-kō, تَدِّهَاكُر taḍeh-ā-kura, from that time; كَدِّهَاكُو kaḍeh-ā-kō¹) etc., from what time? اَيْدْتَاهِين ēd-tē, اَيْدْتَاهِين اَيْدْتَاهِين ēd-tāī or اَيْدْتَاهِين ēd-tāhī, a little in this direction; جِيكَدْهِين jē-kaḍehē if (at any time).

The adverbs implying 'place' and 'direction' may also be put in the Ablative, as: اِتَان it-ā, اِتَانُون it-āhū, اِتَانُون it-āhū, from this place, hence; اِتَانُون ut-ā, اِتَانُون ut-ū, اِتَانُون ut-āhū, from that place,

1) The forms: جَدِّهَاكُو jaḍeh-ā-kō etc. are properly double compounds viz.: جَدِّهَان jaḍeh-ā, the Ablative and كُو kō or كُون kū, a postposition (identical with كُهُون khū) 'from'. In the same way جَدِّهَاكُر jaḍeh-ā-kara is compounded from جَدِّهَان jaḍeh-ā (Abl.) and كُر kara (or kura) postposition, up to, literally: from which time up.

thence; تَتَان tit-ā, تَتُون tit-ū, تَتَانُون tit-āū, from that place; كِتَهَان kith-ā, كِتَهُون kith-ū, كِتَهَاهُون kith-āhū etc. from what place, whence? اِيْدَان ēd-ā, اِيْدَانُون ēd-āū, اِيْدَاهُون ēd-āhū, اِيْدَاهُون ēd-āhū etc. from this direction.

The emphatic ī (ī̄) or hī (hē) very frequently accedes to these adverbs, as: اِيْئِي iē-ī, in this very wise; اِيْئِي ita-ī or اِيْئِي ita-hī¹), even here; اِيْئِي itā-ī, اِيْئِي it-ā-hī, even hence; اِيْدِي ēda-ī, اِيْدِي ēda-hī, in this very direction; اِيْدَانِي ēd-ā-ī, from this very direction etc.

مُون اَكِهْمُون تَن تَت جِتِي جَنَبُ جِيْئِي

The eyes of my body are there, where the side (country) of my companions is. Sh. Um. Mār. I, 12.

كَالِهَوَكُو كَاْذِي وَتُو سَنْدُو جُوْكِن جُوْشُ

Where is gone to the Jōgīs' emotion of yesterday? Sh. Ramak. I, 30.

اَتَان اَوْتُوِي اَيُّو خَبَرِ اِيْئِي كَهْرِي

Thence a camelman has come; this information is correct. Sh. Um. Mār. II, 6.

جِنِي تُون كَهْرِي تِيْئِي تَهِيْئِي

As thou wilt, even so it shall be unto thee. Matth. 15, 28.

1) The final ē o these adverbs is changed to 'a' before the emphatic ī, for the sake of euphony; but ē keeps its place also, as: اِيْئِي utē-ī, in that very place.

آئون تهو ڀڄهان ڪهڙهيا ڪيسئن قصد ڪٿو

ٿان چي ڪهارٿان مڪي شهر مين هيسئن قصد هوم

I ask, o gallant young man! how far did your purpose go?

Then he says: I dwell in the city of Mekka, my purpose went up to this place. Maj. 168, 169.

چيستائين هو سنبهرن تيستائين چڙهي ويهڻ

As long as they get ready, ascend thou and sit down. Amulu Mān. p. 144.

جتن سان جائون سرڻيون مون سنڱ تهڻو

ڪري ڪوهيارو وٽو تن جهني ٿانڪون

آئون پڻ تڏانڪون اده ڏڪهڙي آنيان

Since I entered into connexion with the Jats, o companions!

The mountaineer is gone off, having torn (my) body;

I am also from that time (only) half (and) afflicted. Sh. Dēśī, Čhāt. 6.

VI. Compound adverbs.

The Sindhī uses a considerable number of compound adverbs¹⁾, which are formed either by reduplicating the adverb (or noun), or adding a similar adverb (or noun), or by adding an adverbial affix or postposition.

1) Such compound adverbs may be written in one word or separately. When joined by a conjunctive vowel it is usual to join them also in writing.

1) Reduplicated adverbs,

(with or without a conjunctive vowel; cf. §. 12, II, 2).

بھیری بھیری bhērē bhērē, constantly.

پلِ پلِ pale pale, every moment.

دِیْنُھُ دِیْنُھُ dēhu dēhu, day by day.

راتِ راتِ rateōrate, night by night.

سراسر sarāsare, entirely.

گھڑی گھڑی gharī gharī, constantly (hour by hour).

نیتھانیتھ nēthānēthe, at last.

ورہوورہ varehōvarihe, year by year.

ہر ہر hara hara, constantly.

ہندھوہندھ handhōhandhe, place upon place.

etc.

etc.

etc.

2) Adverbs compounded with a similar adverb
or noun.

اُج سُبَہَں aju subahā, in a day or two.

جَدِہِیں تَدِہِیں jādehī taḍehī, constantly.

جِیئ تِیئ jiē tiē, in any way.

راتِ دِیْنُھُ ratoḍīha, night and day.

کَدِہِیں کَدَانِہِ kadēhē kadānē, now and then.

ہِیْٹھ مَٹھِی hēthe mathē, down and up (up and
down).

etc.

etc.

etc.

3) Adverbs compounded with an adverbial postfix or postposition.

اَگَبَرُو āga-bharō, a little in front; a little ago.

اَگَتِي āge-tē, in front; in future.

پوٽتاهون poë-tahō, a little in the rear.

پوٽتِي poë-tē, behind.

رَاتَاڪَر رāt-ā-kara, since night (lit. from night up).

ڪَالهَآڪُون kālhā-kū, since yesterday.

Compare also the compound adverbs of §. 58.

ذِكْهَ نَ سَارِيں ذِيَل مِيں وِيراوِيَرِ وَهَسَنَ

They remember no pains in the body, constantly they are happy. Maj. 801.

هِيڪَرِي سَبَهِيٽِي هَدَ هَندهُ هَندهُ گَندهِي مَنَدَرُ پَرَهِي

جَهتُو هَنتُو

One, having joined all bones, place upon place, having read an incantation, besprinkled them. Sindhī Read. Book, p. 53.

Chapter XIX.

POSTPOSITIONS.

§. 58.

The Sindhī has no prepositions, but only postpositions, as all adverbs or particles, which influence in any way the noun, are placed after the noun and not before it. Only رِي rē, رِي ria may be optionally used as preposition or postposition.¹⁾

¹⁾ In poetry the postpositions are frequently turned into prepositions, if required by the metre.



There is only a small number of original postpositions in Sindhi, which require the noun in the Formative; far the greatest part of the postpositions now in use are originally adverbs (i. e. substantives and adjectives used adverbially; cf. §. 57, II. III. IV.), which either retain their original adverbial signification and are consequently constructed with جي *jē*, or which are already treated as postpositions and require the Formative of the noun governed by them; the greater part of them may therefore be constructed with or without جي *jē*, and be put before or after the noun, they govern.

I. Postpositions proper, requiring the Formative of the noun governed by them.

بهر *bhara*, } on, with such a part downward; against;
 بهر *bhare*, } supported from. Sansk. भर, adj.¹⁾

پر *pare*, on, upon; Sansk. उपरि.

تائين *tāi*, } up to, till; Sansk. स्थाने; Hindūst. तै. *taī*.
 تويين *tōi*, }

توڙي *tōri*²⁾, } up to; till.
 توڻي *tōnī*, }

1) بهر *bhar* has already in Hindūstāni a signification bordering on that of a postposition. In Sindhi the substantive بهر *bharu*, prop. support, is also in use, of which بهر *bhare* is the Locative.

2) Apparently derived from توڙ *tōru*, the end; توڙي *tōri*, = توڙي *tōre-i*, emphatic Locative.

تي $tē^1$), on, upon; Sansk. **उत्**.

تَان $tā$,
تُون $tō$, } from-upon; from; upon (for the sake of).

جَان $jā$,
جِنِي $jīa$,
جِينِي $jīa$,
جِيْن $jīē$, } like, as; Sansk. **यथा**.

دَان $dā^1$),
دَاهُ $dāha$,
دِي $dē$, } towards; in the direction of.

دَاهَان $dahā$,
دَاهُون $dahū$,
دَاهُون $dāhū$, } from the direction of; towards²);
Abl. form.

رِي $rē$,
رِي ria , } without; Sansk. **अन्ते**.

سَارُو $sārū$, according to; conformable to; Sanskrit
सारतम्, Prāk. **सारदो** or **सारओ**.

1) Instead of $tē$, $tā$ etc. the Panjābi forms $utē$ and $utā$ are also occasionally used in Sindhi.

2) The forms $dāhā$, $dāhū$ are also in use; emphatic:
 $dāhī$.

3) The Ablative forms $dāhā$ etc. are generally used in the sense of the Locative.

سَان sã,	} with; Sansk. सम्.
سَان sãnu,	
سِين sē,	
سِين sēnu,	

سُودھَان sūdhā, along with; Sansk. सार्धम्.

سِينَى sīa, up to; till; Sansk. सीमा; Panjābī: sī.

کَر kara, up to.

کِن kane ¹⁾ ,	} to; near to; Sansk. कर्ण, edge (of a vessel); Sindhī کَنو, rim, border; Panjābī: kannī.
کَنِ kanē,	

کَنَان kanā ²⁾ ,	} from; Abl. form.
کَنُون kanō,	

کَہِ khē, to; as regards; in reference to; Sansk. कृते.

کَہَان khā,	} from; Abl. form.
کَہُون khō,	
کَہُون khaū,	

گَر gare, to; with (Lār).

کَہَا ghā,	} like, as.
کَہَاء ghāe,	

لَاکُون lākū, from-up; Panjābī: lāgō (Sansk. लग).

مَنجَہ manjhe, in; to (with verbs implying motion);

Sansk. मध्ये.

1) Instead of کَنِ kanē, گَنِ gānē is used in Lār; similarly گَنَان gānā, گَنُون gānō, instead of کَنَان kanā and کَنُون kanō.

2) Frequently written without the final nasal, i. e. کَنā kanā.

مَنْجَهَانِ manjhā, from—in; out of; Abl. form.

مِینِ mē, in; to (with verbs implying motion); Sansk.

मध्ये; Hindūst. مِینِ.

مان mā, } from—in; out of; Abl. form.
مُونِ mō, }

وَتِ vate, near to; with; in exchange of; Sansk.

root वद; Sindhī subst. وَتِ.

وَتَانِ vata, from—near; from; away from; Abl. form.

شَاهُ صَاحِبُ هِڪَڙِي ڏُونِڪَرِ مِينِ وَڃِي ڇَهَ مَهِينَا هِڪَڙِي

پَاسِي بَهَرِ سُهَڻُو پِڻُو هُو

Shah Sāhib, having gone to one mountain, was fallen asleep on one side (lying on one side) for six months. Life of Abd-ul-Latīf, p. 39.

خُداَ جَا ڪُهَنا شُڪَرِاڻا ڪَري ڪَهَتَ تان هِيتَ لَهي پَنَهَن

جي ڪَهِرِي مِينِ وَڃِي وِيتَهِو

Having offered many thanks to God (and) having descended from his couch he went to his court and sat down. Abd-ul-Latīf's life, p. 30.

اَبَا ڪَهَڙِي وَڄَانِ خُداَ جي نَانُو تُون

O father, I sacrifice (myself) upon the name of God, i. e. for God's sake. Amulu Mān., p. 41.

ڪَهَڙِيُون ڪَهَنَنهَارَ جِينِي وَڄُون اُتَرِ وَا

The lightnings glittered in the north like a sun-flower. Sh. Sār. II, 1.

ڪَريُو مُنَهَرِ مَلِيرِ ڏِي رُڻِي اُبيهي ڇُو

Having directed her face towards the Malīr she weeps; having stood up she says. Sh. Um. Mār. III, 8.

پَانِ پَچَن مِيوَا رِي وَاهِپَ رِي وَآڙَ

By themselves the fruits ripen without guarding, without a fence. Sh. Um. Mār. III, 14.

وَرِ پُنَهَرُ سِينِ پَلُڪُ ڪُهه بَارَهَنَ مَاهَ بِنِ سِينِ

Return with Punhū a moment! away with twelve months with others! Sh. Maṣḍ. VI, 6.

مَاڙِي لُڪِم مِينَهَنو سَبَهَ جَمَانَدَرِ سِينِي

In the upper rooms reproach has been my lot all (my) life long. Sh. Um. Mār. V, 1.

تَدِهِنَ ڇَهَا ڏِسَن تَهَ ڏُنڪُ ڌارَرُ جُو بَهَرِيڏُ ڪَننِ ڪَرِ

دَهَرِيو آهي

Then what do they see? that a vessel of wine, filled up to the rims is placed there. Sindhī Read. Book, p. 68.

مِيڙِئَانِ سَانڌَهِيَّانِ مَالِ ڪِهِي ڪَنهن ڪَننِ ڪِي نَهَ ڏِئَانِ

I will collect and guard property and not give any thing to any one. Golden Alphab. X, 7.

مِڪَنهي آيسِ مِڪَالَهَرِي مِڪَجِهِي تَو مِڪَرِي

I am come having taken a matter hidden to thee. Sh. Sōr. II, 18.

ڪَنهن جي ڪَهَرِ مَنجِهَ وَڃِي اُنَ جي ڪَهِنَ مان ڪِي

چَوَرَاڻِي ڪَهَادَهَانِئِنِ

Having gone to the house of somebody (and) having stolen from his food it (i. e. the mouse) ate it. Sindhī Read. Book, p. 62.

ماءَ وَتَانِ ڪَهي مَڃِي ڪوڙهي تَنهن ڇيو

Having called Majnō from the side of his mother he said. Maj. 49.

The following postpositions (mostly of foreign origin) may be optionally constructed with جي jē.

ٻاجهَان bājha, }
 ٻاجهُون bājhu, } without (Panjābī).
 ٻاجهون bājho, }

بِڪِ bīkī, without; except (Panjābī).

بِنَا binā, without; except (Hindūst.)

سِوَاءِ sivāe, without; except (Arab. Pers.)

ڪَرِ kare, } by means of; by; on account of; Sansk.
 ڪَري karē, } ॐ.

لاءِ lāe, } for the sake of; on account of; Pānjābī
 لَئي laē, } laī; Hindūst. لِيِ liyē.

تَانِ سُرڙهَ بهانِيَا سِيلَهَ ڏيڪهن ٻاجهون دوسَ جي

Then they (i. e. the flowers) were considered by the hero as thorns without the sight of the friend. Ajāib, V, 20.

سوڙهي بڪِ سَرُئيون هَڏِ نَ ساھَ سَري

Without the Sōdhō, o companions! there is no getting on with life; i. e. I cannot live. Sh. Mūm. Rānō I, 8.

بِنَا بهِڃَن بهِڪَوانَ جي تَنهن جو هاريَا ڪو نَ حَالِ

Except the adoration of the Lord thou hast no business, o lost one. Mēnghō 12.

پَرَ كَهَرَان پَاسُو گري ٻُڄھ پريانَ گرِ پاڻُ
 سوئي تان توڙي سانَ جنهن لئي جڳائون گري

Having turned the back to other houses ask on account of thy friend thy own self;
 He is even with thee, for whose sake thou causest (thyself) troubles. Sh. Ābirī III, 5.

لڙجين جھڙو لطيف چي هاري لئي هوتن

Why searchest thou not, says Latif, for (the sake of) thy sweetheart, o lost one! Sh. Kōh. I, 10.

II. Adverbial postpositions (derived from substantives or adjectives), which are optionally constructed with or without جي jē, or which require another postposition.

اُبتَرُ ubatare (mostly with جي), contrary to.
 آڏو āḍō¹), in front.

اڳي agē²),
 اڳيون agiō, } before; in front.

اَندَرِ andare, within.

اَندَرانَ andarā, from within.

اوڏو ōḍō,
 اوڏرو ōḍirō, Dim. } near to.

1) آڏو āḍō, اوڏو ōḍō ۽ ڀڄھو vejhō may also be constructed with کهي khe.

2) اڳي agē and ڀڄھو are more frequently constructed with the postposition کهي or the Ablative, than with جي.

اُورِي ōrē, on this side.

اُورِيَّان ōriā, from this side.

بَاهِرِ bāhare, outside.

بَاهِرَان bāharā, from without.

بَدِيرِ badire, }
بَدِيرَان badirā, } in lieu of; instead of.

پَارِ pāre, on the opposite side; across.

پَارَان pārā, }
پَارُون pārō, } from the opposite side; on the part of.

پَاسِ pāsē, on the side of; near to.

پَتَانْدَرِ patāndare, according to (mostly without جِي).

پُتْهِئَان puṭhiā, on the back of; after.

پَرِپُتْهِ پَرِپُتْهِ parapuṭhe, behind one's back.

پَرِ parē, beyond; far from.

پُنْجَانُو puñānō, }
پُنْجَانَان puñānā, } after; subsequent to.

پُوہ pōe, after (always constructed with کِهَان or the Ablative).

پُئَان puā, on the back of; behind.

خَاطِرِ xātire, on account of (Arab.).

چَوْدھَارِ čaudhārī, round about.

چَوگرد čaugirde, around (Pers.).

دَهَارَان dhārā, { without; apart; round about (also
 دَهَارِين dhārē, { constr. with كَهَان or the Abl.).

دَهَار dhāra (always with جي) on, upon (on the prop of).

رُوبَرُ rūbarū, in the presence of (Pers.).

سَامْهُون sāmho¹), {
 سَامْهُنُو sāmhunō, { in front; before; over against.
 سَامْهُنِي sāmhunē, {

سَانْگِي sāngē, {
 سَانْگَان sāngā, { on account of.

سِر sire, on, upon; on the top of.

عِوَضِ 'ivaze, in lieu of (Arab.).

كَارَن kārane, on account of; for reason of.

كَان kāne, {
 كَانِي kānē, { for the sake of.

لَگ لāgē, { on account of; as concerns (mostly
 لَگِي lāgē, { without جي).

مَتْهِي mathē, upon.

مَتْهَان mathā, from upon.

مَنْجَهَارَان manjhārā, {
 مَنْجَهَارُون manjhārō, { from — within; out of.

1) Or سَامْهُون sāmuhō, سَامْهُون sāmuhū.

مُقَابِلِ muqābile; over against; opposite to (Arab.).

مُوجِبِ mūjibe; according to; conformably to (Arab.).

مَهَنْدِ mahande, }
مَهَنْدَانِ mahandā, } in front; before.

وَاسْطِي vastē, on account of (Arab.).

وَانْگُرُ vānguru, }
وَانْگِي vāngē, } like to; as (mostly without جي).
وَانْگِيَانِ vāngiā, }

وِچِ vīche, in the midst of.

وِڪِهِي vighē¹), by reason of; by.

وِيتَرِ vêtare, besides (mostly with جي).

وِجھو vējhō, }
وِجھرو vējhirō, Dim. } near to.

هِيٿَ heṭhe, below.

هِيٿَآنِ heṭhā, from below.

شَاهَ صَاحِبَ جِي اَکِيُونِ مُجَرُو بَهَرِي عَرَضُ کَرِ

Having paid thy respects before Shāh Sāhib beg (of him). Life of Abd-ul Latīf, p. 34.

مَرَنَآنِ اَکِي جِي مَآ سِي مَرِي تَهَنِ نَ مَاتِ

Those who have died before dying become not extinct when having died. Sh. Ma'ṣ. IV, 7.

1) وِڪِهِي vighē, apparently shortened from وِڪِهِي vighine, Nom. وِڪِهِي obstacle, Sansk. विम, is used only when speaking of some disability or distress.

هِنَ پَهَاڪِي جَوُ ڪُنُ اِهُو آهي تَهَ آوَتِ پَتَانَدَرِ جَاوَتِ ڪَرُنُ

ڪهڙجي

The point of this proverb is this, that it is necessary, to make (one's) expenses according to the income. *Sindhī Read. Book*, p. 58.

تَهڙي ڪهڙي ڏينهن پَنجَانُو مَخْدُومُ صَاحِبُ وِصالِ ڪِئو

After few (or) many days *Maydūm Sāhib* died. *Abd-ul-Latīf's life*, p. 37.

هِنَ مَحَلَّ ڪِهَانِ پوءِ تُون مَنهن جِي ماءُ بهينِ آنيهن

After this time thou art my mother (and) sister. *Ibid.* p. 42.

وَتَهِي مَنهُ ڪِهڙ وَجَانِ وَطَنَ سَامُهُون

Whith what face shall I go to the presence of my country? *Sh. Um. Mār. V*, 5.

اُنَ هِنْدَه جِي مَتَهَانِ چَٽِي ڏِي پِيٽِي آهي

From the top of that place a piece has been cut out. *Life of Abd-ul-Latīf*, p. 45.

مَنهن جِي دهِي بُهوتَ وَڪهي ڏاڏهي پِيڙيل آهي

My daughter is grievously vexed by a demon. *Matth.* 15, 22.

شَاهُ جَمَالُ ڪهڙي تي چڙهيل ڪهتَ جِي ويجهو آجي

ڪهڙي تان لتهو

Shāh Jamāl, being mounted on a horse, having come near to the couch alighted from the horse. *Abd-ul-Latīf's life*, p. 7.

Chapter XX.

CONJUNCTIONS.

§. 59.

The conjunctions serve to express the relation, in which either the single words of a sentence or two or more sentences stand to one another. According to their signification the conjunctions may be divided into:

1) Copulative.

اَوّ	aū,	}	and
اَيّن	aī ¹),		
اَيْن	ē,		

بِ	bi,	}	also.
بِه	bhi,		
بِهِي	bhī,		
پِ	pi,		
پِن	piṇe,		
پُن	pune,		
پُنْ	punu,		

تِيّ — تِيّ tīa-tīa, as well-as.

سَو بِي جَدِّهِن وَثَو تِهْتَو تَدِّهِن مَرِي وَثَو

He also, after he was grown up, died. Abd-ul-Latif's life, p. 2.

1) Generally written, for the sake of abbreviation ء.

تَنهن ڪان ڪهنا بهيرا مارَ پڻ ڪهائين تها

Therefore they are often also beaten. Sindhī Read. Book, p. 50.

اٽ اُڪُنڌِي آنهِيان تِنِي آتنَ تِنِي ڏيهه

I am very longing as well for the spinning place as for the country. Sh. Um. Mār. II, 1.

2) Concessive.

تَ ta, } then (as apodosis in a conditional sentence
تان ta, } generally not translated).

تَ ta bi, } nevertheless; then also; even then.
تڏهين taḍehī bi, }

توڙي tōrē, }
توڻي tōnē, } although; notwithstanding.
جيتوڙي jētōrē¹), }
جيتوڻي jētōnē, }

جي jē, although; if.

تَنهن جي لڻڪڻ تون جي ڪپڙو لهڻو وڃي تَه جِجلو وِج
وانڪي تهڻو وڃي

If from her limbs the cloth is stripped, (then) a brilliancy like lightening is effected. Amulu Mān. p. 141.

نان چي مران نان مان لهان جي موٽان تَه ڪَر ميه

Then he says: (if) I die, I obtain honor; I if return, it is, to say so, a shame. Maḡ. 408.

1) Very often also written separately: جي توڙي

توڙي چڪين چاڪ تہ به آھ نہ سکن عام ڪهي

Though their wounds flow, nevertheless they divulge not (their) sighing to the vulgar. Sh. Kal. II, 23.

دل بهي ڏجي هڪ ڪهي توڙي سو سکن

The heart also shall be given to one, though hundreds covet (it). Sh. Barvō Sindhī III, 7.

تو سآ مجلس مٿ جي حاصل هويئي هزار جو

Change thou that company, although the profit of a thousand would accrue to thee. Sh. Ram. Kal. VIII, 25.

3) Adversative.

بِڪِ	bigire,	} but.
پَر	para,	
پَن	pana,	

توڙي	tōrē,	} either.
توڻي	tōnē,	

تہ توڙي — na ta, either — or.

جان jã, either; or.

جان — جان jã — jã, either — or.

ڪِ	ke,	} or.
ڪِي	kī,	

مڪِ magare, except; but.

تہ na ta, otherwise; else.

هَتَهَان	hathā,	} but rather; on the contrary (Panjābī).
هَتَهَانِين	hathā-ī, emphat.,	
هَتَهُون	hathō,	
هَتَهُونِين	hathō-ī, emphat.,	

تَوَزِي كَنْدِهِي كَنِ ۱) نَه تَه سَانِي وَجَن سِير مِين

Either they go to the bank or (they go) with them in the stream. Sh. Suh. VIII, 1.

مَارْهُونِ كِه كَنْدَنِ مُونِ دَرَاكَه تَهَا چِهَن جَان كَانْدِيرِي

مُونِ اَنجِيرَ

Do men pluck grapes from thorns or figs from a thistle? Matth. 7, 16.

كُوِي مَارْهُونِ بِنِ دِهَنِيَنِ جِي تَوَكْرِي كَرِي نَه تَهو سَكِهِي جُو
جَان هِكْرِي سَانِ دِيرُ رَكَهَنْدُو ۲ بِي سَانِ پَرِيَتِ كَنْدُو جَان
هِكْرِي جِي دَاوَنِ وَتَهَنْدُو ۳ بِي كِهِي كِي نَه لِيكِهِيَنْدُو

No man can do the service of two masters; for either he will keep enmity with the one and make friendship with the other; or he will seize the skirt of the one and not at all mind the other. Matth. 6, 24.

جُو اچِنُو هُو سُو تُونِي اَنهِيَنِ كِي بِي جِي وَاتِ دِسُونِ

Art thou he, who was coming, or shall we look out for another? Matth. 11, 3.

1) كَنِ kane is postposition and not the III pers. Plur. of the Present (كَنِ = كَرِيَنِ) as Stack supposed; see Stack's Gramm. p. 101, Note. The verse quoted there does not quite agree with the Risāl.

اَسَان ڪهي اُنهن پانهن سَان ڪو ڪم نه آهي مگر پنهن

جي دهني سَان ڪم اُنهن

We have no concern with those stones, but our concern is with their master. Life of Abd-ul-Latif, p. 20.

4) Causal and Final.¹⁾

تَ ta, that; in order that; also an expletive, in quoting the words of a person.

جَان jā,	{	that; so that; in order that; because; as.
جِي jīa,		
جِيڻ jiē,		
جِيڻ تَ jiē ta,		

جو jō, that, in order that; because.

جِيَلَن jēlā,	{	because; wherefore.
جِيَلَهَن jēlhā,		
جِيَلَاهِيَن jēlāhī,		
جِيَلَاهِيَن jēlahē,		

جِيَلَن - تِيَلَن jēlā - tēlā,	{	correlat. because-therefore.
جِيَلَن - تَ jēlā - ta,		

چها جو čhajō²⁾, because.

1) We have classed the causal and final conjunctions under one head, because many of them are used in the one or the other sense.

2) These compound conjunctions are commonly written separately, but by some they are also joined in one word.

چها جو literally: why? because etc.; of different kind are such expressions as: هِن لاءِ تَ for this sake, that = because.

چھا کان تہ	čha kāṇe ta,	} because.
چھا لاء تہ	čhā lāe ta,	
چھا لاء جو	čha lāe jō,	
چھو تہ	čhō tā,	
چھو جو	čhō jō,	

سو sō, therefore.

سو — جو jō-sō, correl. because — therefore.

سوکو	sōkō,	} because.
سوکو تہ	sōkō-ta,	
سوکوھ	sōkōhu,	
سوکوھ تہ	sōkōhu-ta,	

مہ ma, not, in a prohibitive sense (constructed with the Imperative or Potential).

متان	matā,	} be it not that; lest (constructed with the Potential).
جو متان	jō matā,	

مچھن	mačhaṇe,	} lest (constructed with the Potential).
مچھن	mačhaṇu,	
مچھن	mačhune,	
مچھن	mačhunu,	

ھیئ جوئ ناہی تہ چوری کری پوء دارون پئون

This is not becoming, that we, having committed a theft, drink wine after. Sindhī Read. Book, p. 69.

مینکھا منہ پائی اُتھی ڈور تہ لہین ڈیہ میں

O Mēnghō, having directed (thy) face and having risen seek, in order that thou mayst find (it) in the body. Mēnghō 23.

اُتھي ٻَلَبَ تَرَحِيدَ جِي جَان آئون ڪَريان ڪا

In order that I, having risen, may make some search for the unity. Maj. 9.

مَرڪين مَرڪين اِن مِين جِنِي مَآڙهُون چَوِي مِيَان

Thou boasted and smilest thereat, that people call the 'Miā'. Golden Alphab. X, 3.

ايئي دوسن جو دَسْتُورُ جِنِي چُهنا چُهَن کي نَ کي

This is the custom of the friends, that they do by no means pluck the plucked ones. Sh. Barvō Sindhī III, 9.

جي حَضَرَتَ هِٿين نَ ڪُهڙجي جو ڪهلي هَتَه هَن

Saying: your honour, it is not becoming thus, that laughing they shake hands. Maj. 348.

تِيڊان دَهَنِي دُهئا جيلان وِئا وَحَدَتَ ڪڍجي

Therefore they were chosen by the Lord, because they were mixed up in the Unity. Sh. Kal. I, 8.

چها لاءِ تَه سَڪهي پَلڪَ ڏُڪهي جَمَارَ ڪهان چَنڪي آهي

Because a joyful moment is better than a painful life. Sindhī Read. Book, p. 62.

نَهَتِئُو آسانِهن جو آهي چهُو تَه نالو وَڏو تِهيندو ۽ نانوُ نِڪَرندو

The advantage is on our side, because (our) name will become great and renown will come out of it. Ibid. p. 64.

نَڌِهين سُهَنديُون جو اَوِيڊ سَو اُتِيئي سِجِ اُبهري ويندن

Then, because they will sleep out of time, therefore the sun will rise to them in that very place. Amulu Mān. p. 143.

پاڻي ويهه مہ پلنگ تي مڇي سر مگانو

Do not sit upon a bedstead, having placed a string of cowries upon (thy) neck. Sh. Um. Mār. II, 2.

ڏور تان ڏور تان مہ لہان شال مہ ملان هوت

من اندر جا لوڻ مڇهن سا ماڻهي تهڻي

I seek, I seek, may I not find, please God, that I may not meet with (my) sweetheart, Lest the grief, that is within (my) heart, may be calmed down! Sh. Hus. VII, 3.

متان هرن ۽ گدھ جان پوءِ آزمان ڪرين

Be it not that thou repent of it after, like the deer and the donkey. Sindhi Read. Book, p. 68.

•• 5) Conditional.

جي jē,
جيڪر jēkara, } if.

جيڪڏهن jēkaḍehī, if (at any time).

جي ٽوپي دهرين ڪندھ تي تہ صوفي سالم تهڻي

If thou putttest a cap on thy neck, then become a sound Sūfi. Sh. Jam. Kal. V, 8.

اھڙا عاشق هئن جيڪر ٿئي سين توه

If there be such lovers, show kindness to them. Maj. 776.

جيڪڏهن رائج ڪندا سون تڏهن رائج جي سر تي دهنيس

جائي ليکھو ساري ڄمار جو وڻهندو

If we sing, then upon the melody of the song its master will awake (and) settle (with us) the account of the whole life. Sindhi Read. Book, p. 68.

6) Interrogative.

کِ ke, } interrogative expletive, generally not
کِي kī, } translated.

پَاتِشَاهَرَادِي اَسِيں كِي تُو كِهِي مَنَع تَهِيُون كَرِيُون

O princess, do we dissuade you? Amul. Mān. p. 145.

Chapter XXI.

INTERJECTIONS.

§. 60.

In treating of the Interjections we abstract form such nouns or phrases, as are or may be used in the sense of Interjections, e. g. مَاتِه māt̤he, silence! (s. f.), چَنکُو čanō, good! سَچ sač̤u, true! اَللّٰهُ اَعْلَمُ allāhu aʕlamu, God knows! (lit. God is wiser, scil. than I), and only adduce such particles, as have now become strictly interjectional.

Besides the Vocative signs, mentioned already in §. 16, 8, the following are the most common; they imply:

1) Assent.

آهہ āhe,	} yes.
آہی āe,	
آہیں āī,	
ہاں hā,	
ہاؤ hāō,	
ہو ha-u,	
ہو haō,	

بَلِي balē, }
 بَلَى balā, } yes! true; even so!

بَهَلَا bhalā, }
 بَهَلِي bhalī, } well; good!

جِيٺُ jīu¹), yes! (a respectful term of ascent.)

مَرُ maru, }
 وَرُ varu, } yea! indeed! well!

دِيَوَ تَوُ كِهِي چَوَنَدَا تَه تُون سَنَجَانْدِين تَه چِيَجَانِي هُو

The Dēvs will say to thee: wilt thou recognise her?
Then say: yes. *Amulu Mān.*, p. 150.

بَهَلَا اُهي شِيُون مُون كِهِي ٺِيكَهَارِ

Well, show me those things. *Ibid.* p. 147.

تُنْدِي مَتَهَاهِين كُهَتَاء بُوڏُ چَوَنِي جِيٺُ چَوُ

Abate too high acrimony; if they say to thee: bōḍu (pooh), say thou: jīu (very well). *Sh. Jam. Kal. VIII*, 22.

جَن كِهِي عِشْقُ اَللّٰه جَو مَرُ تَهَا سِي مَرَكَن

They, who have love to God, they, indeed, boast.
Maj. 778.

يَلَكَن تَه رَهِي دِل تَوُ رِي وَرُ مِيَان صَاحِبَ بَرُو چَا

My heart does not remain a moment without thee, truly! o Sir! o Lord! o Barōč! *Sh. Ābirī Chōṭ.* Epil. 2.

1) جِيٺُ jīu is apparently the Imperative of جِيٺَن jīanu, live!

2) Commendation.

اَلُو اَلُو alō alō, bravo! bravo!

چہابَسِ chābase,	}	bravo! (Pers.)
شَابَسِ šābase,		
عَشَقُ ʾašqu,	}	praise to! (Arab.)
عِشَقُ ʾišqu,		

وَاهُ vāhu, well done!

سَمِہَنِي چِتُو پِيلِي پَاتِشَاهُ اُہَا سَاکِي ھِيَتِرِن مَوْن کَدھِي
اَہِي شَابَسِ اُتھَسِ . اَيْن اَلُو اَلُو تھِي وِتُو

All said: friend, the prince has that very same drawn out from so many! praise be to him! and having got a bravo! bravo! he went away. *Amulu Mān*. p. 151.

عَشَقُ رَاہِ دِٹَاچَ کھِي جَنھِن سِرُ دِٹِي ڌِيکھَارِئُو

Praise to Rāe Dīācu, who has given (and) exhibited (his) head! *Story of Rāe Dīācu*, p. 17.

3) Astonishment.

لُو lō, look there! behold!

مَارِ māre,	}	wonderful! oh!
مَارِ بھِينِي mārebhīnī,		
مَارِ مَانجھَان māremānjhā,		

جِيڌِيُون اَنسُون تَا نَ چَوَنڊِي لُو ڏُکھُ ڏَوَرَاوُو سَجَنِين

Companions, I shall not say then: behold the pain and the reproach of (my) friends! *Sh. Suh. V, Epil. 1.*

4) Desire.

چَهَال čhāla ¹⁾ ,	{	would to God! please God! (Arab.)
شَال šāla,		
مَانَ māna,	{	would that!
مَنِ mana,		
اَللّٰهُ تُوْهَارَ allāhu tuhāra ²⁾ ,	{	God keep thee! good bye!
تُوْهَارِ ” ” tuhāre,		
تُوْهَارِ ” ” tōhāra,		

پَرچَنِ شَال پَرُوْهَارَ ڈھولِيَا مَارُو مُن سِين پَرچَنِ شَال پَرُوْهَارَ

Would to God, that the Paūhārs were reconciled, o darling Mārū! Would to God, that the Paūhārs were reconciled with me! Sh. Um. Mār. I, Epil.

کَنْدِهِي اچي سُرِين مَانَ بَرَبَرِ کَنِ

Would that (my) sweetheart having come to the shore, would make (= say) alas! alas! Sh. Suh. V, 20.

جَان اينْدَا قَا اَسَهو اِلَهِي تُوْهَارَ

When (we) shall come, depart! God protect thee! Maj. 437.

5) Uncertainty.

اچي اَللّٰهُ allāhu jē ³⁾ ,	{	God knows! perhaps!
اچي اَلَا alā jē,		

نِيْنَانَا niñānā, God knows!

1) Corrupted from the Arabic phrase:

اِنْ شَاءَ اَللّٰهُ if it please God.

2) Properly: اَللّٰهُ تُوْ اَهَارَ God be thy protection.

3) This is an elliptic phrase: if God (will or please).

6) Dissent.

خَيْرُ	ẖairu,	} not so exactly (a polite negation; Arab.)
خَيْرُني خَيْرُ	ẖairuī - ẖairu,	

نَ na, no.

آسان ڪا اڪي تنهن جي چوري ڪئي ڇي ڙيون نه آهن
چوري ڪا نه ڪئي

Have we before committed any theft on thee? She says: no, girls; ye have not committed any theft. Amulu Mān. p. 145.

7) Disapprobation and reproach.

اوه ōhe, ohō!

ٻوڏ bōḍu, pooh! fy! (a contemptuous reply.)

پهڻه phit̥he, hoot!

تھر thū, fy!

چھ	čhi,	} tush!
چھي	čhī,	

مانهين māhiyā, fy! hoot!

هڻ hū, tush! pish!

هٽه hēṭhe, down with! away with!

8) Grief and complaint.

آفسوس afsōsu, alas!

آه āha, alas!

آهā (āhā¹), alas! what a pity!

1) آهā āhā is at the same time also an interjection denoting pleasure, aha!

بَرَبَرِ barebare, alas! ah! woe!

حَيْفُ haifu, woe to! (Arab.)

كَهْوَزَا ghōrā ghōrā, alas! alas! o misery!

وَإِيلَا vāvelā, alas! lackaday! (Arab. Pers.)

وَا vāe,	}	also! woe!
وَو vō,		
وِي vē,		

هَا hā,	}	alas!
هَاء hāe,		
هَيْ هَيْ ha-e ¹),		
هَيْ haē,		

هُوِي huē,	}	ah! alas!
هُوِي hōē,		
هُي huē,		

هَيْهَات haihāte, alas!

جَيْفُ مَنْهَنْ جِي حَالِ كَهِي جَانِ بُجْهِي أَنْوَنِ بِيكَارِ

Woe to my state, that I am wicked (and) useless!
Maj. 756.

كَهْوَزَا كَهْوَزَا كَرُنْ أَنْهِي كَمِ مِينِ جَنْهِنِ جُو بِلُو تَهْنُو

نَاهِي ذَاهَبَ جِي رِيَتِ نَاهِي

To make, alas! alas! in such a business, for which
a remedy is impossible, is not the custom of wisdom.
Sindhī Read. Book, p. 56.

1) Contracted also هِي hē.

وؤ بهينَرُ آنْشُونِ جَنْدِيسِ تَا نَ جَتَنِ رِي

Woe! sisters! I shall not live then without the Jat!
(Plur.) Sh. Dēsi VII, Epil. 2.

هَيْ هَيْ هَيْ كِتُو هَتَهْرَا كَهَامِئُو كَهْنِيَانِشِينِ

Having made alas! alas! she lifted up, burning, her
hands. Maj. 758.

هَيْهَاتِ هَيْهَاتِ لِمَا تُوعَدُونِ سُنْجِي تَهِي اَوْطَاقِ

Lackaday! lackaday! why were ye terrified? empty
has become the men's apartment!

THE SYNTAX.

We divide the Syntax into two parts, the analytical and synthetical. In the analytical part the chief constituent parts of speech, which have been described in the elementary grammar, are to be considered according to their exact signification, their intrinsic value and their special application. In the synthetical part it will be shown, how the different parts of speech are linked together in order to form a sentence and how two or more sentences are joined together.

I. THE ANALYTICAL PART.

SECTION I.

THE NOUN.

Chapter I.

On the absence of the article in Sindhī.

§. 61.

The Sindhī possesses no article definite, as little as the Sanskrit and the modern Arian tongues of India. The noun may therefore be definite or indefinite, as:

जि the woman or: a woman.

There are no fixed rules, by which a noun may be known as definite or indefinite, the only safe guide

is attention to the context. On the whole it may be remarked:

1) A certain number of nouns have by themselves a definite meaning, as: هِنْتُونِ hīṭō, the mind, سِجُ sijū, the sun, اُبِهَرَنْدُو ubhirando, the east, سُرْگُ surgū, the heaven, اُبْ ubhu, the sky etc. Similarly all proper nouns.

2) If a noun stands in apposition to a proper name, it is thereby rendered definite, as: چينَ وِلايَتَ the country of China, حُسينِ پَري the fairy Husine.

If for any reason a noun is to be pointed out as indefinite, the numeral adjective هِڪَڙو one, or the indefinite pronoun ڪو, some one, any one, is used. There is some slight difference in the use of هِڪَڙو and ڪو, the first particularizing the noun by implying that only one person or thing is understood, the latter generalizing the same, by implying, that some one out of many, or something, which is not further described, is intended. هِڪَڙو may also be used in the Plural, especially before another numeral, to render the number somewhat doubtful, as: هِڪَڙا ٻه ماڻهون some two men, or about two men, the number not being fixed as certain. — If some portion or quantity of a thing is to be indicated ڪي (or کين kī) is put before the noun, irrespectively of the gender of the noun (as in Hindūstānī ڪُچه).

گڏه سَرَهائِي مِين اچي هَرَن ڪهي چَوَن لَکُو

The donkey, having become jolly, began to say to the stag. (Both the donkey and the stag having been mentioned before.) Sindhī Read. Book, p. 68.

هُنَ دِلَوِ حِكْمَتَ جُو اُنِي كِهَانِ كِهَرُئُو بِيْتَهَ دِلَوِ ء اُنَ جِي
حِكْمَتَ اُنَ كِهِي ٿِنُو

He asked from them a vessel of (magic) power; at length they gave him the vessel and its (magic) power. Sindhī Read. Book, p. 67.

کِي يِنِڪَرِ پَنَهِنِ جِي سَنَتَهَا هِنُونِ لايُو پَرَهِنِ

Some boys read (their) lesson, applying the (their) mind. Ibid. p. 50.

اُوچو ٿون آکاسَ تي آن بهونو متهي بهر

High art thou upon the sky; I am a wanderer upon earth. Sh. Sōr. I, 3.

مُنُهَن جُون شَهَرِ بَهَنبَهَوَرِ مِينِ پِلِ پِلِ پَرِنِ پَچَارُونِ

In the city of Bhambhōru evil chats are constantly made about me. Sh. Maṣḍ. IV, Epil.

ڪنهن دِيچَ وَتَ هِڪَرُو پيلي هُو. هِڪَرِي ٿينَهَ دِيچَ اُنَ
کِهِي ڪَا دَوَا ڪُتَنَ لاءِ ٿِنِي

With some physician there was a servant; one day the physician gave him some medicine to pound. Sindhī Read. Book, p. 51.

اَسَانِ مِينِ هِڪَرَا سَتَ بَهَاتَرِ هَا

Amongst us there were some seven brothers. Matth. 22, 15.

اَهِيَن کِي اَمِيرَ آهِيُو کِي وَزِيرَ آهِيُو

Are ye (some) amīrs, are ye (some) vezīrs? Amulu Mān. p. 160.

جيڪي ڪهڙو آڪهڙ تهيندو سو آئون پڙهين ڪهي ڏيندس

Whatever milk and scum of butter there will be, that I will give to foreigners. Sindhī Read. Book, p. 60.

ڪنهن گوتهاڻي کين قدر ان جو بهاندي مين رکهڻو هو

Some villager had put some quantity of grain in (his) garner. Ibid. p. 54.

Chapter II.

On the gender of nouns.

§. 62.

The Sindhī possesses only two genders, the masculine and feminine, the neuter having been lost in the course of time. As to the special use of the genders it is to be remarked:

1) The masculine gender is the next and refers either to male beings, or to things and abstract ideas.

a) The masculine gender denotes living beings in general (the females being included therein) as: ماڙهون a man (generally); بچو bācō, a child; جانور jānvaru, an animal; گهوڙو ghōrō, a horse (generally). But in some nouns, implying inferior animals, the feminine includes both genders, as: بلا balā, a snake (generally); مڪھ makhe, a fly; جون jū; a louse etc. But if the gender of a noun is to be expressly mentioned, نر naru, a male, and مادي mādi, a female, must be put before it.

ماڙهون مڪي شهر جا ميڙو ميڙا کن

The people of the city of Mekka assembling form crowds. Maj. 38.

خُدا ڇيُو تہ دھرتي اُڄائي جِئرا پَنهن جي جاتِ سارُ
 ڏهوز * ڏهنڌَرُ جائورُ

God said: the earth bring forth living beings after their own kind, cattle and creeping animals. Sindhī Read. Book, p. 14.

نرُ پکهي وَهنُ نہ تهنون چهڏين

They do not allow a male bird to sit down. Amulu Mān. p. 141.

It is an anomaly, that the nouns بَازُ bāzu, باشو bāšō, شِڪِرُو šikirō, چَرُ čaragu, سِڇَانُو sičānō, بَئِيسِرُو baīsirō, لَگَرُ lagaru, denoting different kinds of female hawks, are masculine, whereas the nouns بَاشِين bašina and چِپَڪ čipaka, denoting male hawks, are feminine.

b) If a neuter idea is to be expressed, the masculine must be employed, the masculine generally supplying the place of the neuter, as: چَنکُو آهي it is good; مُون چِيو it was said by one. But this is only the case in the Singular, the masc. Plural of an adjective (or participle) never being used in a neuter sense. It must not be lost sight of, that the masc. form of an adjective cannot be employed in Sindhī in the sense of an abstract substantive¹⁾ (as in Latin, Greek or German), but that the corresponding substantive must be used (cf. §. 9, I. 1, 2) or the adjective must be accompanied by a substantive denoting 'thing' or 'matter'²⁾; only the masc. Singular

1) In sentences like the following: چَنکُو کَرَنُ ڏهندو to do good is allowed, چَنکُو آهي is an attribute, belonging to کَرَنُ, literally: well doing is allowed.

2) It is a different case, when adjectives are used without a sub-

of the past participle passive may be used in the sense of a neuter substantive.

خُذَاء جِهَرَا تِهِينْدَو چَنگائی * مَندائی جَا سُدھوآرا

Ye will become like God, knowing good and evil.
Sindhī Read. Book, p. 19.

تِن کھي هُو چَنگيُون شِيُون نَ ڏيندو

Will he not give to them good things? Matth. 7, 12.

ڪَهي لَوڙِيُو لِكِهِيُو لِكِهِيَان چُتْهي نَ ڪوِء

Surely, what is written (in fate), will be fulfilled;
from that, which is written, no one will escape. Maj. 258.

مُنْهَن جُو چِيُو نَ ڪَري هَلي تُون هَتِه ڪَريَس

She does not, what I said, go thou and subdue
her. Maj. 285.

c) In such nouns, in which a distinction between a larger or smaller size is admissible, the masc. termination is used to express the idea of relative largeness, as: مَڪوڙُو mākorō, a large ant, مَڪهُ makhō, a big fly; بَهَنگُو bhungō, a house (large hut); ڪوڙتْهُ kōṭhō, a large room; ڪَآتْهُ kāṭhu, a beam (a big stick) etc.

2) The feminine gender refers either to female beings, or to things and abstract ideas.

a) The feminine being considered the weaker sex, the idea of relative smallness, littleness or weakness is expressed by the fem. termination in all such nouns, which admit of such a variation of meaning, as: مَڪوڙِي mākorī, a small ant, مَڪْهُ makhe, a small fly; بَهَنگِي bhungī, a small hut etc.

stantive, as: تَڄُو ڪَھپُو right (and) left, scil. پَاسُو, which is to be supplied.

b) A number of adjectives are only found in the fem. form **سَنَدِهَ** sandhe, barren (said of women); **پَچَہَر** pačhara, barren (said of cattle; **گَرَبِہِنِ** garbhini or **گَرَبِہِنِ** garbhine, pregnant (said of women); **سُا** suā, milch (said of animals); **گَبہَرَارِی** gābhārārī, having a child (said of a mother); **وَرِہِتِی** varēti, having a husband (said of a married woman), **وَدَوَر** vaḍavara, fit to be married etc. etc.

c) Adjectives or pronouns in the feminine are frequently used eliptically, the noun **گَالِہ** gālhe, word, matter, being understood. The noun **تَارِیخ** tāriḡa, date, day, is also occasionally omitted.

تَدِہِنِ مَاءِ پُچِہِی کَہِی کَہِہِنِی کَہِہِی لَکِی کِہِنَاءِ

Then the mother asks Majnō: what has happened to thee? Maj. 44.

سُونہَارَا سَوَرَتِہِ وَرَا کَا مُنہُن جِی کَرِ

O fair husband of Sōrathe! do some (word) of mine! Sh. Sōr. I, 11.

چَوَدِہِنِی چَنَدَرُ اُبِہَرِٹُو اَنَتَرِہِنِی پَسِیَسِ عَامُ

On the fourteenth (day) the moon rose; on the twenty-ninth the vulgar sees it. Sh. Kambh. II, 10.

Chapter III.

Number.

§. 63.

The Sindhī has only two numbers the Singular and the Plural, the Dual having been dropped already

in Prākṛit (cf. §. 15). As to their special use it may be remarked:

1) Arabic nouns in the so-called broken Plural are (according to their original signification) treated as collective nouns, and consequently constructed with the Singular of a verb (or adjective). The Arabic fem. Plural in **آت** is likewise treated as a Singular. But now and then the Arabic Plur. is constructed with the Plural of a verb etc., or it is put in the Sindhī Plural form and treated accordingly.

پُچھ تہ اولاد کونون کھی حق درگاہ مون لکھن آھی کہ نہ

Ask, if some children are destined for me from the threshold of God. *Amulu Mān.*, p. 139.

سبھانما سیٹی جی پزچائنوارا ھن واسطی جو خدء جو

اولاد چٹبا

Blessed are those, who are peace-makers; for they shall be called children of God. *Matth.* 5, 9.

تہ والی دتاریشی ریٹی جت آھی جنات عدن جی

Then the Lord gives thee a meadow, where the gardens of Eden are. *Sh. Sōr.* I, 9.

نہ نہا دسو جو سردار عالم جو مڑنی اھبابن سان ء

سبھیٹی نی آیا آنھن

Do ye not see, that the Lord of the world with all companions, and all prophets are come. *Life of Abd-ul-Latīf*, p. 37.

2) With numerals the Singular form of a noun may be used, though the Plural is more common (cf. §. 23).

3) The Plural is frequently used in a honorific sense, when speaking with respect of any person. A noun

in the Singular may therefore be constructed with the Plural of a verb (adjective etc.), or the noun itself may be put in the Plural, though implying only a Singular.

This is frequently the case with the nouns دوسُ, هوتُ, سِيرِين, پَرِين etc.

For the same reason the II pers. Plural of a verb is used, when addressing politely a person, but not so frequently as in Hindūstānī, the common people being as yet in the habit of addressing each other by the II pers. Singular.

عَبْدُ الْلطِيفِ نَنْدَهِينَ مِیں کَڈْھِیں کَڈْھِیں پَان جِئَن
چھوگرَن سَان لَک لَکُوڻِي رَانِدَ کَنڊَا هُئاَ

Abd-ul-Latīf used to play in his youth with boys of his age the play lika likōṭī (hide and seek). Life of Abd-ul-Latīf, p. 9.

وَوُ بَهِينَرُ آئُون دَ جِئَنڊِيسَ تَا دَ جَتَن رِي

Woe, o sisters, I shall then not live without the Jat (i. e. Punhū). Sh. Dēsī VI, Epil. 2.

بِرَہِی جِي پَچَارَ سِينِن جِي سَنبَہَارَ جَڈَرُو جِي جِمَارُو

By the discourse of (= about) my beloved, by the recollection of my friend my crippled life has been revived. Sh. Jam. Kal. III, Epil.

شَاہ وَتِ اَچِي عَرُضَ کِئَانِئِين دَ سَانِئِين مُون کَہِي بَہِي

پِتَارُو

Having come to the Shāh he said: Sir, give me also to drink. Life of Abd-ul-Latīf, p. 32.

4) The following nouns modify their signification in the Plural:

SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
أَمِيرُ <i>Āmīru</i> , s. m., Lord; Amīr.	أَمِيرَ <i>āmīr</i> , the <i>قَابُون</i> or coffin of the Imāms Hasan and Hu- sain, carried about in the Muharram.
پِکُو <i>pēkō</i> , Adj., belonging or relating to one's father.	پِکَا <i>pēkā</i> , the relations of one's wife (her father's family).
چَاوَرُ <i>čāvaru</i> , } s. m. a grain } of cleansed چَوکھُو <i>čokhō</i> , } rice.	چَاوَرَا <i>čāvara</i> , } cleansed rice } (in general). چَوکھَا <i>čokhā</i> , }
دَانُو <i>dānō</i> , s. m., a grain.	دَانَا <i>dānā</i> , grain (in general).
زَرْدِي <i>zardī</i> , } s. f., yel- جَرْدِي <i>jardī</i> , } lowness.	زَرْدِيُو <i>zardiyū</i> , the dark spots in the teeth of an old horse.
سَارِي <i>sārī</i> , s. f., a grain of rice (in husk).	سَارِيُو <i>sāriyū</i> , rice in husk (in general).
سَاهُرُو <i>sāhurō</i> , Adj., belonging or relating to one's father- in-law.	سَاهُرَا <i>sāhurā</i> , the relations (or family) of one's father- in-law.
سِيئي <i>sēi</i> , s. f., a piece of vermicelli.	سِيئيُو <i>sēyū</i> , vermicelli (in general).
نَانَانُو <i>nanaṇō</i> , Adj., belonging or relating to a mother's father.	نَانَانَا <i>nānānā</i> , the relations of one's mother (the mother's father's family).

5) The following nouns are only used in the Plural:

بَابُرِيُو *bāburiyū*, s. f., tufts of tangled hair (as worn
by faqirs).

پِثُو *pithū*, s. f., pieces.

تَرِيُو *trēyū*, s. f., certain funeral rites, performed during
three days after the decease of a person.

جُنْدَا jundā, s. m.,	} the short hair of an infant.
جُنْدِرَا jundirā, s. m., Dim.,	
جِهْنْدَا jhindā, s. m.,	

جَوِرَا javirā, s. m., a neck ornament of gold beads.

چِتْرَا čitrā, s. m., the hot days.

دِهَانِيُون dhāniyū, s. f., grain boiled and afterwards parched.

رَتِيرِيَا ratiriyā, s. m., A kind of superior rice.

کَتِيُون katiyū, the Pleiades.

کُھَر kuhara, s. m., boiled dry grain.

گَنْجَا ganjā, s. m., a kind of rice.

مُوتِيَا mōtiyā, s. m., a kind of rice.

مُھَدْر muhadra,	} s. m., barley separated from the husk.
مُھَدْھ muhadha,	

وَپَنْبَا vāpambā, s. m., the capsules of the Coreya arborea (a medicinal plant).

هَتِهَوْرِيُون hathōriyū, s. f., handcuffs.

Chapter IV.

The cases of the noun.

§. 64.

I. The Nominative.

As to the special use of the Nominative it may be noted:

1) Nouns or proper names standing in apposition to another noun are generally coordinated to the same,

as: لِكَ لِكُوْتِي رَانِدِ the harbour Karāčī; رَانِدِ the play lika likōtī; شَمْسُ پَاتِشَاهُ the king Shamsu etc.; but the noun in apposition may also be subordinated by means of the Genitive; cf. §. 67, 4.

مُرْكِي مَرُ مَاثَا رَانِي رَاوِ دِيَاچَ جِي

Well! smiles the queen-mother of the king Dīācu; i. e. saying: well! she smiles etc. Sh. Sōr. III, 6.

لَيْلَا نَالُو نَارِ جُو جَا قَاصِي قَمَرِ دِهِي

Lailā is the name of a woman, who (is) the daughter of the Qāzī Qamar. Maj. 33.

دِثَهَرُ مَحَرُمُ مَاهُ سَوْنَكُو شَاهَزَادَن تِهِي

The month (= moon) (of) Muharram was seen; anxiety befell the princes. Sh. Kēd. I, 1.

2) Substantives implying a number or quantity may be likewise coordinated to another noun, instead of governing it in the Genitive (cf. §. 23), as: دَاتَرِ دَلِ lots of liberal persons.

اَصْلِ عَاشِقَن تِي جُغَلِ چَارِي لَكِه

There are throughout lakhs (of) tale-bearers and scouts upon lovers. Maj. 254.

مَارِي مِصْرِن سِيَن دِهُونْدَه كِئَانُونِ دِهِيَرِ

Having cut with (their) swords they made heaps (of) carcasses. Sh. Kēd. III, 4.

دَانِ دَلُوچَا دِلِ وَنِيَا وَتِهِي رَاضِي تِهِي

Having taken buckets (of) heart-pleasing gifts be content! Sh. Sōr. III, 4.

3) The duration of time is expressed by the Nominative (or by the uninflected case generally).

اَتَهِي پَهَرِ عَظِيمَ جو کُنڌُ مَنجھ ڪپارَ

The (whole) eight watches (i. e. day and night) the hook of the Great (= God) is in my skull. Sh. Sōr. I, 20.

رَانُونِ جَاگَنِ جي سي آئون ڪَنڌَرِي سِين

Those, who watch during the nights, I shall make (my) friends. Sh. Jam. Kal. V, Epil. 2.

رَهَ اَجُوكِي رَاتَرِي تُون لالَن مُون لائي

Stay for my sake this night, o darling! Sh. Sam. I, 20.

4) The Nominative is frequently used absolutely to avoid two or more nouns following each other in the inflected case, which is contrary to the Sindhi idiom; the case, in which the nouns should properly stand, must then be taken up by a pronoun or pronominal adjective. If the stress be laid upon some part of a sentence, it may be put quite absolutely, its relation or subordination being taken up by a pronoun. This is especially the case, when a noun is nearer defined by a relative pronoun in the Nominative, the noun being then attracted by the following relative.

مِيروَ مَنجَرِ ماکهيون سَبهِي چکهن چَسَ

Fruits, clusters of flowers, (kinds of) honey, they try the taste of all. Sh. Um. Mār. VI, 9.

خُداَ جي پاڻِشاھَ مِين شاھوڪارَ جو ڪِهڙُن تَنهن ڪَهان

سُئيَ جي پاڪهي مِين اُتھَ جو لَنڪَهن سَڪھو آهي

(As to) the entering of a rich one into the kingdom of God, the passing of a camel through the ear of a needle is easier. Matth. 19, 14.

سا سائڻي ڪهي ساريندي ڏکڻدي پهرندي ڌرجندي گاڙ
مٽهي ڪري ماءُ ڪٿانئين

She remembering the Lord, trembling, shaking, fearing, lifted up (her) neck and made: Māu. Sindhi Read. Book, p. 64.

تہ آهين پنهن جو پي جو آسان مين آهي تنهن جا
پتر تهيندو

Then ye will become children of your father, who is in heaven. Matth. 5, 45.

§. 65.

II. The Vocative.

By the Vocative a person or thing taken personally is addressed; the Vocative stands therefore in no connexion with other nouns or with a verb, and is generally put at the beginning of a sentence.

1) The Vocative is used without any interjectional particle, if no particular stress is laid upon the address; but if the attention of the person spoken to is to be roused, the interjectional particles يا yā, اي ē, آي ai, او ō, هو hū are used promiscuously with masc. and fem. nouns, اي ī and آي ai only with fem. nouns.

In addressing an inferior person, or when speaking very affectionately to a person, the interjectional particles رَ رَ (ري rē) and اَرَ اَرَ (اري arē) are used with masc. nouns, and رَ رَ (ري rī) and اَرَ اَرَ (اري arī), (cf. §. 16, 8, Note) with fem. nouns, be they in the Singular or Plural. بارَ بارَ (باري bārī), رَ رَ (ري rī) and رِ رِ (ري rī) are

also used independently of a noun, in addressing an inferior female (or intimate friend).

جيسَ چيڏيون منهن جا آءُ پنهنون پيهي

I have been quickened, companions, come in my Punhū! Sh. Dēsī II, Epil.

اللهَ ڪارنِ اوڻهيا ڪرها مَ ڪاهڻو

جانبَ جڏي جيئي جو آڳاٽو آهڻو

لاڳاپو لاهڻو مٿان منهن جو سڀرين

For God's sake, camelmen, do not drive on the camels!

Friend! thou art the protector of my crippled life!

Do not extinguish (my) affection, o sweetheart! Sh.

Dēsī III, 1.

يا علي علي سرِ يتيمين جي آئي

ايو حڪمُ اللهَ جو يا اِمامَ

O ʾAlī, ʾAlī, misfortune is on the orphans!

The order of God has come, o Imāms. Sh. Kēd. V,

Epil.

ڙي ماڙهو جا ٻچا تون آسان جي ماءُ ڪهي ماري تهو وڃين

Hallo! son of man, doest thou go having beaten our mother? Amulū Mān. p. 148.

ڙي ٻورچيائي ماني آن

Hallo! cook, bring bread! Ibid. p. 144.

2) Adjectives preceding or following a noun in the Vocative are likewise put in the Vocative. But if an adjective defines another adjective in the sense of an adverb, it remains uninflected.

دُوسَ مِٹھا دِلدارِ عَالَمِ سَبھِ آبادِ کَرین

Sweet, charming friend! mayst thou fertilize the whole world! Sh. Sār. IV, 12.

کھنُو سَباجھا سپرین مُون کھی چھَدِ تانئون مَس

O very kind friend! they (= she, Sing.) have given me up with difficulty (i. e. unwillingly). Maj. 664.

3) The Nominative Plural is occasionally used instead of the Vocative, especially with nouns terminating in 'u' (masc.).

کبرِ آھیو کیدھنِ اچو پُرسِ پَراہینِ پَار

Who are ye? whence do ye come from? ye men of foreign appearance? Nānga jō Qissō, v. 23.

آہینِ کھیلِ ۛ وڈی بَارِ کھنیلِ مُون وَتِ اچو

Ye, that labour and are heavy laden, come unto me. Matth. 11, 28.

4) A number of nouns are commonly found in the Vocative only, as: اَمَرِ amarē (اَمَنِ amane), ایلِ, آئیِ āī, آیالِ āyale, اَمیِ amī, مائیِ māī, o mother! an affectionate term for a female; اَدیِ adī, دادیِ dādī, o sister! جیجاِ jījā or جیجیِ jījī, o aunt; اَدَا adā or دَادَا dādā (Nom. دَادو and دَادو) o brother! اَبَا abā and بابَا bābā (from بابو and بابو), o father! a term, which may be applied even to a child (male or female); میاںِ miyā (Sing. and Plur.) o friend! a respectful address.

ایلِ پُنی آسِ پُنھونِ پھتو کِچِ مینِ

O mother! hope is fulfilled, Punhū has arrived at Kēč. Sh. Dēsī, Chōṭ. 4.

بَابَا اَنُورُنْ تَنُهَن جُو سَنُگ تَهو کَرِيَان لَال پَاتِشَاه جِي
پُتَر سان

O child (o father!) I make thy espousals with the son of the king Lālu. Amulu Mān. p. 142.

اَبُو تَنُهَان جُو اِنُهِي پُجَهَن جُو واسطو کِهَرُو

Fathers! what reason have you to ask after this very (thing?) Ibid. p. 140.

اچي لالَن لَت مِيَان مِيَتِي جُو لوڙه لَکَن مِيَن

Having come, o darling, o friend! cover with dust the tomb of the deceased one in the mountain-passes. Sh. Maṣḥ. VI, Epil.

§. 66.

III. The Instrumental.

1) The Instrumental either denotes the agent, by whom an action is performed, or the instrument, by means of which any thing is done.¹⁾ The Instrumental in Sindhī is not only used with the past tenses of transitive or causal verbs (which always have a passive meaning), but also with any tense of neuter verbs implying a passive signification.²⁾

سَاتَهِن بَدَهَا بَار تُو کِهِي اَرِسُ اَکِهَرِيَن مِيَن

By the people of the caravān the loads have been bound up; in thy eyes there is sloth. Sh. Surāg. III, Epil.

1) The sense is different, if the postposition سَانْ be used with a noun denoting an instrument. In this case it is implied, that some one was accompanied or armed with any thing, but not, that he has performed any thing by a certain instrument.

2) Independently of a verb the Instrumental of نَالو nālō, name, is used quite in an adverbial sense, as: هِيکَرُو فَتِيرُ مُحَمَّدِ عَالِمِ نَالِي: one faqir, by name Muhammad ʿĀlim.



سُهِنِي كَهِي سَيِّدُ جَوِي وَدَهُ قُرْبَ كَهِي

Sūhinī was killed, says the Sayyid, by (her) relationship. Sh. Suh. V, 17.

عَاشِقِينَ وَبِزَوَّارَ نَ وَسِرِّي

By the lovers (God) is never forgotten. Sh. Jam. Kal. VII, 1.

پیرین آنئون نَ پُجَنِي دِيهُ پَرِيَانِ جَوِ دُورِ

By means of (my) feet I cannot arrive (there); the country of (my) friend (Pl.) is far off. Sh. Khambh. I, Epil.

پَكِينِ كِي نَ پَرَجَنِ مَتَ تَكِنَّانُورِ مَنجِهِيَانِ

By drops they are not reconciled; they have espied the jars of the heroes. Sh. Jam. Kal. IV, 9.

2) The Instrumental expresses causality¹⁾ (by reason of, by dint of):

سَتِنِي مَاهِ سَكِي وَتُو مَنجِهَانِ رَتِ رَمَنِ

اَتِهِنِي مَاهِ عَاشِقِ سَنَدِيُونِ اَكِهُونِ اُنَجِ مَرَنِ

On the seventh in the month the blood went out of the veins by reason of dryness;

On the eighth in the month the eyes of the lover die of thirst. Maj. 478, 477.

3) The Instrumental expresses the way and manner, in which any thing is done.

سُنَّتَ قَاصِي سَامُهَرِ چَنَكِي بَهَتِ رَكِهَانِيَانِ

He kept the custom (good breeding) in a good manner before the Qāzī. Maj. 173.

1) In a similar sense the postposition کِهَانِ may also be employed.

لَا مَقْصُودَ فِي دَارَيْنِ إِنْ پَرِ اَتَانُتُون

'There is no purpose in both mansions', in this wise they spoke. Sh. Jam. Kal. V, 23.

بِنَهِيْن كَهِي بَهْرُن پَرِيْن وَبِجَارِن وَرُوْهَ

To both helpless ones (there is) pleasant talk in many ways. Maj. 198.

4) The Instrumental expresses the price, for which any thing is bought or sold.¹⁾

بِهَ جِهْرَكِيُون پَيَسِي كِي نَه تَهِيُون وَكَامَن

Are not two sparrow sold for a piece? Matth. 10, 29.

كَارِيُون كَهْتَهِيُون خَاصِيُون اُوچَهِي اَتِ اَجِن

Fine black woollen blankets come there to hand for a paltry (sum). Sh. Um. Mär. VI, 8.

§. 67.

IV. The Genitive.

1) It must be remembered, that the Genitive in Sindhi is originally an adjective, formed by the affix جُو, which always requires the Formative of the noun, to which it accedes; the Genitive admits therefore of gender, inflection and number, like other adjectives. Instead of جُو its diminutive form جَرُو jarō is also found in poetry, and especially سَنَدُو sandō (cf. §. 16, 6) and its dim. form سَنَدِرُو sandirō. The Genitive case-sign جُو etc. may also accede to a noun with suffixes; in poetry it is frequently dropped altogether, to be supplied from the context. سَنَدُو may also be separated from the noun, to which it belongs.

1) But the postposition سَانُ may also be used in this sense.

فَقِيرِي جُو فَهْمُ سُو آهي نَدَ آسانُ

The understanding of the duties of a faqir is not easy. Mēngho 37.

جَانِبَ مُنْهَن جِي جِيئِي مِين تَنْهَن جِي طَمَا پَو

O friend, into my soul falls the desire after thee! Sh. Barvō Sindhī II, 2.

دَلِي جِي حِڪْمَتَ سَانُ هُونْدِرَارُو تَهَنُو

By means of the magic power of the bucket he became wealthy. Sindhī Read. Book, p. 67.

كَهَرِ جَا دَهَنِي اُتْهي چَها ڏَسَن تَ جُورِ كَهَرِ جِرُونِ مِڙِيئي

وَتَهون مِڙِي هَرِ بَنْدَهي ڏارُون پِي كَهيُو تَهي تَهو نَجي

The masters of the house having got up what do they see? that a thief, having collected all things of the house, having bound a bundle, having drunk wine (and) having become intoxicated, dances. Ibid. p. 69.

بَهاڻوَبَهاڻَ جَا كَهاجَ ماڙَهِن جِي كَهَرِن مان ڏينَهاڙِي

چوڙِي ڪَري اُنَ كَهي اُئي ڏينَدا هَا

Having stolen daily from the houses of men all sorts of food they were bringing it to him. Ibid. p. 62.

اُهو پُترُ بَن جُو بَهاڻِم جُو سِرُ وڌَهي

To the forest with that thy son, who will cut off the head of my brother! Story of Rāe Diācu, p. 1.

سَندي جَا ساڙِيَهَ ڪَهِهَ ڪَتهُوري بَهاڻِئان

The grass of (my) fatherland I consider as musk. Sh. Um. Mār. II, 1.

2) As regards the position of the Genitive, it generally precedes the noun, by which it is governed, like

other adjectives; but if the stress be laid on the governing noun, or if the euphony of the sentence should require it, the Genitive follows the same. In poetry the Genitive precedes or follows the noun, on which it is dependent, either immediately or separated by one or more intervening nouns, as it may be required by the metre or the rhyme.

جيڪو دقت پورهئي جي ڪنا بهڄندو اُن جو حال کُنن

جان تهيندو

Whoever flees from the trouble of labour, his state will become like that of the dogs. Sindhī Read. B., p. 61.

ڪشتي ڪيئي جي الله لکي اڪار

Escort, for God's sake, the boat of the helpless one! Sh. Bārvo Sindhī II, Epil.

3) The Genitive has a double signification in Sindhī; it refers either to the subject or to the object of the sentence. The Genitive is called subjective, if the attribute expressed by the Genitive refers to the governing noun (or subject) as to its owner or author, and it is called objective, if it refers to the object, to which the action of the subject is directed.

ستهم ساهيڙن جا طعنا توھي لاءِ

I have borne the taunts of (my) companions for thy sake. Sh. Mūm. Rānō I, Epil.

انهيان جن سنڌڙي مون ڪهي سي نه جهڏيندا

Those, whose I am, will not abandon me. Sh. Kōh. II, Epil.

پيرين هيٺ ڀرنئي جي آئون وجهايان وار

Beneath the feet of (my) friend I spread (my) hair. Maj. 231.

آهيم آري جَامَ جي آندَرَ مَنجھ اُساَتَ

In my heart there is a thirst after the Jam Āri.
Sh. Hus. VIII, Epil.

فَرِيَادُونِ فِرَاقَ جُونِ پُنْهَلِ ڪَهي چَوَنديَسِ مِيَانِ

Complaints about the separation I shall utter to
dear Punhū, o friend! Sh. Hus. VIII, Epil.

4) One noun is often made dependant on the other by means of the Genitive, where we should properly expect an apposition.¹⁾ In this way نَالُو nālō, name and similar nouns subordinate the appellation in the Genitive. The same subordination in the Genitive takes place, when the genus is nearer defined by the species, as: a fig-tree, or when a geographical appellation, as: town, mountain, river etc. is followed by a proper name, as: the river Indus. In some instances the English idiom resorts to the same construction, as the Sindhī, e. g. the city of London.

پَرَهَ جي بَانِي ڪُنهن ڪَهاَن سِڪَهيَن سِپَرِيَن

From whom hast thou learnt the word (of) 'separation', dear friend! Sh. Barvō Sindhī II, 8.

زَالِ نَالُو رُوڪَرِ جُو هُوَرِئَانِ وَرَدَانِيَن

The woman uttered the word (of) 'money' slowly.
Sindhī Read. Book, p. 68.

اَها سِڪِي تَهُونِي سَاڻُو وَنُ لَڻِي جُو وَڏُو ۽ تَهلهو تَهي بِيَتَهُو

That very dry post stood as a green tamarisk tree,
having become big and thick. Life of Abd-ul-Latif, p. 23.

هڪڙو ماڙهُون وَڏَمَائِئُو رَهاڪو تَهَڻِي جي موڙَ تَهَ جُو هُو

There was a very respectable inhabitant of the town
of Thaṭā. Ibid. p. 45.

1) See §. 64, 1.

5) The Genitive describes the material, of which something is made or composed; in this case the Genitive quite supplies the place of an adjective.

يُحَنَّا جُو رَمُو مِلَسَ جُو هُو ۞ چيلِه دهارين چَم جُو يَتَكُو

The garment of John was of camel's hair and round his waist a girdle of leather. Matth. 3, 4.

هُو چُوڙا پيڙا ڏهڪي ڪري مَوَتِي ۞ ياتوتن جُو رَمُو اَنائيندي

She, having put on bracelets and buttons, will cause to bring (call for) a garment of pearls and rubies. Amulu Mān. p. 144.

6) The Genitive describes the nature or quality of the noun, on which it is dependent (Genitivus qualitatis). But in this case the Genitive must always be accompanied by an attribute, be that an adjective, pronoun or another noun in the Genitive; the repetition of a noun may also serve as an attribute. In poetry, and even in prose, the Genitive case-sign is frequently dropped, so that constructions of this kind can hardly be distinguished from those with the Locative, see §. 70, 4.

اَنِي مَانِ عِيڪڙو نونِ دَرِهِنِ جُو هُو بڻو اَتِهِنِ دَرِهِنِ جُو

One of them was nine years old, the other eight years. Sindhī Read. Book, p. 50.

رِي بُدِه وديا ڪنهن ڪم جي نه آهي

Without understanding science is of no use. Ib. p. 54.

ڪيڇان آيو قافلو طرح موچارِي توڻو

From Kēč came a caravan, camels of a fine kind. Sh. Dēsī III, 8.

ڪپڙا طرحين طرحين جا ڏيئي هلايان

Having given clothes of different kinds he started them off. Amulu Mān. p. 140.

7) When the Genitive is dependent on nouns, implying a part, quantity or measure, it expresses the whole of that, of which, the governing noun forms a part. But if no such noun precede and a part is to be singled out, a postposition must be used (as: مان, مَنجَہان etc.).

جَنهن ڪهي زال وڌهي آئي جي ٽرين پنين مين لڪايو

Which a woman took (and) hid in three measures of flour. Matth. 13, 33.

مٺ سري جو هته آيس

A jar of wine fell into his hands. Sindhī Read. Book, p. 62.

تن مون هڪڙي مين منهن جي ڪهت پيئي هوندي پئي

مين پاتشاهه جي

In one of those (houses) my beadstead shall be, in the other that of the king. Amulu Mān. p. 142.

جي آهان مَنجَہان به جئا ڪنهن سوال لاءِ هڪ دل تهيندا

If two persons of you become one-hearted respecting a petition. Matth. 18, 19.

8) A certain number of adjectives and appellatives, which have partly taken the signification of substantives, may subordinate another noun in the Genitive. Of this kind are the nouns formed by the affix āku, āū (see §. 8, 9) and others.

عاشق زهر پياڪ وه پستو وهسن ڪهنو

ڪڙي ۽ قاتل جا هيشه هيراڪ

Lovers, drinkers of poison, are verry happy when seeing poison;

They are always used to the chain and the executioner. Sh. Kal. II, 33.

تُون رَهَاشو سُنَجَ * پَتَ جُو آئِهِيَن

Thou art a resident of the waste and desert. Sindhī Read. Book, p. 69.

تِيژُ تُكِرِيَن هِيَرُون نَ كُو لِيَكُرُ لَدُ

A vagabond, accustomed to bits, no breeding and good behaviour. Maj. 304.

جَا مَتَهِي تُو مَنِيَا تَنُهَن سِرَ جُو آئِهِيَاَن سِيَكُرُو

Which lustre is upon thee, for that head I am longing. Sh. Sōr. II, 7.

سَيِّدُ شَاهُ حَبِيبُ نَالِي مُورِ وَيَتَهْدُ مَوْتَهَ وَنَكِي وَلاَسِي جُو هُو

The Sayyid, by name Shāh Habīb, was originally an inhabitant of the village Vangō Vilāsō. Life of Abdul-Latīf, p. 1.

9) The Genitive is used, without being dependent on a governing noun, to express a space of time, as: جُو رَاتِ by night, جُو دِيْنَهَ by day etc., the noun, by which the Genitive is governed and which is idiomatically left out, being وِلَوِ vėlō, time.

This construction is therefore identical with that mentioned in §. 64, 3. In Hindūstānī كُو is used in the same sense.

وَجِنِي جُو آن دِيَهِي جَرِ پَلَرُ پَائِيَاَن

Sitting at (the time of) evening prayer I spread out my skirt on the water. Sh. Sōr. V, 14.

پَاتَ پِهَرِنِي رَاتِ جُو مَرَهَ پَاسِي مَگَاوِ

The bard sang the first night at the side of the castle. Sh. Sōr. II, 1.

ڏينھ جو تنھن جي چھانو مِين رهندا هئا

By day they used to sit in its shade. Life of Abdul-Latif, p. 23.

10) A number of adjectives require idiomatically the inflected case of the Genitive (i. e. جي), when a noun is made dependent on them. The most common of them are: آڏو āḍō, in front; اوڏو ōḍō (Dim. اوڏڙو ōḍirō), near to; سامھون sāmuhō, in front of, opposite; مھنديون mahandiyō, in front; ويجهو vējhō (Dim. ويجهڙو vējhirō), near etc. These adjectives being mostly used as adverbial postpositions (§. 58, II), the same construction has apparently been preserved, when they are used as regular adjectives.

جڏھين هي اورشليم جي اوڏا آيا

When they came near to Jerusalem. Matth. 21, 1.

اُپھڙ چنڊر پَس پرين تو اوڏا مون ڏور

Look at the rising of the moon; the friend is near to thee, far from me. Sh. Kambh. II, 7.

اکھڙون اکھن سامھيون ڏينھ سجڙي رات

The eyes are opposite the eyes the whole day and night. Maj. 219.

11) The relative adjectives جهو jehō, جهڙو jeharō, such as, like as, fit to, سڏو sandō, like as, جيترو jē-tirō, as much as, and جيڏو jēḍō, as large as, are always constructed with the simple Formative of the noun, that depends upon them.

محمودائي مڃنن آچن تا نه جهو

Majnō, the son of Mahmūd, is then not such as to come, i. e. is not likely to come. Maj. 719.

جَائِينَ پُهَلِين جِهَآ ڏَنَس ڏَنَدَ ڏَاَنَارَ

Teeths like Jasinum flowers the Bountiful has given her. Maj. 54.

جُو سَگورُو سَبَهِين پَرِين سَنَدُو تُو سَجانَ

Which is blessed in all ways, like thou, o wise one. Maj. 825.

تَنُهِن مِين تُونُهِين تُونِ پِي لَاتِ نَ لَکَظِي جِيَتِرُو

In that (there is) even thou, thou; (there is) no other sound (as much as the twinkling of an eye =) for a moment. Sh. Jam. Kal. V, 19.

تَان تَرِ جِيڏُو تُو تَن سَرَتِي سَرَتُ نَ آئِيُو

Then no mote, as large as a sesamum seed, came into thy body, o friend? Ajaib v. 21.

12) When a noun is subordinated by means of the Genitive to the Infinitive of a neuter or active verb, the case-sign of the Genitive may be optionally dropped.

مُوڻَهاَنُو اَن تَهوَرِڙِي اَن جِي سَوَرَن مَنجِه رُنبِهڻُ تِهَتُو

The villager occupied himself in (the) removing of that little grain. Sindhi Read. Book, p. 56.

مُغَل تَرَارِئونَ کَهَنِي شَاه جِي مارِن لاه آيا

The Mughals, having taken (their) swords came for the killing of the Shāh, i. e. 'in order to kill him'. Life of Abd-ul-Latīf, p. 15.

هِن نِعَمَت ڏِسَن کَهاَن پُوہ جوگو سُکُرُ مَنجَانِئين

After the seeing of this affluence she offered up dutiful thanks. Sindhi Read. Book, p. 55.

آسَمَان ۽ دَهْرَتِي وَجَنَ تُونِي شَرَعَ جَوَ هِيكَرُو تِرُ كَنُهِن
طَرَحَ نَهَ رِيندَو

Till the passing away of heaven and earth not one jot of the law shall in any way pass off. Matth. 5, 18.

§. 68.

V. The Dative.

1) The Dative denotes the more distant object, in reference to which the subject is acting. This is already indicated by the postposition ڪهي khē (§. 16, 4), by means of which the Dative case is made up¹⁾, and which originally signifies: 'on account of, for the sake of, in reference to'. In prose the postposition ڪهي is always put after the Formative of a noun, but in poetry it may precede the noun, or it may be dropped altogether.

When a Genitive, depending on a noun in the Dative, follows the same immediately, the postposition ڪهي is put after the Genitive case-sign.

آءُ اَوَرَاهِرَن سِيرِين ڏِڪهي ڏِڪهَ مَهَ ڏِيڄ

Come near, dear friend, do not give pain to the distressed. Sh. Ābirī X, 4.

تَن مَسِتِ نَازِ مَلُوكِ ڪهي اچي هِينِي اَتُو

Then Maste Nāze came and said thus to the elegant Ajāib, v. 90.

1) In poetry the postpositions ڪَن kane, ڪَنِ kane and ڪَر gare are used in the same sense as ڪهي.

اَسَ مَ لَکِي اَوْتَهِيَن لِپَرَن لَکَهَ مَ لَکِ

اَلا اَرِچَن کهي کوسو واءَ مَ وِکِ

May no sunshine apply to the camelmen, may
no hot wind apply to the camels!

O God, may no hot wind blow to the sons of Āri!
Sh. Dēsi I, 25.

بَنَدِهِي دِکيدَارَ کوٽَهَ جِي کهي ڏِنائُونَسِ

Having bound (him) they delivered him to the po-
lice-officer of the town. Sindhi Read. Book, p. 69.

2) The Dative with the auxiliary verbs هُونُ to be,
and تَهَنُ to become, to be, expresses the idea of pos-
session.

مُون کهي آهي اُميدَ اَللّٰهَ جِي

I have hope in God. Sh. Sōr. I, Epil.

مُون کهي دُنيا جِي کي کائي کانهي پَر اَوَلانُ کي نَ

تَهُ تَهِيَمِ

I have no lack whatever of wealth, but children
are not at all born to me. Amulu Mān. p. 139.

3) The Dative denotes the remote object, in re-
ference to which the action takes place. In this case
the postposition کهي must be translated by: for, for
the sake of.

کَهامي دِلِ خَمَارَ مِينِ هِنئون کهي هَوَتِنِ

(My) heart (and) mind burns for my sweetheart
in intoxication. Maj. 728.

کيچَ تَنهين کهي کوٽَهَ کي نَ جَنهين جِي کَچَهَ مِينِ

In Kēč there is a call for those, under whose armpit
there is nothing (i. e. who have nothing). Sh. Maṣḍ. II, 11.

ڪاڻهي پائي گاهه ڪهي ماڙهون مڪانئون

They sent men for food, water (and) grass. Sh. Kēd. I, 5.

سورهه مَرِين سوبهه ڪهي تہ دل جا وهه وسار

O hero! thou diest for the sake of victory, forget then the apprehensions of the heart! Sh. Kēd. VI, 9.

4) The Dative expresses the idea of motion to a place.

گاهي رَسيس ڪيچ ڪهي جتي پان پنهون

Having driven on I came to Kēč, where Punhū himself (is). Sh. Ābirī V, 1.

مندھه مَرَنان پوءِ پهچندڻن پنهو ڪهي

O fair Lady, after death thou wilt come to Punhū. Sh. Maṣḍ. IV, 5.

ڪاشيداني گاري نه رساني ڪيچ ڪهي

The work of a messenger (i. e. travelling) does not at all bring to Kēč. Sh. Ābirī IV, 10.

5) The Dative is used to express time, when only an indefinite space of time is spoken of, whereas the postpositon مِين or مَنجِه, in, is employed, if the time, during which any thing is done, is to be noted.

قيصر چي ڪلات مِين رات تنهين ڪهي رس

Qaisare says: arrive that very night in Kelāt. Sh. Sār. IV, 3.

پريان ڏي پر بهات وڻن ڏي تهاري ڏينھه ڪهي

Go to (thy) friend at day-break, in clear day. Sh. Suh. Chōt. 11.

وَهَنَدُو تَنهين وِپرَ کهي فَرَاشينَ فَرَمَاشَ تهي

Immediately at that time an order was given to the chamberlains. *Ajāib*, v. 15.

§. 69.

VI. The Accusative.

The Accusative has two forms in *Sindhī*, it is either identical with the Nominative or with the Dative, i. e. the idea of the Accusative may be expressed also by means of the postposition کهي.

1) The Accusative is commonly expressed by the form of the Nominative, whenever the verb governs only an Accusative, and not at the same time a Dative.

سَو جَدِهينَ پَنهنَ جَا کھوڑا پيڑا سپاهي رکهي * پَنهنَ

جَا آچارَ وِچارَ کري

When he shall keep his own horses, boats, soldiers and make his own judgements and thoughts. *Amul. Mān.* p. 139.

جي پَرَنيندَسِ تہ اِها حُسينَ پَري پَرَنيندَسِ

If I shall marry, I shall marry this very fairy *Husine*. *Ibid.* p. 141.

2) But when the subject of the sentence is an animate noun (in the Nominative) the object (Accusative) must be marked out by means of the postposition کهي, to avoid a possible mistake. If the subject be animate, and the object inanimate, the object (Accusative) generally remains in the uninflected form (i. e. without the Postposition), if there be no danger of misapprehension. If both, subject and object, imply inanimate things, the object may likewise remain uninflected.

شَاهُ صَاحِبُ اُنْهِي فَعِيرَ كَهِ پَانِ سَانِ وَتَهِ آيُو

Shāh Sāhib, having taken that very faqīr with him, came. Life of Abd-ul-Latīf, p. 40.

وَالِدُ شَاهِ جُو شَاهِ صَاحِبَ كَهِ مَؤَلِينْدُو وَتَمُو

The father of the Shāh continued seeking the Shāh Sāhib. Ibid. p. 44.

جَدِھِن مَحْدُوْمَ هَاشِمَ بُدھُو تَ شَاهُ صَاحِبَ مَسْجِدِ مِيْنِ

رَہِي تَہُو گَارِي

When Maydūm Hāshim heard, that the Shāh Sāhib causes to make music in the mosque. Ibid. p. 35.

جِيڪَڏِھِن اِها مَگَالِ کُنِ جُو بَادِشَاهُ بُنْدَھَنْدُو

If ever this word the king of the mice will hear. Sindhi Read. Book, p. 62.

جَدِھِن تَنَھِن كَهِ كُو مَآڙُھُون لَھِي تَہُو تَدِھِن لِيڪَآِي

تَہُو رَکَھِي

If that (treasure) some man finds, he keeps it concealed. Matth. 13, 14.

سَنْدَھِيُون سُوَرِ کَرِيْنِ هَدَّ پُنْ دُکَھِنِ هُوَتَ لِي

The (black) marks (from blows) cause pains; the bones also are aching on account of the (= my) sweetheart. Sh. Ābirī, Čhōṭ. 2.

3) When the object (Accus.) of an active verb is for any reason to be rendered more prominent, the post-position كَهِ is used for this purpose. This is especially the case, when the object implies living beings, whose mention has been made already, or when two or more persons or things are in any way compared or set against each other. But much scope is left in this

respect to individual judgement. In poetry کهي is occasionally dropped, but then the contracted form of the Formative must be used in the Plural.

اُن مُریدَ دِهتَرِي کهي سڏي چيو

That disciple, having called (that) girl, said. Life of Abd-ul-Latīf, p. 48.

ديون چيو تون انهي کهي سڃاڻندين

The dēvs said: wilt thou recognise that very one? Amulu Mān. p. 151.

ائين پئسا ملندا تنهين مان آئي مڙمان کهي کهاريون

In that way money will be got; having brought (something) from that let us feed (our) guests. Life of Abd-ul-Latīf, p. 41.

اديون عبدُ الطيف چري سڄن کهي ساراهڻو

Sisters, says Abd-ul-Latīf, praise ye the (well-known) friend. Sh. Ābirī Chōṭ., Epil. 3.

پهرائين رو کهي ميڙي گڙا بندهي ساڙن لاءِ پوءِ کنگڙ

کهي بهانڊ مين ميڙي رکھو

Having gathered first the tares, having bound bundles to burn (them), gather (and) put afterwards the wheat in the garner. Matth. 13, 30.

جي کي سڳن سڳه ٺا ته پَس سڳنديئن

Whatever longing there is, learn (it); otherwise look at the longing ones. Sh. Jam. Kal. VII, 7.

4) Whenever an active verb is constructed impersonally in the past tenses (§. 94, 5) the object must be pointed out by the postposition کهي, signifying: as regards.

تڏهن تنهن کهي ساته ستيي جهڙو

Then it was abandoned by the caravan as regards her, while being asleep, i. e. she was abandoned by the caravan while being asleep. Sh. Kōh. I, 8.

ان جي گنڌهري وڌي ان کهي جهڙي ڏنائين

Having taken his bundle he started him off. Sindhi Read. Book, p. 53.

5) When a verb governs a double Accusative, both objects remain in the uninflected state, if they imply things; but if the first object be a person or a living being in general, it is rendered more definite¹⁾ by the accession of the postposition کهي, whereas the second object, be it a person or thing, remains in the uninflected state of the Singular, though it refer to a Plural. If the stress is on the second object (compare §. 94, 3), it may be placed first.

ڏيندس ماڻه مرڻ کهي آئون جڙا جيڙي ڪري

I shall give (my) flesh to the wild beasts, having made atoms (my) life. Sh. Ābirī IX, Epil.

سو مڙمان کهي ماني ڪهارائيندو هو

That one was in the habit of causing the guests to eat bread, i. e. he was in the habit of entertaining the guests. Life of Abd-ul-Latīf, p. 40.

هارهو هيئي کهي لنڪهائج لطيف چري

Make the weak one pass the Hārḥō, says Latīf. Sh. Dēsī IV, 4.

آئون اوهان کهي مارهن جو ميو ڪندس

I will make you fishers of men. Matth. 4, 19.

1) But both objects may also remain in the uninflected state, though implying persons; see §. 94, 3.

6) When an active verb subordinates at the same time a near and a more distant object (i. e. an Accusative and a Dative), the Accusative (in the uninflected state) generally follows the Dative, except a particular stress be laid on the Accusative, in which case it precedes the Dative.

کاملِ ڈینہائی قیسَ کھی چنکا گاری تھی چاکِ

The accomplished one causes daily nice blandishments to be made to Qais. Maj. 223.

ہتہ آسان کھی دھڑی دھاری

The hands the little daughter shall wash us. Life of Abd-ul-Latif, p. 48.

ہیکڑو ہتھون نہ ڈین ہتہ سان بٹی کھی بہنگِ وجھی بہائی

But one (grain) thou doest not give to another with thy hand, having thrown in an obstacle, o brother! Mēnghō 11.

§. 70.

VII. The Locative.

The Locative, as noted already, can only be expressed in the Singular of masculine nouns terminating in 'u'; in all other nouns and throughout the Plural the Locative must be circumscribed by the postpositions *میں* and *مَںجہ*, 'in'. In poetry these postpositions are commonly dropped and only the Formative of a noun is used to express the idea of the Locative, in the Plural the contracted form of the Formative (ending in *ẽ* or *ã*) must in this case always be employed. But also in prose the postpositions *میں* and *مَںجہ* are frequently left out idiomatically, especially after nouns implying time.

When a substantive in the Locative is accompanied

by an adjective ending in 'u', the adjective must be likewise put in the Locative; but adjectives of other terminations, pronouns or numerals are only put in the Formative.

1) The Locative expresses in Sindhi not only the place, in which an action is going on, but also direction and motion to a place. The Locative is therefore used after verbs of motion, such as: وَجَنُ vanaṇu, to go, اَچَنُ acaṇu, to come etc.

وَنَ ذَ دِيتْهَا کَانِکَ وَجِنَ تَهِي دِیلا کَری
کَہِری کَہڑو ہَتِہ کَری سُنِی سَاجِہی بَانِکَ

No crows were sitting on a tree; evening tide has set in; she seizes the opportunity.

She stepped in, having taken the jar into the hand, having heard the call (to prayer) of the evening.

Sh. Suh. I, 14.

دِیکِین دَوِکَ کَرُہِن جِتِ کُنِین کِنکُو ذَ لَہِی

In the caldrons the limbs boil, where not a grain does descend in the eddies. Sh. Kal. II, 27.

اُونْہِی نِینْہِ اَتِ کَہَنِی سَہَا ۞ سِیَارَ

In deep, very great love are hares and jackals. Maj. 548.

مَتَانِ گَا بَڑِی بُولِ بَرُوجِی وَسَہِی

May not any one, o friend! trust in a Baluchī promise! Sh. Dēsī, Čhōt. 7.

وَنَجَانِ تَہِی وَنِگَارِ دِتْہِمِ پِیرِ پُنْہَرِ جَوِ

I go to the forest; I have seen the footstep of Punhū. Sh. Hus. V, 4.

بِئَا دَرِ ڏِيئي ٻين ڪهي آيسِ تنهن جي دَرِ

Having given (left) the other doors to others, I came to thy door. Sh. Sōr. I, 11.

2) The Locative is used with nouns implying time, to express the point of time, at which an action takes place.

هڪڙي ڏينھ شعل ڪندا وڃي چيسر مير ڪهان ڪريا

One day, making a journey, they arrived at (lit.: came out of) Jesalmēr. Life of Abd-ul-Latīf, p. 40.

ڪنھين ٿاڻي ڪوٽھ هڪڙي منجه ڪئي هڪڙي پنهن جي

هردي مين ويچار ڪري چيائين

At some time in a village one mouse, having reflected in its mind, said. Sindhī Read. Book, p. 61.

سچن سوبهارو بهيج بهني ڪهر آيو

(My) beautiful friend came at day-break to (my) house. Sh. Khambh. I, 9.

جڙو جنجيرن مين راتيان ڏينهان روءِ

(My) body weeps in the nights (and) in the days, in the chains (i. e. in prison). Sh. Um. Mār. V, 7.

3) The Locative is used also in the sense of the Latin Ablative absolute, to express a state or circumstance. In this way either an adjective may be used absolutely (i. e. substantively, so that an attribute may be joined to it) or a substantive with an adjective; in either case the participle present هوندي in being, being, should be supplied, but is idiomatically left out.¹⁾

1) About the Locative of the participle present and past, see §. 81, 2.

سَو مُون تَهوَرُو لاه جِينِي جِي مِلان هَوَتَ كهي

Grant me that favour, that I may meet, whilst living (lit. in the state of being alive) my sweetheart. Sh. Ābirī I, 1.

اَسان جي جِيَرِي تُنهن جي وارَ جو نالو به ڪو نه مَنهندو

Whilst we live no one shall take even the name of thy hair. Amulu Mān. p. 151.

لاهِ مَه لَذُو لَذِ تَه مَکَڙهي سِجَ مَکَالِه مِڙين

Do not take down the load; depart, that thou mayst meet with (thy) object, whilst the sun is (yet) red. Sh. Hus. I, 2.

4) The Locative describes the attributes or qualities, in which the subject is, to say so, immersed. In the English idiom such a Locative must be translated by the postposition 'of' or 'with'.

سَنهي لَکِ نَکِ سَنئين ڪَجَلِ بَهَرينَ نينَ

Of slender waist, of straight nose, with lamp-black their eyes (are) filled. Sh. Sām. I, 35.

سَر تَنَ جي سِينگارَ مينَ آهي سُوَرُهَ وَڌي سَتِ

In the adornment of the head (and) body he is a hero of great boldness. Ajāib, v. 156.

وَڌي اوهَ آڻيون پُتھيَ لاڻي پَهَرَ

With great udder they came, having behind their young ones. Sh. Sār. IV, 14.

هَهڙين آهين پارين تو ڪو شاهه عَبْدُ اَلطيفُ نالي پُترُ

منهن جو ڪانهڙين ڏٺهو

Hast thou seen any where one by name Shāh Abd-ul-Latīf, of such marks and signs, my son? Life of Abd-ul-Latīf, p. 9.

جهورؤ چهنين کپڙين کر ڏسندڻي ڏل

An orphan, of torn clothes, to look upon like a basil leaf. Maj. 303.

هرن اکهنن هنجري کنين کورل جي کار

Of deer-eyes, of ears of a wild goose, of a Kōvil's speech. Ibid. 52.

کوتڙ جهري مڇي سيني سنهاري

Of a neck (and) breast like a pigeon, amiable. Ibid. 60.

5) The Locative is used also in computations, the sum or price, at which something is computed, being put in the Locative (cf. also §. 66, 4).

تنهن جو قدم پدم نه پاڙيان جي تون تهين جيع

Thy step I do not balance with ten billions, if thou become comforted. Sh. Sōr. II, 4.

جو من مله مور نه سپڇي اچي سو كهريزو

That heart, which is not at all obtained for a price, thou hast asked. Sh. Sōr. II, 15.

§. 71.

VIII. The Ablative.

The idea of the Ablative is expressed either by the Ablative case (cf. §. 16, 5) or by postpositions, as: کهاڻ, کهن, کهاڻ, کهاڻ from, مان, مڃهاڻ from-in, تان, متهاڻ from-upon etc.

1) The Ablative denotes in the first instance separation, removal, distance from a place or thing; it is therefore commonly used with such verbs, postpositions and adverbs, as imply a distance or separation from any thing (place, time etc.).

پَرڏيهان پندھ ڪري هلي آيو هيٺ

This one came, having made a journey from a foreign country. S. Sōr. I, 5.

بهڪيس جان بهنبهڙ ڪهان تان سور مڙيئي سڪه

لٽهي مٽهان لڪه¹ پنهون تهيس پانهين

When I fled from Bhambhōru, then all pains became delights;

Having descended from the mountain-pass I became in my own person Punhū. Sh. Ābirī V, 2.

ڪلهنڀان ڪوريان کي جاجڪ جسي سين ڏنائين

I will scoop out of (my) shoulders something, o bard, and give it thee with the body. Sh. Sōr. II, 22.

اڃان اڳي سسئي منده جيراڻي مر

ٽوليان تنهن م تڙ جنهن روح وڃايو راهه مين

Before death, o Sasuī, o fair Lady! die whilst living!

Turn not aside from that company, by which the soul has been lost on the road. Sh. Maṣḍ. IV, 6.

2) The Ablative is therefore used in comparisons, the object, with which a noun is compared, being put in the Ablative, to state the distance or difference of one noun from another (cf. §. 21).

جي بهانئين تہ پرني مڙان تہ ڏوهينون مڻن بهانئي

If thou desirest to meet thy friend, then esteem virtue more than vices; (literally: esteem virtue before vices.) Sh. Jam. Kal. VIII, 22.

1) لڪه the same as لڪ, the latter having been, after a poetical license, aspirated, for the sake of the rhyme.

اَوْتَارُو مَرْنِي بِسَنِ فَقِيرِنِ كِهَانِ چَنگُو جَوَزَائِي بُهتَ تِي دِيتهو

Having built a dwelling better than all other faqīrs (lit. good from), he lived at Bhiṭa (i. e. on the sandhill). Life of Abd-ul-Latīf, p. 21.

3) The Ablative expresses the ground, reason or feeling, out of which or with which an action is done.

مَنْجِ مُحَمَّدُ کَارَنِي نِرَتُونِ مَنجِهَانِ نِينَهَ

Respect Muhammad, the intercessor, out of understanding (and) love. Sh. Kal. I, 2.

خَتَهَایَا کَهَنِي وَنَجُو جَانِ سَا خُوشِيَانِ کِهَامِ

Go, ye scholars, that she may eat with pleasure. Maj. 117.

4) The Ablative denotes also instrumentality and accompaniment; but this use is restricted to inanimate nouns and to poetry; in prose either the Instrumental or the postposition سَانُ would be employed for this purpose.

هَوِو چَوَنِي تُونِ کِي مَ چُو وَاتَانِ وَرَائِي دِينِ

Those say to thee: do thou not return a word with (thy) mouth. Sh. Jam. Kal. VIII, 17.

کَرِ تُونِ حَمْدُ حَکِيمِ کِهِي ظَاهِرُ رِبَانَا¹

Give thou praise to the wise one publicly with (thy) tongue. Sh. Surāg. I, Epil. 1.

مُتِهِنُونِ لَهِي مُنْهَاءِ جِي تُو چَانگَا چِهِنُونِ

The mouthfuls, which thou, o camel! hast obtained (and) plucked with the mouth. Sh. Kambh. II, 29.

1) رِبَانَا instead of رِبَانَانِ.

سَوْنَانَ رَوْن صَرَّافَ سَيْنَى لَذُو هَدِّ مَ لَاهِ

Go with the gold to the banker, (but) do not at all take down the load! Sh. Surāḡ. IV, 9.

5) With neuter verbs the Ablative (especially with the postposition كِهَان) denotes the agent. The same is the case with passive verbs, if the agent be an inanimate noun.

سَانِثِينَ مُوْنَهَانَ دُوهْ تِهَتْو سَو تُون تُوْهِيْنِمِ

Master, I have done wrong, forgive me that! - Life of Abd-ul-Latif, p. 20.

شَمَعَ تِهِيْنِدِيْسِ شَبِ مِيْنِ اِنْ خُوْشَى كِهَانَ كِهَامِي

I shall become a candle in the night, being burnt by that delight. Sh. Khambh. I, Epil. 3.

صُوْرَتَ سُوْنَهْ كِهَانَ كِيْسِ چِتَ چَرِي

By the beauty of (his) face I was made mad in (my) mind. Sh. Suh. IX, 8.

Chapter V.

Pronouns.

I. Personal pronouns.

§. 72.

1) The personal pronouns are generally not expressed, being implied in the inflexional terminations of the verb. They are therefore only used either for the sake of perspicuity or for the sake of emphasis¹⁾ or contrast. In poetry a personal pronoun is often omitted,

1) Commonly with the emphatic *i* (ĩ) or *hi*, *hĩ*.

where we should expect one, and must then be supplied from the context.

On the whole the personal pronouns precede the verb, to which they belong, but they may also follow it, especially in poetry.

آنئون هيڪلي حَبِ مِينِ نَ مُونِ مِٽَرُ نَ ڪَڪُو

I am alone on the Hab, I have no friend nor brother. Sh. Suh. II, Epil. 2.

وَرِيٽِيُون بهِ وَرُو آَن نَ وَرَنَدِيسِ وَرَ رِي

Ye married women also return! I shall not return without (my) husband. Sh. Ābirī IV, 9.

وَجُو سَبِهَ موٽِي اُرينَ جي وَرَنِ وَاريُون

Go again ye all, who have husbands! Ibid. IV, 9.

مُونِهين ڪهي مَارِيَن مُونِهين سَنَدَا ڏُڪهڙَا

Even me kill my own pains.

2) The Genitives جو مُنهن and تِنهن جو my, thy, are possessive adjectives in the Nominative and inflected accordingly. In poetry the case-sign جو is frequently dropped, but then the forms مُونِ and تُو must be employed. Instead of the possessive adjectives the pronominal suffixes attached to nouns (verbs and postpositions) or to سَندو (cf. §. 40, 2) may also be used, and in certain cases جو پنهن, see §. 77.

The Genitive of the personal pronoun of the I and II pers. Sing. and Plur. (Lat. mei, tui etc.) is expressed by the Formative جي مُنهن جي, تِنهن etc., which is also used before such postpositions, as require جي, cf. §. 58, II.

هِنَثُون مَنُهَن جُو هَت تِهَتُو هِت مِتي ۽ مَانُه

My heart is fixed there, here is (only) earth and flesh. Sh. Um. Mār. VI, 16.

مُون كَهَر مُون پَرِين جِي اَچَن جُو وَارُو

It is my friend's turn to come to my house. Sh. Kambh. I, 9.

تُو چيڏا تُو يَار لَهَرِن لَوَهَارَا كِيا

Thy companions, thy friends have been carried down the river by the waves. Sh. Surāg. VI, 6.

چيڪُو پُتَر جَان دِهِي ڪهي مُون ڪهان ڪهنو ڪهرندو سو

مَنُهَن جِي جُوڳ نَ آهي

Whoever loves son or daughter more than me, is not worthy of me. Matth. 10, 37.

اَچَ مَنُهَن جِي پُئون هَل

Come, walk after me, i. e. follow me. Ibid. 19, 21.

3) مَنُهَن جُو and تَنُهَن جُو are also used substantively, especially in the Plural, in the sense of: my, thy people or friends.

اُڪَنڏَه مُون اِپَار شَال مَنُهَن جَا موڙيا

I have a very great longing; would that my (friends) had returned! Sh. Sām. II, 17.

4) The Accusative of the personal pronouns must always be marked by the postposition ڪهي, which in poetry however is frequently dropped. But if in a sentence a Dative and Accusative of a personal pronoun (or pronoun of the III pers.) should occur, the Dative takes the postposition ڪهي as well as the Accusative;

constructions of this kind are however avoided, whenever possible.¹⁾

مُون ڪهي مُون حَبِيبَ طَعْنُوڻِي تَنُهَن جُو

(To =) Upon me (is) thy reproach, o my friend!
Sh. Mūm. Rānō II, 14.

ڪَاڪِئَان وَڻِجُ مَه ڪِيڏَهِيَن رَاڻَا تُو نَه رِهَاه

Go not away from Kāk anywhere, o Rānō, it is not right for thee. Sh. Mūm. Rānō I, Epil.

اَوَهَان ڪهي بَهتَ نَه تِهِي ڇَهڏِي * تُون مَه بَهجُ

Bhita does not give you up, and thou do not run away! Life of Abd-ul-Latīf, p. 21.

3) When the personal pronouns are accompanied by an attribute in the inflected case, they must precede it in the Formative.

ڪِر ڪُو بهيرو ڪانده مُون نِمَائِي جِي ڇَهري

Make some turn, o husband, to the hut of me, the lowly one! Sh. Dāharu III, 1.

وُو مُون نِمَائِي تَان ڪِي نَه ڇِيُو

Woe, by me the humble one nothing was then said! Sh. Dēsī IV, Epil.

ڏيندا مُون ڏُڪهي ڪهي آلَہ لَکِ اُھنجَان

They will give to me the afflicted a sign, for God's sake. Sh. Kōh. III, Epil.

1) This may be done easily by a passive construction, as:

مُون اَوَهَان ڪهي هِن جِي هَنه بَخَش ڪِئُو

I have presented you into his hands, i. e. made a present of you to him. Amulu Mān. p. 148.

§. 73.

II. Demonstrative pronouns.

1) There is no personal pronoun of the III pers. (Singular and Plural) in Sindhī, its place being generally supplied by the demonstrative **هُوَ** that, he, she; but if a distinction between a nearer and a more distant object is to be made, the demonstrative pronoun **هِي** this¹⁾, is referred to the object near at hand, and **هُوَ** to the more distant one. When the subject (or object) of the sentence immediately preceding is to be taken up again by a pronoun, the demonstrative pronoun **سُو**²⁾ is used.

جَلِيھِن ڪِنِڪَ اَنَ جِي مَرَنَ جِي اَنَ جِي ڪَنَ ٿِي رَسي

When the groan of her dying came upon her ear.
Sindhī Read. B. p. 64.

تُون مَرَسُ اَنهِيَن هُوَ مِهري

Thou art a man, she a woman. Amulu Mān., p. 147.

هَن ڪهي رَاتِ رُوڄَ مِين هِي ٽها بهائِن هِي

That one has in his mind (the word) 'night', these ones think this. Maj. 34.

1) **هِي** is also used idiomatically in the following way:

نَ تَه هِي مُلڪَ هِي تُون

Otherwise this is the kingdom, this thou, i. e. I will have nothing to do with the kingdom nor with thee. Amulu Mān. p. 141.

2) The demonstrative pronoun **سُو**, when joined to a personal pronoun, signifies 'therefore'; as:

عَمَرِ سَا اَنئون ڪينئِي پَتَ پَهريَان سُوَمَرَا

O Umar of the Sumirō clan, therefore how shall I put on silk?
Sh. Um. Māru VII, 6.

تو ڪهي ڏيو نرلڪهو هار ڏنڙ سو به مرن جهڙي هتھ مڻن ڪنڙ

The Dēv has given thee a necklace of nine lakhs; that also I snatched away and took to hands. Amulu Mān. p. 147.

هي مڙڙي مينهنون منجهانئس تهيون آهن سي پنهن

جيون وڻھ

All these buffaloes have come out of it (= were born); take them as thy own. Sindhī Read. B. p. 61.

2) The demonstrative pronoun اهو, this very, refers emphatically either to an object near at hand, or just mentioned or immediately following, and اُهو that very to a more remote or afore mentioned one. اجهو this here, and اُجهو that there, are only used in a local sense.

جيڪڏهن اها مال ڪن جو بادشاهه ٻنڌهندو

If ever this very (just mentioned) word the king of the mice shall hear. Sindhī Read. B. p. 63.

اها ته منهن جي بهين آهي

That very one then is my sister. Amulu Mān. p. 149.

3) In the Accusative the demonstrative pronouns commonly take the postposition ڪهي, if they refer to persons (or animate beings generally) which are to be rendered more prominent; but if there be no stress laid on the demonstrative, the uninflected form of it is used. If the demonstratives refer to things or if they precede adjectively another noun in the uninflected form, they remain uninflected in the Accusative, if the postposition ڪهي be not required for reasons stated at §. 69, 3.

تَنهِن هِننِ كهِي ڏسي كهَنِي دَرُ پَاتو

She, having seen these, locked the door. Amulu Mān. p. 149.

جَدِهِن هُو لَهو تَه مَن كهِي اچي خَبَر ڏجو

When you find it, come and give me intelligence. Matth. 2, 8.

پوءِ اهو آن ڏسنديس تَه تو كهِي ٻانهِي ڏٺاري موڪليندِيس

Then I shall see that, (and) then send to you a slave-girl. Amulu Mān. p. 150.

هي وَنَ تَه لَهَنڌاءِ هُو وَنَ اڏانِهين كهَنآ

These trees you will not obtain; those trees there (are) many.

§. 74.

III. The relative and correlative pronoun.

1) The relative pronoun¹⁾ in Sindhī is جو, who, which, and the correlative سو that, which usually takes up the relative. Besides the relative جو, the indefinite pronouns جوڪو, جيڪو whosoever, جيڪي whatsoever may also correspond to the following correlative سو. The place of the relative pronoun may also be taken up by a relative adverb. Instead of the correlative سو a demonstrative may be used, if the stress be laid upon it.

The sentence headed by the relative pronoun may either precede or follow that commenced by the correlative سو, according to the emphasis laid on either

1) The relative جو, when followed by a personal pronoun in the same sentence, signifies 'as' (Lat. quippe qui)

حَيَفُ مُنهن جي حَالِ كهِي جا بجهِي آئون بيگار

Woe to my state, as I am bad and useless! Maj. 756.

pronoun; for the sake of emphasis the correlatives may be repeated.

When the relative (and correlative) refers to a pronoun of the I or II person, the verb of the relative sentence is usually in the III person, and not in the I or II person.

In poetry either pronoun may be dropped.

جَنهن ڪِڍي ٻلي هوڳارڻو سو پُن بهجي وڻو

That, which shouted: a coward (is) the cat, ran also away. Sindhī Read. B. p. 64.

جي تون ٿيٽ بهائين سي آيتون آهين

Those, which thou considerest as verses, are signs. Sh. Suh. IX, 6.

سَنگي تهينده سو چيڪي جپيندين جگديس ڪهي

That will be a companion to thee, whatever thou prayest to the Lord of the world. Mēnghō 8.

سوڻي سانيه منهن جو ساجن جت سندوم

That is my native country, where my sweetheart (is). Maj. 86.

لاهيان جي نه چتان آلا ان م وسران

May I not be forgotten by them, whom I do not drop out of (my) mind. Sh. Sām. II, 4.

جي جي ون چنڪو پهڻ نه تها ڏنن سي سي وڌهي باه

مين تها وجهجن

Those trees, which give no good fruit, are cut off (and) thrown into the fire. Matth. 7, 19.

ان جا جهڏي جهڙين سا ڪم رسندي ڪيني

I, who is (= am) given up in the mountains, how shall she (= I) arrive at Kēc? Sh. Dēsī, III, Epil.

2) The relative pronoun (and, as the case may be, the correlative) usually precedes the substantive, to which it refers, but the relative may also follow, if the substantive has one or more attributes. The subject of a sentence is frequently first expressed by a demonstrative pronoun, and then taken up by the relative and correlative, to render it more prominent.

جَا ٻلي پَنهن جي ٻارَ ڪهي تهي ڪهاڻي سا کڻي ڪهي
کڏهيڻ ڇهڏيندي

Which cat (= a cat that) eats her own young one, will that ever give up a mouse? *Sindhī Read. B. p. 53.*

سو سوڏوڻي ڇهڏ جنهن جواهر ناهي ڪو

Give up that traffic, in which there is no jewel. *Sh. Surāg. IV, 8.*

فقير جو ڀڄناڻي وارو هو تنهن ڪهي خبر پئجي ويئي

The faqīr, who was powerful (in magic), to him information was brought. *Amulu Mān. p. 147.*

ڏڙڏ ديوانو دھاريو جو پرڏيھي پڙهي

سو تنهن جي دھي سين ڪهلڻو هته هني

A mad, strange thief, a foreigner, who reads (studies), Shakes laughing hands with thy daughter. *Maj. 240, 241.*

هو جي وڏا وير وريام سي سڪهنا وٺا سنسار مون

Those, who were great men (and) warriors, went destitute out of the world. *Menghō 4.*

4) The relative and correlative pronoun may in the same sentence be subject and object, so that the sentence is doubly correlative, the object, if a pronoun of the III person, being likewise expressed by the relative and correlative.

جِي جَن جَا سِيگَرُو سِي ميڙين ڪهي تَن

For whom they are longing, with them join them.
Maj. 203.

سُو وَڙ سِيئي ڪن جو وَڙ جُڙي جَن سَن

That kindness they bestow, which is bestowed on them. Sh. Surāḡ. IV, 4.

5) In the first member of a correlative sentence (or, as it may be, in the second) سُو جو is occasionally used instead of the simple relative جو, which is then taken up again by a following correlative.

تَن جَنهين جي تانگهه سِي سَجَن هليا سَپهر

Those friends, who are wanted, have gone on a journey. Sh. Sam. I, 24.

سِي قَادَرِ ايندا ڪڏهين تَن جَن جي تات

O Almighty, will those ever come, of whom the discourse is? Maj. 457.

6) With the correlative adverbs the correlative pronouns and adjectives may be joined in the same sentence.

وَحدُه لا شَرِيڪَ لَه جَدِهين چيو جَن

تَن مَنجُو مُحَمَّدُ ڪارَني هيڪان سَن هِنَن

تَدِهين مَنجَهان اِن اوتَر ڪنهيَن نَ اولئو

When those, who said: he is alone (God), he has no partner,

Respect Muhammad, the intercessor, out of love with their hearts,

Then (none) out of them was entangled in a place, where there is no landing. Sh. Kal. I, 3.

جتي چيتريون لکھيون لوھ قلم مين
تتي ٻيتريون کھڙيون کھارن آيون

Where so many hours are written in fate,
There so many have come to pass. Sh. Mas. V, 9.

7) The correlative adjectives and adverbs (cf. §. 38, 2), when placed after each other, imply an indefinite sense. The same is the case, if a relative be joined with an interrogative.

ٻلي کئن منجهان چيترا کيترا سرهائي سان کهاڻي ويئي

The cat, having eaten some (a number) of the mice with delight, went off. Sindhī Read. B. p. 64.

پاتشاهزادي جيئن ٿئين ڇٽ ٻنڊهي دل وڙهي گدھائين

The princess, having enticed him somehow, having gained (his) heart, drew him out (i. e. got the secret from him). Amulu Mān. p. 147.

§. 75.

IV. The interrogative pronouns.

1) کير who? is applied to persons and ڇها and ڪوھ what? to things only; these three pronouns are used absolutely and not joined adjectively to another noun¹⁾; in which case the interrogative adjectives ڪيھڙو, ڪيھڙو, ڪيھڙو which? and ڪيھڙو of what kind? are to be employed.

¹⁾ کير is occasionally joined adjectively to a noun in poetry, as:

ڪير مڃون ڪرھ تي بانگو بلا جي

Which hero shall we send to the combat of the snake? Story of the snake v. 59.

The interrogative pronouns are not only used in direct interrogatory sentences but also in indirect interrogatory ones, when the governing sentence contains a negation; but if the governing sentence be positive, the relative *جو* is preferred. The same rule applies to the interrogative adjectives and adverbs.

پڪي سُدھ نہ آتھم تہ کير آھي

I do not know exactly, who it is. Life of Abd-ul-Latif, p. 13.

آن به آوھان ڪھي نہ تھو چوان کيرھي حڪم سان ھي
تھو ڪريان

I also do not tell you, by what order I do this. Matth. 21, 26.

آن بہ چوندؤ سائو جنھن حڪم سان ھي تھو ڪريان

I shall also tell you, by what order I do this. Matth. 21, 24.

2) The interrogative pronouns (adjectives and adverbs) are frequently used, where a negative answer is expected.

تسنت قيد ڪياس نہ تہ کير اچي هن ڪوٽ مين

By fate I have been put into prison; otherwise who would come into this fort? Sh. Um. Mār. I, 8.

§. 76.

V. The indefinite pronouns.

1) *ڪو* some one, any one, when standing by itself, is applied to animate beings and *ڪي* to things only; but when *ڪو* is used adjectively, it may be joined to any noun; similarly *ڪي* also may be put before nouns, when a part or quantity is to be expressed, cf. §. 61, 3.

ڪم نہ ايندءَ ڪو بڻو پنهنجي پوکهڻي ري

Nothing else will be of use to thee, except what thou hast sown thyself. Mēnghō 10.

2) ڪو is now and then added to a personal pronoun (expressed or only implied in the inflexional termination of the verb) in an interrogative or negative sentence, for the sake of emphasis, with nearly the same sense as ڪي.

جهڏي تون ڪو جهڙين ويندين هوت نہ بهائيم هيئي

Wilt thou, having forsaken (me) go at all to the mountains? O lover, I did not think thus. Sh. Dēsi, III, Epil.

3) When ڪو is repeated in the next sentence, it signifies: one—another.

ڪو چوي پيس جن جسي مين ڪو چئي عقل پهرئوس

One says: a demon has fallen into (his) body; another says: his understanding is upset. Maj. 40.

§. 77.

The reflexive pronoun.

1) The reflexive pronoun پان (Sing. and Plur.) 'self', always refers to the subject of the sentence (expressed or only understood); somewhat intricate is the use of its Genitive, the reflexive pronominal adjective جو پنهنجي 'own'. When the subject of the sentence is a pronoun of the I and II person (expressed or only implied in the verb), its application is clear enough; but when the subject is of the III person (or any noun), the question arises, whether the possessive pronouns 'his', 'her' etc. refer to the chief subject of the sentence (Lat. suus), or to

some other subject (Lat. ejus etc.); in the first case the reflexive pronoun must be employed, in the latter a demonstrative.

انهي ڪهيگاري وڌي آدهر بهارو سان گڏجي پان مين ويٺها

Having risen (and) greeted (and) having met with great respect (and) politeness they sat amongst themselves. Life of Abd-ul-Latīf, p. 36.

نرمَلِ نِظارو پيئي پَسايو پَنهن جو

O pure friend, show thy face! Sh. Sōr. I, 10.

پَنهن جن پيلن سودهو منجه خدمت شاهه صاحب جي

اچي حاضر تهئو

Having come with his (own) servants to the service of Shāh Sāhib, he was present. Life of Abd-ul-Latīf, p. 31.

ان بهائي ان جي سنجائن تي اچرچ ڪري پڇهائينس

That wealthy one, marvelling at his (the other's) recognising her, asked him. Sindhī Read. B. p. 61.

2) In addressing a person the reflexive pronominal adjective جو پَنهن is now and then used (like the Hindūstānī کَا آپ etc.), instead of the peculiar pronoun, that would be required, as: سائين هي پَنهن جو مال آهي, master, this is your property, which under certain circumstances could also be translated: master, this is our property, when the spaker includes himself, as:

گڏهي منجو موش کي پَنهن جي ڏيهه دوار

Send forth some mice of our country and land. Story of the mice and the cat, v. 35.

3) The reflexive pronominal adjective جو پڻهن may also refer to the object (noun with postp., or Dat. and Acc.) immediately following.

پُٽُ پڻهن جي پي سَن دهِي پڻهن جي ماءُ سَن ڊيڙهاين
آيو آهيان

I am come to make quarrel the son with his father, the daughter with her mother. Matth. 10, 35.

4) When the subject of a sentence is a noun with a possessive pronoun, the peculiar possessive pronoun (if such occur with a noun) must be used and not جو پڻهن, because the use of جو پڻهن would give quite a different sense. Similarly when the subject of a sentence is a personal pronoun and when in the next sentence, joined to the preceding by a conjunctive particle, a noun with a possessive pronoun occurs, the peculiar pronoun must be used for the reasons stated above.

ڪو مُنهن جو مُنهن جي مُلڪ مين هجي پهلوان

(If) there would be in my kingdom some hero of mine. Story of Shamsādu, v. 40.

آئون حڪمي ماڙهون آهيان ۽ مُنهن جي هتھ هيتھ
سپاهي آهيان

I am a man under authority and under my hands are soldiers. Matth. 8, 9.

5) The subject, to which جو پڻهن refers, must occasionally be gathered from the context; but when thus used without a clear subject, to which it may be referred, it generally implies the I person (Singular or Plural).

ڏيھ پَنھن جي ڪُھرن ڏور تھي وڃي ڪنھڻين کي ڦسَٽَ

Having removed far from our country may our lot be made any where! Story of the cat and mice, v. 20.

6) پَنھن جو is also used substantively, signifying my, thy etc. property, friends or people.

پَنھن جو وٺُھ ۽ وڃُ

Take what is thine and go. Matth. 20, 14.

SECTION II.

THE VERB.

Chapter VI.

§. 78.

The Infinitive.

1) The Infinitive as well of neuter as of active (causative) verbs is treated in Sindhi as a regular substantive. The complement (object), which is required by an active verb, is subordinated to the Infinitive either by the Genitive or by the Accusative in its uninflected form, or governed by the postposition ڪھي.

جِنُ جَتَ دھَاران مَعْدُورِ جو مَسَ تھي

The living (= life) of the disappointed one gets on with difficulty without the Jat. Sh. Ābirī V, 9.

مُغَل تَرَارُون ڪھڻي شَاه جي مارَن لاءِ آيا

The Mughals, having taken their swords, came to kill the Shāh. Life of Abd-ul-Latīf, p. 15.

سُورَى چَرَهَن سِجَ پَسَن اِيٲى كَمَ عَاشِقَن

To ascent the impaling stake, to see the (nuptial) bed, this is the business of the lovers. Sh. Kal. II, 8.

تَنَهَن كَهِي مُرَهِين جَهْكِ مَنجِه رَكَهَن جَوُ نَاهِي

It is by no means proper to put that into the house. Sindhī Read. B. p. 65.

2) The Infinitive is added as an expletive object to the verbs *دِئَن* to give leave, *جَهْدَن* to let go or allow, *كَهَرَن* to desire, and partly also to *سَكَهَن* to be able. But when the verb, which subordinates an Infinitive, requires an object (Accus.), it puts the same in the Accusative, according to the signification of the finite verb.

لُڙَكَ نَ لِكَهَن دِئِنِ كِرَتُو پُونِ قَلَمَ تِي

Tears don't let me write (lit. give no writing); dropping they fall upon the pen. Sh. Um. Mār. II, 9.

مُغَلَّ شَاهَه صَاحِبَ كَهِي اَجَنُ نَ دِئِنْدَا هُٲَا

The Mughals did not allow the Shāh Sāhib to come (lit. gave him no coming). Life of Abd-ul-Latīf, p. 15.

نَرُ پَكِهِي وَهَنُ نَ تَهِيُونِ جَهْدِينِ

They do not allow a male bird to sit down. Amulu Mān. p. 141.

اَنهِي كَهِي كَهَنَنِ نَبِيْنِ ۞ دَهَرَمِيْنِ دِسَنُ كَهَرِيُو هُو

Many prophets and pious people had wished to see this very (sight). Matth. 13, 17.

3) The Infinitive may also be turned into an adjective by the accession of the Genitive case-sign *جُو*. In this case the Infinitive itself is strictly treated as a

substantive, as regards its government, and جو is nearly used in the same sense as جهو or جهڙو, cf. §. 67, 11.

پَر مَنگَر ٿِي ٿِي ڪِي ڪِي ڏِ هُو

But he was not of the eating of the crocodiles, i. e. he was not destined to be eaten by the crocodiles. Story of Rāe Diācu p. 1.

هيءَ ڪالھ ڏيکي چڙچي ۽ ڏِ تهنن جي آهي

This word is mere joke and impossible.

Chapter VII.

§. 79.

The Gerundive.

1) The Sindhi derives from the Infinitive of active verbs a regular Gerundive or participle future passive (cf. §. 8, 12, b; §. 46), which agrees with its subject in gender and number, except the construction be rendered impersonal by the use of the postposition ڪهي, cf. §. 94, 5. The agent is put in the Dative (like in Latin) or expressed by a pronominal suffix.

تو ڪهي جي ڪو فرياد ڪرڻو هئي سو تون آچي ڪر

If by thee some complaint is to be made, come and make it. Amulu Mān. p. 150.

مون ڪهان جيڪي تو ڪهي پائڻو آهي سو خيرات آهي

Whatever thou hast to get from me, that is alms (i. e. given in alms). Matth. 15, 5.

هاني جيڪي چوڻو هئي چو

Now, whatever thou hast to say, say. Amulu Mān. p. 143.

2) But when the construction is rendered impersonal by the use of **ڪهي** or when a Dative occurs in a sentence, the agent must be expressed by the Instrumental, to avoid the double use of **ڪهي**.

هِن ڪهڙي ڪهي تُو جهلنو هو

Thou shouldst have seized this horse.

جو تُو ڪهي مون لهنو آهي سو ڏينم

What is to be got by me as regards thee (i. e. from thee), give that to me. Matth. 18, 28.

Chapter VIII.

The Participles.

§. 80.

I. The participle present.

1) The participle present agrees as a regular adjective with the subject of the finite verb (expressed or implied).

Is it used, when an action is to be described as lasting or continuing, for which purpose it may be repeated.

سڄي شهر جو شل ڪري ڪهنڊا ڪهنڊا پاڻ شاهه جي

ڪهڻين مين آيا

Having made the tour of the whole city they came, wandering, wandering to the lanes of the king. Amulu Mān. p. 140.

متهن ٿيڪ ٿيڪڙا چنڪهنڊا اچن

Upon them (i. e. on their heads) are (large) baskets and (small) baskets; groaning they come. Sh. Um. Mār. VI, 12.

2) The participle present is very frequently used in the Locative Sing., terminating in *ē*, or with the emphatic *ī* or *hī*, in *ēī* and *ēhī*¹⁾, to express an action coinciding with what the finite verb declares.

As regards the subject of the present participle, Loc., it is either the same, as that of the finite verb, or it may refer to another noun in the sentence (Genitive, Dative, Accusative etc., usually expressed by a pronominal suffix), or it may not be expressed at all, to be gathered from the context.

When the subject of the present participle Loc. differs from that of the finite verb, it is added in the Formative; the same is the case, if an attribute be joined to the subject (expressed or only understood) of the present participle. But if the Locative of the present participle requires a complement (an object), it is constructed according to the common rules.

ايندي ويندي هي حرف چوندو هو

In coming and going he used to say these words.
Life of Abd-ul-Lāṭif, p. 47.

بکہ مرندی بکھیا کنهن کھان کی نہ کھرن

Dying of hunger they ask not from any one alms.
Sh. Ramak. VII, 7.

ڈوریندی منجھ ڈونگرین ماڑھون کو مڑٹوس

Whilst searching about in the mountains some man met him. Maj. 122.

تان کھینڈیٹی خُاری چرٹو تھس چٹ

Then whilst eating her mind became drunk (and) mad. Maj. 178.

1) Occasionally *ēhī* is shortened to *ahī*, as: سَینِندِہی instead of سَینِندِہی.

جُٻَٽِي جِي جُوءَ ۽ چَهُوڪَرَن ڪَهي ڪَهرَ مَنجِهَ هُوندي پُن
ڪَهرَ مِين نَ جَانِجَ

The wife and children of a gambler, (although) being in the house, do not consider as in the house. Sindhī Read. B. p. 52.

پَسَندي پَر ڪَهي ڏُڪَہ سَبَہ ڏور تَهَن

In seeing the friend all (their) pains are removed. Maj. 818.

مَيُو تُون مَوٽَآءُ مُون ڏُوندي رَاتِ وَهَآءُ

Turn thou back the camel; pass the night, whilst I am weeping. Sh. Mūm. Rānō I, Epil.

§. 81.

II. The participle past.

1) The past participle of neuter verbs agrees with its subject in gender, number and case; the form in 'alu' is used, when the participle passes more into an adjective. The past participle of active and causal verbs (implying always a passive sense) agrees likewise with its subject in gender, number and case, except the construction be rendered impersonal by the use of the postposition ڪَهي (cf. §. 94, 5).

2) The past participle of active (and partly also of neuter) verbs with a passive signification, is used also substantively, cf. §. 62, 2, and may therefore be constructed with a postposition.

چَارِيَن جُ چِيُو ڪَري قَاصِي تَهَتُو تَهَارَ

The Qāzī, having done the word (= what was said) of the scouts, became a tyrant. Maj. 296.

بِهَکِي پَنجَانَاءَ پَدَمَانِثِي پَرِي تَهَنُو

After being broken it became beyond (= more) a thousand billions. Sh. Surāg. IV, 17.

3) The past participle of neuter and active verbs is frequently used in the Locative Singular (cf. §. 80, 2); if the subject of the past participle do not differ from that of the finite verb, it is not expressed, but if it do differ, it is added in the Formative. But the subject of the past participle may also refer to a more distant object, or it may not be expressed at all, in which case the Locative is used absolutely. The impersonal construction of the past participle by means of the post-position کهي is also retained, though the participle be put in the Locative.

The past participle in the Locative is used substantively, but nouns, depending thereupon, are idiomatically only put in the Formative, and not subordinated by the inflected Genitive case-sign جي.

اچي عَزْرَائِيلَ سَتِي جَاگائي سَسِي

By Azrāil having come, Sasuī was awakened whilst sleeping, i. e. in the state of being asleep. Sh. Ābiri VIII, 5.

اَلَا اَچِن اَوْدَ جَنِ اَتِي مَنُ سَرَهَوُ تَهِي

O God, may those come, by whose coming (my) heart becomes glad. Sh. Dēsi III, 5.

مُون اَبَتَهِي هَلِئَا بَنَدَرِ جِي تَرَن

Whilst I stood upright, they went to the landing-places of the harbour. Sh. Sām. II, 2.

وِيَجَنِ وَيَتَهِيئِي دُوسُ پِيهِي دَرِ آئِيو

Whilst the physicians were seated (lit. in the state of the physicians being seated), the friend entering came to (my) door. Sh. Jam. Kal. II, 10.

آڪرَ چُهتہي ھيڪڙي بھون جي نہ بڻجھن

Those, who do not understand much, after one letter has been touched. Sh. Jam. Kal. V, 29.

ڏٺهي ڏوتھڙن کهي تھڙم ڏينھ ڪھڻا

Since I have seen the *Ḍōthīs*, many days have passed to me (lit. In the being seen the *Ḍōthīs*). Golden Alphabet XXVIII, 2.

ويٺهي جنهن وٽ ڏڪھندو ڏاڏھو تھي

Sitting near whom the pain becomes intense. Sh. Jam. Kal. VIII, 25.

ڪھادي جنھين ڪھت تھي آچن اوچھارا

Which being eaten coughing arises, vomiting comes on. Golden Alphab. XVIII, 10.

§. 82.

III. The past conjunctive participles.

The past conjunctive participles (cf. §. 47) very greatly facilitate the conjunction of the different members of a compound sentence and are therefore very extensively in use. They are translated according to the tense of the finite verb.

1) The past conjunctive participles commonly refer to the subject of the finite verb; and in a passive construction, to the agent (Instrumental); but when to the past conjunctive participle of تھڻن an attribute is added, it must remain in the Nominative, though the subject (agent) referred to be in the Instrumental.

مٿ مين وجھي ھتھيگا ڪري سانڌھي رکھ

Having thrown (them) into the jar, having secured (them) take care (of them). Life of Abd-ul-Latīf, p. 11.

مَرِي رَهَنَدِين جَنَّا اَسَاڄِي اَنجَ

Thou wilt go to die, Majnō, being dried up by thirst. Maj. 407.

دِيسَان دِيو كَهَنِي كَرِي مُون كَهِي نِئُو اَهَرَمَن

The Dēv Ahriman having taken me from the country carried me off. Ajāib v. 119.

تَذَهَن سَدُّ سُنِي سَرَهِي تَهِي چِت مِين چِيَانَتِين

Then having heard the call, having become glad in (her) heart, she said. Maj. 702.

2) The past conjunctive participles may refer also to the object (Dative, Accusative) in a sentence, and in a passive construction one past conj. participle may refer to the agent (Instrumental) and another to the subject.

سَجَن جِي سَارِين تَن رُوِيُو وَهَامِي رَاتَرِي

To them, who remember (their) friends, the night passes in weeping. Sh. Jam. Kal. I, 18.

تَرْسِي طَبِيبَن چِيَتَهِي هُونَد چَنگَا كِيَا

Having tarried they would possibly have been cured by the physicians having applied plaster. Sh. Jam. Kal. II, 5.

3) In an impersonal (neuter) or passive construction the past conjunctive participles may be used absolutely, without any reference to a subject, which must be gathered from the context.

رَات وَهَانِي رُنَج مِين اَجِي مَآي تَنَهِين

The night was passed (by her) in the desert, having come to that very place. Maj. 745.

اَنَ جِي پاڇهيَ كهِي ميڙي پي هندِه نِنُ چَنڪو آهي

Having collected the remnant of the grain, it is good (for me) to carry it to another place. Sindhī Read. B. p. 56.

هُنَ كهِي • سَنَدَسِ جَال • بَارَنِ كهِي • جيڪي اَنَهَسِ

تَنهن سَبَهَ كهِي وِڪِنِي قَرُضَ پاڙجي

Having sold him and his wife and his children and whatever he has, the debt shall be paid (scil. by you). Matth. 18, 24.

ڪوهُ ڪيُو كهِي تَن سَجي سَنائي مَلاهَڙي

What shall be done to them, having made them hear the whole matter? Sh. Jam. Kal. V, 29.

4) The past conj. participles are also now and then used in the sense of the Latin Ablative absolute, when the subject of the finite verb differs from that of the past conj. participle. But constructions of this kind are rather exceptions.

اِنِي پَرِ مِرَڙِي بَلِيُون مَري پاڇهي ساري موڙتَه مَنجِه بَ

بَلِيُون بَجُون

After all cats had died in this very manner, two cats in the whole town were left alive. Sindhī Read. Book p. 63.

5) Some past conj. participles are used quite adverbially, as: **وَرَاڻِي**, **وَرِي**; **موڙائي**, **موڙي** 'again' (lit. having returned or caused to return); **وَتَهي** with the postposition **ڪَهان** from (lit. taking from); **جَاني** **جُهي** intentionally (lit. having known, understood), or **جَاني** **وَانِي** or **جَاني** **وِينِي** being alliterations.

پرين ونج مہ پرڏيهڙي موٽي چيس ماءُ

Friend, do not go to a foreign country, his mother said again to him. Maj. 83.

هن ڪهڙي ڪهان وڻهي تنهن جي دهئي چنڪي بهلي ٿهي

From that hour her daughter was made whole. Matth. 15, 28.

Chapter IX.

The tenses of the verb.

§. 83.

I. The Present.

1) The Sindhi has two forms for the present tense, one identical with the Potential, to which the inflexional increment ٿو, ٿي etc. is added, the Present indefinite, and the other being compounded with the present participle and the auxiliary verb آهيان etc., the Present definite.

The present tense of the passive voice is formed in the same way as that of the active voice, but its use is very restricted, neuter verbs being substituted wherever possible.

There is also a simple and compound Potential, as well of the active as of the passive voice, to express the idea of the present tense (cf. §. 90).

2) The first form of the Present tense, the Present indefinite, expresses our common Present, i. e. an action begun and still continuing in the present.

The increment ٿو may optionally follow or precede

the verb¹⁾, but when the verb commences a sentence, it is put after it (poëtry excepted). In poëtry تہو is often separated from the verb by some other words, either preceding or following it.

When the negative adverb نہ, 'not', accedes to the verb, نہ immediately precedes تہو, and both the verb²⁾; but in an interrogative sentence, or when a particular stress be laid on the verb, they may as well follow it.

In poëtry تہو is very frequently omitted and the Present indefinite then coincides with the Potential, so that only the context can decide, whether the Present indefinite or Potential is intended. In prose also تہو is dropped, when the interrogative pronoun چہا what? and the adverb جان when, precede the verb.

Instead of the increment تہو the past participle پٹو (from پون to fall) is also used, but with this difference, that a more enduring action is thereby implied.

سَارِئُو سَانِبِهَرَن کھی تھی سَتُون ڈِٹِی سَهَس

Remembering (her) guardians she gives a thousand blows. Story of the cat and mice v. 11.

تہو حُکْمَ هَلَائِی پَانِہن جَا مَالِکِ مُلکِ دِهَی

The king, the Lord of the kingdom, executes his own orders. Ajāib v. 5.

بُنْدَهِنْدَا نہ تہا بُنْدَهَن ء سُبْجَهَن بِ نہ تہا

Hearing they do not hear nor do they understand. Matth. 13, 13.

1) When an interrogative pronoun or adverb, as چہا, چہو etc., occurs in a sentence, it generally attracts تہو.

2) But when in a sentence نہ — نہ neither — nor, occurs, the adverb نہ is put before that noun, on which the stress is laid.

تَن رَنهينِ ويتهيجنِ كهِي رُٿان رانوَڌينهَ

For those rich inhabitants of the jungle I weep nights and days. Sh. Um. Mār. II, 11.

جان ڏسَن تَه هِڪڙي وڏي ڪاري بلا ويتهِي آهي

When they see, one big black snake is seated (there). Life of Abd-ul-Latīf, p. 16.

3) When occurrences are related, as the narrator or person, he speaks of, saw them, the Present is frequently used, in order to transfer the hearer to the scene of action. The same is the case, when the thoughts are given, which somebody had at a time.

جڏهن مُغلنِ شاهه صاحبَ كهِي ڏٺهو تَه ڪهرَ منجه ويتهو آهي

When the Mughals saw the Shāh Sāhib, that he is (= was) sitting in the house. Life of Abd-ul-Latīf, p. 15.

ڇها ڏسي جو ٻارَ ڀڄا چونسِ پننَ منگنَ مينَ راتِ

ڏينھ پهرن تها

What does he see? that his children (and) his wife go night and day about in begging. Sindhi Read. Book, p. 62.

انهي مامي مڪانُ شاهه صاحبَ جو جوڙي ويتها جهو تَه

شاهه صاحبُ هتي آهي

Having there built a shrine of the Shāh Sāhib in that very place they sat down: 'because the Shāh Sāhib is here'. Life of Abd-ul-Latīf, p. 26.

4) The Present is also now and then used for the Future, to signify thereby, that the action will be done forthwith.

تُون هَآئِي آرَامُ كِرِ آسِين تَهَا ڏِسُون

Take thou now rest; we see (i. e. shall see). Amulu Mān. p. 149.

5) The second form of the Present, the Present definite, denotes a lasting or habitual action. The auxiliary is occasionally dropped, especially in sentences of general import.

جيڪو تنهن جي مرضي سارو هلندو سو منهن جو بهاء

* بهين * ماءُ آهي

Whoever is walking according to his will, that is my brother and sister and mother. Matth. 12, 40.

ماڙهون ڏيئي ميهنا مون ڪهي ڪندا ڪوھ

Why are the people giving me reproaches? Sh. Maṣḍ. V, 14.

§. 84.

II. The Imperfect.

The Imperfect denotes a past action, which is incomplete in reference to some other past action. It implies therefore duration, habit or frequent occurrence.

جيڪڏهن شاھ صاحب انهي ڳوٺھ ڏي ويندو هو تہ

مغل سانس وڙهندا ها

Whenever the Shāh Sāhib was going to that very village, the Mughals were quarrelling with him. Life of Abd-ul-Latīf p. 15.

§. 85.

III. The Aorist.

I. The simple Aorist.

The Aorist implies indefinitely, that an action took place in past time. It is therefore commonly used in narrations, where past events are reported irrespectively of their duration. We may therefore translate the Sindhi Aorist either by the Imperfect or Perfect.

The Aorist of neuter verbs has an active meaning; some neuter verbs though (implying a passive sense) may also be constructed with the agent in the Instrumental.

Active verbs are constructed passively in the Aorist (Perfect and Pluperfect), the agent (subject) being put in the Instrumental and the past participle agreeing with the subject (properly the object) in gender, number and case (cf. §. 92, 2), or being constructed impersonally by the use of the postposition *کهي* (cf. §. 94, 5). It is understood, that the Aorist (Perfect and Pluperfect) of the passive voice is also used personally, agreeing with its subject (expressed or implied in the inflexional terminations) in gender and number.

آنئون ستي هوء هليا ڪاهئائئون ڪنواٽ

I was asleep, those went off, they drove away the young camels. Sh. Hus. VI, Epil.

مارئڙن آنئون جيڪس ويس وسري

Perhaps I have been forgotten by the dear Mārūs. Sh. Um. Mār. V, 13.

پاٽ پهرنڙي رات جو گهره پاسي ڪايو

The bard sang the first night at the side of the castle. Sh. Sōr. II, 1:

رُجِن رَات رَهي دُونَكِرَ جَنُهينِ دُورِيا

Who, having remained the night in the deserts, looked out for the mountains. Sh. Khāhōrī I, 3.

هُومَ جي ڪاڪِ ڪُورِيا تَن لَهي ڌ لَلي

Those, who were made tawny by the Kāk (river), the redness does not leave. Sh. Mūm. Rānō II, 4.

2) The compound or habitual Aorist.

The compound Aorist with the indeclinable increment **تهي** denotes in the first instance, that an action was done repeatedly in past time or for any length of time; it is therefore chiefly used, when an occupation, habit or manner is to be described. In the second instance it implies, that an action had been commenced in past time and was still going on at the time mentioned, and in this respect it nearly coincides with the Imperfect, with the only difference, that generally a simple Aorist corresponds to it.

The increment **تهي** is usually put before the verb, but it may also follow it; it may be also separated from the verb by some intervening words, in the same way as **تهو**. Instead of **پيئي، تهي** (the Locative of **پئو** with emphatic *ī*, instead of **پيئي** *piēi*), is also used, which more strictly points out commencement and continuation.

جتي رات تهي پييسِ تتي سُهِي تهي رَهئو

Where the night used to befall him, there he used to sleep. Life of Abd-ul-Latif, p. 21.

ڪارَن قوتَ پنهن جي تهي لکهن ڏنائين لاه

On account of her food she used to make lakhs of jumps. Story of the cat and mice v. 13.

ڪَڪِرا ڪَربَلَا جَا مَادَرِ تَهِي مِيٽِيَّاسِ
پَهٽَن تان رَت پَهڙا عَلِي تَهِي اُگهٽهاسِ

The pebbles of Karbalā his mother was gathering,
;Alī was wiping him away from the wounds the
drops of blood. Sh. Kēd. V, 2.

تَنبُورَ حُجَرَن مِينِ پَانُهين پَانِ مُرَادَا پِٽِي وَڪا مَنجُهائِن
هِي تَنوَارَ پِٽِي آيِي

The drums in the cells went on sounding by them-
selves as they pleased, and from them this tune was
coming. Life of Abd-ul-Latīf, p. 36.

جَدِهِن شَاهُ جَمَالِ پَنهن جِي مَوٽَه ڏِي تَهِي وَتو تَ
پِٽِي ڏينَه شَاهُ صَاحِبُ وَصَالِ ڪِئو. پوءِ جَدِهِن شَاهُ جَمَالِ
شَاهُ صَاحِبَ جِي لَڏاڻِي جِي مَڪالِه بُدِهِي تَدِهِن موٽِي
پَتِهِي تَهِي آيو

When Shāh Jamāl was (as yet) going to his village,
the Shāh Sāhib died on the second day. Then when
Shāh Jamāl heard the message of the removal of the
Shāh Sāhib, he was coming again behind (the mes-
senger). Ibid. p. 6.

§. 86.

IV. The Perfect.



1) The Perfect denotes an action, that is completed
and finished in the past, so that it extends to the
Present.

نَ ڪِي تَهِي جِئان نَ ڪِي مِٽِي اَنهِيان

I do not live at all, nor am I at all dead. Sh.
Hus. IX, 16.

اُتَهَ مَ اڙِي اَن اَنئون ڏاڪهن ڏدهي آنيان

Do not bring near the camels, I have been tormented by the camels. Sh. Dēśī I, 14.

2) The Perfect is occasionally used to represent an action as done already, whereas it is intended or expected, that it will be done forthwith.

پري ڏٺو تہ هائي هلاو تهئو آهي

The fairy saw, that he is (has been) now done for. Amulu Mān. p. 151.

§. 87.

IV. The Pluperfect.

1) The Pluperfect denotes remote past action, which has taken place previous to some other past event mentioned or understood. But in this connexion its use is not strict (as in Latin), the Aorist commonly being employed, where we would expect a Pluperfect.

ڪنهن شهر مين پئو هو ڪڪهن جو ڪال
اهي ماڙهون ڪاهي مال ڪنهن اوسر سان اٿي وئا

In some town there had fallen in a dearth of grass;
Those people drove off their cattle and went away
at (with) some opportunity. Story of the cat
and mice, v. 5. 6.

اهو ويندو هو جي پري چئو هو تڏي ٻانهي جي ڪهڙي

مين ودهائين

As the fairy had told, so she threw that very nose-ring into the jar of the slave-girl. Amulu Mān. p. 150.

اَوَانْ گا ڏٺهي ڏونهيآ هوتنِ وَتِ هُئي

Had you seen (when you were there) some one at the side of (her) sweetheart, o Dōthis? Sh. Hus. VI, Epil. 2.

2) The Pluperfect is frequently used in Sindhī, where we would use an Imperfect or Perfect. When an action is represented, from the point of the speaker, as completely past some time hence, so that its results were already clear at the time mentioned, or when it is implied, that since an action has taken place, something else has happened, that could be said about it, the Pluperfect is used and not the Aorist nor the Perfect. The Sindhī idiom is much more accurate in discerning the different shades of meaning, than the English, and the correct use of this tense requires therefore a careful attention.

هڪڙي ڏينھ شَاهُ جَمَالُ شَاهُ صَاحِبَ وَتِ ويٺو ۽ ٻيا پڻ
ڪهڻا فقيرَ ويٺا هئا

One day Shāh Jamāl sat with the Shāh Sāhib, and also many other faqīrs were sitting (i. e. had seated themselves before). Life of Abd-ul-Latīf, p. 5.

مخدومُ صَاحِبَ ڪهي سُدھ پيئي تہ ميانِ نورِ مُحَمَّدِ شَاهُ
صَاحِبَ جي دَرَسَنَ ڪرَن لاءِ وڻو هو.

Maydūm Sāhib received the intelligence, that Miā Nūr Muhammad had gone (but was no longer there) to have an interview with the Shāh Sāhib. Life of Abd-ul-Latīf, p. 29.

§. 88.

V. The Future and Future Past.

1) The Sindhī has two forms for the Future, the simple or indefinite Future and the Future definite.

The first form corresponds to our common Future and denotes a future action in general, the latter form implies, that the future action will last or endure for some time.

اٿھ چارِبنديسِ اُن جا ميان جهلي مھار

I shall graze their camels, having seized the bridle of the camels. Sh. Hus. IX, Epil.

اُنهي ھڪلُ سُفيدِ ديو وَتِ سَو پريون ٽچنديون ھونديون

At that very time an hundred fairies will be dancing near the Dēv Sufed. Amulu Mān. p. 144.

2) The simple or indefinite Future is used also to denote possibility, inclination or doubt.

پاتِشاھ تو کهي آئون ھڪڙي مڱاھ ڪندسِ

O king, I will speak one word to thee. Amulu Mān. p. 143.

اي چھوگر ڪو ڪھڙو آسان ڪهي ڏيندين

O boy, wilt thou give us a ram? Life of Abd-ul-Latīf, p. 17.

3) The Future indefinite is also used for the Imperative, when an order is not strictly given, but when it is expected, that it will be done spontaneously; it may therefore alternate with the Imperative.

پنھن جي ماءِ پي ڪهي آڌر ڏي * پنھن جي پاڙيسي

ڪهي پاڻ جھڙو ڪھڙندين

Honour thy father and thy mother, and love thy neighbour as thyself. Matth. 19, 19.

4) The past Future is seldom to be met with in the sense of a strict past future action, which should have taken place, before another action will be possible, but it generally implies uncertainty, doubt or possibility in reference to a past action, as: ھو آيو ٿو ٿوندو, he may have come. Instead of the past Future the Aorist is commonly used in Sindhī, especially in conditional sentences; see §. 98, 6.

Chapter X.

The Moods.

§. 89.

I. The Indicative.

The Indicative represents an action or thought as real, and is therefore used, not only when matters of fact are related, but also when suppositions (in conditional sentences) are considered as really taking place (cf. §. 98b, 3). The Sindhī uses consequently the Indicative in such sentences, in which the speaker makes a subjective assertion, which he considers as true and real, whereas in the English idiom the Subjunctive would be used in such cases.

انھي ڪھان ڌريآھ جي سير مين ٻورجن سو چنگو آتھس

It would be better for him, that he were drowned in the depth of the sea. Matth. 18, 6.

§. 90.

II. The Potential.

The Potential is, as stated already, the old Present and expresses therefore only present time; but by means of the present and past participle and the Potential of the auxiliary verb هُونُ, a Potential of the Present definite and Perfect may be formed; these compound forms however are of very rare occurrence.

1) The Potential, in its widest sense, denotes indefiniteness, possibility, uncertainty or doubt.

پوءِ بهائين تھو آئون تو سان گڏ مائي ڪهان

Then, think I, I eat together with thee bread. Amulu Mān. p. 146.

جيڏيئون ڪيندي ڪريان مون ان سين

Companions, how shall I act with (= towards) them? Sh. Ābirī VIII, Epil.

مون ڪهي هي ڪاڏهي نه ڪڏهين

Wilt thou not pull me out this wood? Amulu Mān. p. 148.

سزا ڏننوارن جي هته ڏنائس چيسين هي منهن جو

لهنو سبه پڇائي نه ڏئي

He delivered him into the hand of the tormentors, as long as he shall not repay all, what is due unto me. Matth. 18, 34.

2) The Potential serves also to express a usual or habitual action.

پاني پئو پٽ ڪري سبه سڪائي سر

Drinking the water it makes (it, i. e. the river)

bare ground, it dries up the whole world. Nānga jō Quissō, v. 40.

پاچھائي ڏ پاتريان سرتيون سئي سان

A kingdom I do not compare with (my) needle, o companions! Sh. Um. Mār. VI, 18.

مون سين هلي سا جا جيئي متهوئي ڏ ڪري

That one shall go with me, who does not make (= consider) her life sweet. Sh. Ābiri VI, 2.

3) The Potential is frequently used in the sense of an Optative or polite Imperative, especially for the I. and III. person Singular and Plural.

ميان محبتن ڪهي هادي هوت ملن

O friend, may the lovers obtain (their) sweethearts as guides! Maj. 817.

هتي مبارڪ مڙني ڪهي حاصل ڪم تهئو سا حاج

May there be blessing to all! that our business (and) affair has succeeded. Story of the cat and mice v. 52.

آلا اوڻهي آئين جي نياپا ڏين

O God, mayst thou bring camelmen, who take off messages of love. Sh. Um. Mār. II, 9.

سڪها آئين سڪه مين اها خبر چار

Quickly, with speed, they shall bring this information and intelligence. Story of the cat and mice v. 38.

4) The Potential is used with the Interjections مان, شال would that, with the conjunctions (1) نه, not (prohi-

1) With نه the Potential may also be used, if the injunction be more strict.

bitive), مَتَان, مَعْنِ, جَم may it not be, that, lest; نَ that, جَو, جَان, جِنِ, that, so that, in order that; تَوَزِي although; جِي, جِيكَدِهِن, جِيكَر, if (cf. §. 98 b, 1); and with the adverbs هُونَد, possibly, جَكِيس, perhaps etc., if the sentence be indefinite.

وَيْجَ مَهْ بُكِي دِي اَلَا چَنَكِي مَه تِهَان

O physican, do not give a powder! o God, may I not become well! Sh. Jam. Kal. II, 13.

مَوْتِي مَنگَهَار شَال نَه اچِين كَدِهِين

Would to God, that thou, o beggar, wouldst not come any more. Sh. Sōr. II, 9.

كَاتِ تَه پَرِين قَبُول مِين مَعْنِ پَرِيئِي كَهَتِ

Cut off, that thou mayst be approved, lest loss befall thee. Sh. Kal. II, 17.

اِبْتِين اُتَه اُتَهَاء جِينِي هُونَدِي رَاتِ هِت مِرَان

Thus, o camel, lift up (thy pace), that I may meet there (the friend) in the coming night. Sh. Khamb. II, 15.

اِهَرَو كَو چَهَال دِئُو جَو وَجِي اُنْهِي وَگِي تِي پَتُو

Make some such jump, that ye fall upon that garment. Amulu Mān. p. 150.

دِئِي جَانِ جَبَّار كَهِي هُنَد تِهْتِين پَرِيَان پَار

Having given (thy) soul to the omnipotent, thou mayst possibly be put into the track of (thy) friend. Sh. Surāg. III, Epil.

§. 91.

III. The Imperative.

1) The Imperative is restricted to the II. person Singular and Plural; for the other persons the Potential must be used.

The Imperative has two forms, the Imperative strictly speaking and the Precative (cf. §. 44). The Imperative expresses a command, whereas the Precative implies an exhortation, request or haste.

When a negation accedes to the Imperative, نَ is used to express a strict negation, whereas مَ is used in a prohibitive sense. With the Precative مَ is commonly joined, but نَ may also be employed, if the injunction be more strict.

شِيَهَن چِيُو تُون اَلْكُو نَ كَرِ

The lions said: be thou not anxious. Amulu Mān. p. 151.

سُومَرَا سَاهِي تَنَهِن سَتِي وَجَهْ مَ سَنَكَهَرُون

O Sūmarō, do not throw and tighten chains upon the chaste one! Sh. Um. Mār. III, 9.

آءِ اَوْرَاهُون سِيرِين دُكَهِي دُجِجْ مَ دَاكَهْ

Come near, good friend, do not apply a funeral pyre to the afflicted one! Sh. Ābirī X, 5.

جِيَكِي پَاكُ آهِي سَوُكُنَن كَهِي نَ دِجُو

What is pure do not give to the dogs. Matth. 7, 6.

2) When two Imperatives are joined together by the conjunction **تَـ** or **تَانِ**, the first Imperative is hypothetical.

سِكْهَا مُؤَثِّوْ سِپَرِيْن وَنَجُوْ تَانِ وَرَجَاْهُ

Return quickly, o dear friend, if you mean to go, then return. Maj. 439.

II. THE SYNTHETICAL PART.

CONSTRUCTION OF THE SENTENCE AND CON- JUNCTION OF SENTENCES.

SECTION III.

THE SIMPLE SENTENCE.

Chapter XI.

Subject and Predicate.

§. 61.

In every sentence there must be a subject and a predicate; subject is called that person or thing, of which something is said and predicate that which is said about it.

1) The subject may be expressed either by a substantive or adjective or pronoun or numeral. It is not expressed, if it be a personal pronoun and its predicate a verb, except a stress be laid upon it, as:

آئون تھو ڏسان I see, but ڏسان تھو I see (not you).

The subject must always be in the Nominative.

2) The Predicate may be expressed either by a verb, or adjective (participle), or substantive, or numeral with the auxiliary verbs هون to be and ٿيڻ to become, to be.

The predicate may be joined to the subject in a threefold manner:

a) by way of asssertion, as: ڇيڙي ٿي the girl weeps.

b) by way of interrogation, as: **ڪيڙ آيو** who is come?

c) by way of command (or desire), as: **وڃو** go (thou).

3) The subject and predicate, if they be substantives or pronouns, may be nearer defined by an attribute. The attribute is commonly an adjective, but it may also be a substantive in the Genitive (with or without an adjective, pronoun etc.), on which another noun in the Genitive may depend again, as:

وڏو ماڙھون آيو a great man came

or: **ھي وڏو ماڙھون آھي** this is a great man

ملڪ جو دھني مري وڻو the Lord of the kingdom died

ملڪ جي دھني جو پٽر مري وڻو

the son of the Lord of the kingdom died.

مغرب ملڪ جا ويندا سڀ مري

All the people of the kingdom (of) Maghrib will go to die. Nānga jō Qissō, v. 51.

4) The subject and predicate, if they be proper names, substantives or pronouns, may also be nearer defined by a noun in apposition, as:

چين ولايت ڏور آھي the country (of) China is far off;

ھي شھر ڪراچي آھي this is the city (of) Karācī.

Chapter XII.

Concord of the subject and predicate.

§. 93.

1) If the predicate be a verb, it must agree with its subject in person, gender and number. This rule is strictly adhered to in Sindhī, even in such cases, where the subject in the Singular implies plurality, cf. §. 63, 1. 2. A subject in the Singular however may be constructed with the Plural of the predicate, when spoken of politely or honorifically, cf. §. 63, 3.

ماء پڻي جو چئون آئون ڏهه ٿي موٽايان

I do not reject the word of mother and father. Amul. Mān. p. 142.

اُها پڇهن پر ته ڪٿي محمد ڪارني

Standing the strangers ask: where is Muhammad, the intercessor? Nānga jō Qissō, p. 15.

2) If the predicate be an adjective, participle, pronoun or substantive, from which a feminine may be derived (cf. §. 14), it must agree with its subject in gender, number and case. (In the same way every attribute must agree with its substantive in gender, number and case, whenever possible.)

تنهن جي ڪيرهي مرضي آهي

What is thy pleasure? Amulu Mān. p. 140.

مٿهن هڪڙي ٻانهي لٿي

From above descended a slave-girl. Ibid. p. 140.

سڀني صحابن سي ڏٺا جدا اوه جوان

By all the companions they were seen, those maimed young men. Nānga jō Qissō, v. 17.

ڪا ٻلي ٻارن سانڌهي هئي ڪنهن رنگ وڌي سڀين رس

Some cat was tending her young ones with some great love (and) pleasure. Story of the cat and mice v. 8.

Chapter XIII.

Enlargement of the sentence by a near and remote object.

§. 94.

1) The verb, which refers to the subject as its predicate, has a double form; it is either of the active voice, if the subject be active, or of the passive voice, if the subject be passive.

The active voice of a verb has a treble signification; it is either neuter (intransitive), or active (transitive), or causal. The verb is called neuter, if the action be restricted to the subject, as: هُو تَهو وَڃي he goes; active, if the verb necessarily requires a (near) object or Accusative, as: هُن ڪهي تَهو جهلي he seizes him; and causal, if it requires one or two Accusatives.

2) Neuter verbs commonly subordinate only a remote object or Dative, as: مُون ڪهي نه تَهو وڻي it does not please me; but some neuter verbs may also subordinate a near object (Accus.), as:

رَمِي هَلِئُو سا رَاهَ

He went that way. Ajāib v. 44.

3) Active verbs subordinate a near object (Accus.), and, as the case may be, a remote one (Dative), as: اُن ڪهي مَاني ڏي give him bread. Active verbs may

also subordinate a double Accusative, one implying the near object and the other its attribute. In this case the first object is generally defined by the postposition *کهي* by means of which the construction is rendered impersonal and the concord between the object and its attribute dissolved, so that the attribute remains in the uninflected form of the Singular, though the object, to which it refers, may be a Plural. But both may also remain in the uninflected state (Singular or Plural). Some verbs govern a double Accusative, one of a person, and one of a thing, as *پُڄهن* to ask somebody a thing, though it may also be constructed with the postposition *ڪهان*, to ask from a person, or with *کهي*.

ڪوڙهيئن کهي ستهو ڪڙو

Make the lepers clean. Matth. 10, 3.

جانسين تهی چئان ڪانده نہ ڪنديس ڪو ٻڻو

As long, as I live, I shall not make any other (my) husband. Sh. Um. Mar. VII, 6.

رکيج روزا رمضان جا زر زڪتون ڏيڻ

Keep the fasts of Ramazān, give (thy) wealth as alms. Golden Alphabet 4, 7.

4) Causals, derived from neuter verbs, subordinate a near, and as the case may be, a remote object (§. 69, 6); and causals, derived from active verbs, may subordinate two near objects (a double Accusative), the first generally being defined by the postposition *کهي*, and the second remaining in the uninflected state (§. 69, 5).

وڌي واٽارن کهي ٽون پياري پرکھ

Having made drink the travellers a bowl try (it). Sh. Jam. Kal. IV, 7.

5) Regular passive verbs can only be derived from active or causal verbs; for the passive form, which neuter verbs occasionally assume, does not essentially alter their signification.

In a passive sentence the near object (Accus.) is made the subject, and the subject of the active sentence is turned into the Instrumental¹⁾, the remote object (Dative) keeping its place, as usual. But with the passive Present, Imperfect and Future the Instrumental is not used, the agent being expressed by means of the postposition **کَہاں**, if it cannot be possibly avoided.

Of the passive voice only the past tenses (past participle passive) are in common use, the other tenses being expressed, wherever possible, by a neuter verb.

The past participle (passive) agrees either with its subject in gender, number and case (§. 93, 2), or the construction may be rendered impersonal, the past participle containing at the same time subject and predicate, in which case the (proper) subject of the passive sentence must be subordinated as a remote object by means of the postposition **کَہی**, 'as regards', 'in reference to'.

This impersonal construction must always take place in the passive, when an active verb governs a double Accusative, one implying the near object and the other its attribute. The near object must in this case be subordinated by the postposition **کَہی**, whereas the other object, as the predicate, remains in the uninflected form of the Singular, referring to the (neuter) past participle.

1) In a longer sentence, when the agent is separated by a series of words from the verb, the agent is frequently repeated for the sake of perspicuity, by adding a pronominal suffix, corresponding to the agent, to the verb.

But when a causal verb governs two near objects, the first (implying a person) must be subordinated as remote object by the postposition ڪهي, whereas the second is made the subject, with which the past participle agrees in gender and number.

تِنِي مَاتَرُھو جُو پُٿرُ بِ ھِنِي ڪھان ڏُڪھوڻِيو

Thus also the son of man shall be afflicted by them.
Matth. 17, 12.

مَوْتُ قَبُولِئُو اُن ڏِٺھو جِن ڏُڪھِي ڪھي

Death was agreed to by those, who saw the afflicted one (lit. by whom it was seen as regards the afflicted one). Sh. Maṣḍ. VII, 16.

ڪھڙي سَبَبَ سَقِيمُ ڪِئُو اَوھان ڪھي آزارَ

By what reason (and) disorder have you been made ill? (lit. by what reason and disorder has it been made ill as regards you.) Nānga jō Quissō, v. 24.

پَاتِشَاهَ اَچِي صَيْفَل وَزِيرَ ڪھي اِها سَچِي ڪالِهَ بِنْدھائي

The king, having come, related this whole matter to the Vazīr Saifal. Amulu Mān. p. 142.

Chapter XIV.

Enlargement of the sentence by a nearer definition of the verb as predicate.

§. 95.

The simple sentence may be enlarged to a considerable extent by a nearer definition of the verb as predicate.

1) The verb may be nearer defined by one or more cases, on which again another case may depend, viz.: the Instrumental (agent etc.), the Accusative (of time etc.), the Ablative and the Locative, and by nouns with postpositions generally.

ڪنھين ٿاڻي منجه ڪو ماڙھون ڏرياهه جي ڪپ تي پنھن
جي بھاڱ سان ويٺو هو

At some time one man sat on the bank of the river with his wealth (of buffaloes). Sindhī Reading Book p. 59.

اھو پنھن جي وڏي بھاء ڪھان ھڪڙي ورھ ڪھان پوء
خٽھاب مين وڃڻ لڳو

That one began to go to school one year later than (from) his elder brother. Ibid. p. 50.

2) The verb may be nearer defined by adverbs generally, especially by adverbs of time, place and manner, and by postpositions with pronouns.

مون ڪهي هائي گا مصلحت ڏي

Give me now some advise. Amulu Mān. p. 147.

اينئي اورٿائون پان مين چوڪها مهينا چار

Thus they talked amongst each other four goodly months. Maj. 235.

سو به مون وٽ آهي

This also is with me. Amulu Mān. p. 147.

Chapter XV.

Omission of the verb as predicate.

§. 96.

1) The auxiliary verb *آنهيان* etc., forming the predicate with or without an adjective etc., is occasionally omitted, especially in poetry and in short proverbial sentences.

جَا تُنهن جي مَن مِين سا مُون مَکَال سَناءَ

Let me hear that matter, which (is) in thy heart.
Maj. 45.

اُونهو ڪُهو اُتھين تَنهن جو لَهي نَ تَرُ

There (is) a deep well there; no bottom of that is found. Nānga jō Qissō, v. 38.

ڪِيدي پلو ڪاڻهي ڪِيدي پلو ڪاڻهي

Where (is) the cowardly cat? where (is) the cowardly cat? Sindhī Read. B. p. 62.

2) In sentences, which contain an imprecation or curse, the verb as predicate is generally omitted. In such like sentences the Potential of *پَرَنُ*, to fall, should be supplied, which occasionally is met with.

ڪُهو اَتَن بَن جِيڏِيُون ڏِيَرَانِيُون ڏُتَارَ

May the courtyard (fall) into the well, the companions into the forest, the sisters-in-law into disease! Sh. Suh. IX, Epil. 1.

ڪُهو سِي جِن ڏينھڙا جي پريانِي دھارَ

(May fall) into the well those days of life, which are apart from the friend! Sh. Dēsi VII, Epil.

SECTION IV.

THE COMPOUND SENTENCE.

Two or more sentences may be so joined together, that a compound sentence arises. This is done either by way of coordination or subordination.

Chapter XVI.

I. Coordination of sentences.

§. 97.

1) Two or more sentences may be so joined, that each one remains independant of the other. This is done without or by the copulative, adversative, disjunctive and conclusive particles (cf. §. 59) and by the negative adverb **نَ — نَ** neither — nor.

سَاجِنَ مِيژِيسَ سُوَرُ سَكَهَ نَ مِيژِيسَ سِيرِينِ

The lover was joined to her by pain, the sweetheart was not joined to her by pleasure (= by dint of). Sh. Ābirī VII, 13.

کَهوژَا کَهَنِي هِيْتِه بَنْدَهو ءَ اِهِيَن چَرِهِي هَلَو

Fasten the horses below and go ye up. Amulu Mān. p. 149.

يَا لَنكَهَائِيَن لَطِيْفُ چَپِي يَا دَهْرَانِ كَنِ دَانَهَ

Either they bring them across, says Latīf, or they make a cry from that very spot. Sh. Suh. VIII, 2.

سُدِه اَتَهَم پَر شَاهَ صَاحِبِ مَالِه كَرِن كَهَان جَهَلَتُو آهِي

I know it, but the Shāh Sāhib has forbidden (me) to tell it. Life of Abd-ul-Latīf, p. 44.

2) Sentences are also coordinated by joining together a disjunctive question. In the first member the interrogation is generally not expressed by a particle, but only by the voice of the speaker; in the second (or third) the interrogation is pointed out by the particle کي ki or ڪِ ke.

سَوُ تُونِي اَنهين ڪِ بڻي جي واٽ ڏسُون

Is it thou or shall we look to the way of another?
Matth. 11, 3.

Chapter XVII.

Contraction of coordinate sentences into one;
concord of two and more subjects and
predicates.

§. 98.

1) When two or more sentences have either the same subject or the same predicate or the same object or any other common member of speech, they are contracted into one sentence, with or without a conjunctive particle.

سانئين سلامت سڀرين موٽي محب ملن

O Lord, may (our) dear friends (and) lovers meet (us) again! Nānga jō Qissō v. 81.

جِنَ نہ بھوت پري انھيان آئون انسان

I am not a jinn, demon, fairy, I am a man.
Maĵ. 639.

کيرھو تہ وڌو ٻل ڪہ ويڏي

Which then is greater, the sacrifice or the altar?
Matth. 23, 19.

پَر ڪُوشِ اِها ڪُفتارَ پيئي حَسَنَ مِيرَ حُسَيْنَ ڇي

But this discourse fell into the ear of Mīr Hasan (and) Husain. Nānga jō Qissō v. 75.

2) When there are two or more subjects in a sentence, denoting animate beings, the verb or adjective (with the auxiliary verbs هُونُ and تِهِنُنُ) as predicate is put in the Plural; if the subjects have the same gender, the predicate agrees with them, being put in the Plural, but if they be of various gender, the masculine has the precedence.

When two or more subjects imply things (or ideas), the predicate is either put in the Singular, agreeing commonly with the last subject, or in the Plural. If they be of various gender, the Plural of the masculine or feminine is employed, according as one or the other subject is considered more important.

The same rule holds good, when an attribute (adjective etc.) is referring to nouns of different gender.

نَرُ ۽ مَادِي سِرَجِيَا اَتَهَسِ

A male and female was created by him. Sindhi Read. Book, p. 15.

ماءُ ۽ بهائڙو ٻاهرَ بيٺا آهن

Thy mother and thy brothers stand outside. Matth. 12, 47.

هِنَ ڏهندَھ مِينِ پاڻِي ۽ ڇڄي تِهِندي

In this pond there will be water and fish. Life of Abd-ul-Latīf, p. 27.

پَر لائقَ لَشڪَرِ ڪهي نہ تھو وِڃَر تھڻي ويساھ

But for an able army there is no delay (nor) pause. Nānga jō Quissō, v. 154.

هَندَه حَرِيلِيُون حُجْرًا دُورَان جَان دِثْتَهَامِ

When I saw from afar the places, houses, cells.
Aǰāib, v. 72.

وَجُزْنِ دِيسَ وَسَنَ جَا كَيْتَا سَرَ سَاوَلِ تَهْنَا سَاوَا دِي

By the lightnings dresses of rain (i. e. clouds) have
been made; reeds and herbs have become green; oh!
Sh. Sār. IV, Epil.

اَكِهْنُون مْنَه مِهَارِ دِي جَنِ رَكِهْنُون جُوڙِي

By whom eyes (and) face have been turned towards
the buffalo-keeper. Sh. Suh. V, 9.

پُوكُهُون كُڏِرْگَاهَ عَالَمَ جَا اُنَ آبَ تِي

The farms and ferries of the world (people) are
upon that water. Nānga jō Qissō, v. 36.

3) When two or more subjects of different persons
occur in a sentence, the first person precedes the second
(or third), and the second the third, the verb being
put in the Plural.

اَسِين ۽ فَرِيسِي كَهَنَّا رُوڙَا تَهَا رَكُهُون

We and the Pharisees keep many fasts. Matth. 9, 14.

Chapter XVIII.

II. Subordination of sentences.

§. 99.

Two or more sentences may be so joined together,
that one is not independent of the other, but is only
making up for the deficiency of the other. A sentence
thus depending on another, is called a subordinate

sentence, and the other, that is completed thereby, is called the main sentence.

A subordinate sentence may have another sentence coordinated either with or without conjunctive particles; or it may again subordinate another sentence.

A subordinate sentence may be linked to the main sentence either by subjunctive particles, or by relative pronouns and adverbs or by interrogative pronouns and adverbs.

1) Subordination of a sentence by subjunctive particles.

§. 100.

Particles, by which a sentence is subordinated to the main sentence are the concessive, the consecutive, the causal, the final and the conditional, cf. §. 59.

a) With the three first particles the Indicative is used, if the assertion be positive, and the Potential, if the assertion be more vague or uncertain; with final particles the Potential is always used.

تَوَزِّي كُسَنِ كَاتِ تَهْ بَهْ سَايِي سَلَنِ كِي نَهْ كِي

Though they be killed by the knife, they do not at all divulge any thing. Sh. Kal. II, 8.

بَاتَاڙَ جَو مَتَهو ايترو بهوني تي هنيانئين تَه سَنَدَسِ

مِنْجُ مُنْجِهَتُو

It threw the head of dejection so much on the ground, that its brain was confused. Sindhī Reading Book p. 58.

اَللّٰهُ اَوَّلَا لَهِيْنِ جَانِ سُبْجَانُونِ سَجْ

O God, take away the covers, that we may know the truth. Maj. 205.

b) In conditional sentences the subordinate sentence generally precedes the main sentence, but the conditional part of the sentence may also follow that, which is conditioned thereby.

The subordinate sentence is introduced by the particles **جيڪڏهن** if, and **جيڪر** if (at any time), and the main sentence by the concessive particle **تڏ**, **تان**, then, which is generally not translated.

1) If the condition and that, which is conditioned thereby, be indefinite, possible, doubtful or uncertain, the Potential is used in both members of the sentence; in the main sentence the Imperative may also be employed.

ويٽهي هٿ مَ هوءَ جي هليين تَ هُوَ ٿَ هِين

Be not seated here; if thou go, thou mayst obtain (thy) sweetheart. Sh. Ābirī VII, 6.

تَ تُون مَانِين مُورَ جي پَنڊِ اِهاڻِي پَارِئِين

Then thou mayst enjoy it at all, if thou perform this very advise. Sh. Ābirī VII, 14.

اَن جي ڏِٽها هُون تَ اَللَّهَ ڪَارَن مَڪالِه ڪَريو

If they may have been seen by you, then, for God's sake, speak! Sh. Hus. X, 22.

2) If the condition be uncertain, possible or only expected, but if that, which is conditioned thereby, be represented as certain and positive, the Potential is used in the subordinate, and the Indicative (commonly the Future) in the main sentence.

اَپَلِ اَپَلِ تَهي جِيانَ لاَ جي سَارِينِ وِو سِپَرِين

O mother, o mother, I live, o God, if my dear friends remember me! Sh. Suh. VII, Epil. 2.

جيڪڏهن تون هيت آسان ڪهي مسجد جوڙي ڏيڻ تہ آسین
تو ڪهي ڏينهاڙي ڪعبه الله جي ريارت ڪارينداسين

If thou construct us here a mosque, then we shall let thee daily make the pilgrimage of the Kaaba of God. Life of Abd-ul-Latif, p. 4.

3) If the condition and that, which is conditioned thereby, be taken as certain and positive, the Indicative is used in both members of the sentence.

جي تون آسان ڪهي ڪڏهين تهو تہ سڙن جي وکر مين
وڃن جي موڪل ڏي

If thou castest us out, allow us to go into the herd of swine. Matth. 8, 31.

جي تون ڳاله ڪندين تہ ڪوڙهيو تهيندين

If thou shalt divulge it, thou wilt become a leper. Life of Abd-ul-Latif, p. 44.

4) If the condition as well as that, which is conditioned thereby, is represented as such, that could have happened under certain circumstances, but which has not happened, because the condition was not fulfilled, the Imperfect, Aorist or Pluperfect is used in the subordinate, and the Aorist in the main sentence, or, under certain circumstances, the Pluperfect (cf. §. 87, 2).

جي ڌارون پيئندو نہ هو تہ نہ مري وڻو

If he had not kept on drinking liquor, he would not have died.

لکيئم تو ڏي خط پڙ جي هوس پڪيئڙو

آيسَ مَنَهَنَدِ كِتَابَ جِي هُونَدَ اُڏامي سَتَتُ
تَ رَاڙان رُئي رَتَ جِي هُجي قَلَمُ وَافَ قَلَبَ جَو

I have written a letter to thee; but if I were a bird
I would likely have come before the letter, having
flown quickly.

If the pen would be aware of the heart, it would
weep blood out of affection. Sh. Barvō Sindhī,
Chōt. 6.

سي جِي هَوَتَ سَٺا تَ هُونَدَ نَ ويو نِڪري

If those (cries) had been heard by (my) sweetheart,
he would likely not have gone off. Sh. Hus. III, 2.

جيڪرَ ڪَهَرَواري جاتو هو چورُ ڦلاني پهرِ ايندو تَ هُونَدَ

چيٽيندو رهڻو

If the master of the house had known, (that) the
thief will come at a certain watch (of the night), he
would likely have remained on his guard. Matth. 24, 43.

جي سي سدومَ مين تهئا ها تَ هُونَدَ اُجَ تُوئي هليو آيو هو

If those (works) had been done at Sodom, it would
have likely remained until this day. Matth. 11, 23.

Instead of the Aorist or Pluperfect the Poten-
tial (of the Present) may be used (but very rarely)
in both members of a conditional sentence, followed by
the particle ها; but more commonly ها is added to a
past tense, for the sake of emphasis.

جي هُوَ نَ هلي ها تَ سَڄَن ڪهي نَ لهي ها

If she had not gone, she would not have obtained
(her) friend.

جي ڪڏهين هي ڳالهه آهان جي سنجھه مين آئي هجي
ها تہ هوند بي ڏوهن تي ڏوه نہ لايو ها

If you had ever understood this word, you would not have condemned the guiltless. Matth. 12, 7.

5) If the condition must have been fulfilled in past future time (*Futurum exactum*), before that, which is conditioned thereby, shall happen, the Aorist is used in the subordinate, and the Future in the main sentence.

جيڪڏهين مخدوم صاحب شاهه صاحب ڪهان آهي وصل
ڪنو تہ شاهه صاحب آهي مخدوم صاحب جي جنازي سان
حاضر تهيندو

If ever *Maydūm Sāhib* should have died before *Shāh Sāhib*, then *Shāh Sāhib* will come and be present with the bier of *Maydūm Sāhib*. Life of *Abd-ul-Latīf*, p. 37.

جي ڪنهن آچي سنجاس تہ ان ڪهي آئون ڏيندس

If one shall have come and recognised her, I will give her to him. *Sindhi Read. B.* p. 59.

6) The conditional particle جي is often omitted in the subordinate sentence, and جيڪر on the other hand is used without a main sentence, it being passed over in silence, so that جيڪر assumes quite the sense of the interjectional particle مان would that!

پرِيم تنهن جي ڪها مران تہ مان لهان

O my friend, (if) I die of thy wound, I (may) obtain honour. *Sh. Jam. Kal.* I, 6.

ڇيڪر ڪوڙ ٿي هٿون

If we would go to (our) village, (it would be well)
= We should like to go to (our) village. Amulu
Mān. p. 151.

2) Subordination of a sentence by the relative pronoun (also the indefinite pronouns (جوڪو, ڇيڪو) and relative adverbs, corresponding generally to a correlative. (§. 74 sqq.)

§. 101.

The subordinate sentence may either precede or follow the main sentence.

ڏر لڙي جي لئون ڏاڏائين ڏنم جا

Come back, o louse of the blanket, which was given to me by the grandfather's family. Sh. Um. Mar. VII, 3.

ڇيڪو ڄڻا تهو ڪهڙي ان جي ڪهر منجه هوند ن

تھي ٿڪي

Whoever is given to gambling, in his house property does not remain. Sindhī Read. Book, p. 52.

جن جن ٿي ڏينھن ٿي ٿي تانين پندھ مين

As the day gets hot, so I push on in the journey. Sh. Hus. II, 14.

جِ ن ڀڪهي پير ت ٿي ٿي ٻاهري

Where there is not a footprint of a bird, there glimmers a small fire. Sh. Khāh. II, 11.

جَانِ ڪِي ڪُنڊهي ڪانه تان تائي ٻنڊهڻ ٿرھو

When there are some reeds of the shore, pull them out and bind together a raft. Sh. Hus. VIII, 3.

3) Subordination of a sentence by an interrogative pronoun or particle.

§. 102.

The dependant sentence is generally introduced by the particles تہ, جو, and ڪي, that, which are not translated.

هيڙن جو حساب ڪوھ ڄاڻان ڪينئ ٿهڻو

How do I know, how the calculation of the Amīr has been made? Sh. Um. Mār. II.

مون شادي جو جواب ڏي تہ ڪينئ ڪري ائين

Give me an answer about the marriage, how thou hast arranged it? Amulu Mān. p. 142.

پنهن جي جيئ جو فڪر نہ ڪريو جو چها ڪهاڻينداسين
چها پڻداسين نہ پنهن جي سرير جو ڪ چها پهرينداسين

Take no thought of your life, (saying) what shall we eat, what shall we drink? nor of your body, what we shall put on? Matth. 6, 24.

Chapter XIX.

Abbreviation of subordinate sentences.

§. 103.

A subordinate sentence may be abbreviated:

1) by using the present and past participle (cf. §. 80, 81), either adjectively, or in the Locative Singular, which is more common. The participle supplies the place of a relative or conjunctive subordinate sentence, into which it may be dissolved, when necessary, as:

رَوْنَدِي رَاتِ وَهَاءَ چڪائيندي پَتِيُون

Pass the night weeping, distilling glasses of liquor; i. e. whilst weeping, or as one who weeps etc. Sh. Jam. Kal. IV, 25.

وَتَهِي ڏاڏهي ڏکھ ڪنھن ڪنڊھي پاس ڪري پيئي

Having been seized = after or when or as she was seized by a violent pain, she fell down near some bank. Story of the cat and mice, v. 29.

2) By using the past conjunctive participles.

هُوتُ پُنْهُون تَهَا نِينِ بَارُوچِي بُولِي ڪِئو

They carry off (my) sweetheart Punhū, speaking Baluchī, i. e. whilst they speak Baluchī. Sh. Dēsī II, 13.

Chapter XX.

On the indirect oration.

§. 104.

When the words or thoughts of a person are given with the very same expressions, as used originally, the oration is called a direct one; but when they are only represented according to their general contents or purport, the oration is called an indirect one. In Sindhī the indirect oration is never made use of, but the words or thoughts of a person are always represented in the direct oration and generally introduced by the particle تَ.

بِهَانِيَانِئِين تَهِي تَ كَنُهِن پَرِ كُساڻِي نِڪِرِي وَجَان

He was thinking: 'in some way having sneaked off I will get away'; i. e. that he would sneak off etc. Life of Abd-ul-Latif, p. 20.

جَان ڏسي تَ بهتَ وَتَ بِيتهو آنيهان

When he sees: I am sitting near Bhiṭa. Ibid. p. 21.

جي بهائين تَ پرين مِزان تَ سَڪُه چوراني لَاتِ

If thou likest: I will meet (my) friend = to meet (thy) friend, then learn the mimicking sound of the thieves. Sh. Jam. Kal. II, 8.

APPENDIX I.

ON THE SINDHI CALENDAR.

The Muhammadans of Sindh reckon by lunar months after the common Muhammadan aera, called هِجْرَت, the flight of Muhammad from Mekka to Me-dīnah, the years of this aera are therefore called ^(١)هَجْرِي. It dates, according to the best accounts from the 18th of July 622 p. Chr. Their months commence with the appearance of each new moon and consist of 30 and 29 days alternately, amounting to 354 days and about nine hours; in consequence thereof New-year's-day falls every year about eleven days earlier than in the previous year.

To keep pace with the seasons the Sindhīs interpose every third year an intercalary month (لُنْدُ لُنْدُ), repeating that month, in which the sun enters no new sign of the Zodiac.

In naming the lunar months the learned Muhammadans follow the nomenclature of the Arabs; but among the common people the names of those Arabian months only are known, which are noted by some special religious observance, the other months being called by the names of the Hindū months then being.

1) Another aera, which is also in use amongst the Muhammadans of Upper India, is called فَصْلِي, or revenue aera; it dates, according to Prinsep, from the year 592³/₄ p. Chr.

Lunar months of the Arabians.

- | | | |
|-----|--|------------|
| 1) | مُحَرَّمُ muharramu
مَحَرَّمُ maharamu | } 30 days. |
| 2) | صَفَرُ safaru | |
| 3) | رَبِيعُ الْأَوَّلُ rabī;ulavvalu . . | 30 days. |
| 4) | رَبِيعُ الثَّانِي rabī;u-ssānī . .
رَبِيعُ الْآخِرُ rabī;u-lāḫiru . . | } 29 days. |
| 5) | جُمَادَى الْأَوَّلُ jumāda-lavvula | |
| 6) | جُمَادَى الثَّانِي jumāda-ssānī
جُمَادَى الْآخِرُ jumāda-lāḫiru | } 29 days. |
| 7) | رَجَبُ rajabu | |
| 8) | شَعْبَانُ ša;abānu. | 29 days. |
| 9) | رَمَضَانُ ramazānu | 30 days. |
| 10) | شَوَّالُ šavvālu. | 29 days. |
| 11) | ذِي الْقَعْدَةِ dī-lqa;adah . . .
ذِي قَعْدَةٍ dī qa;adah . . . | } 30 days. |
| 12) | ذِي الْحِجَّةِ dī-lhijjah
ذِي حِجَّةٍ dī hijjah. | |
| | | 29 days. |

The Hindūs reckon by solar years, and luni-solar months. They follow either the Vikramāditya (وِکْرَمَادِیْتُ) aera, called sambatu (Sansk. संवत् year),

dating from the year 57 a. Chr., and commencing with the month of katī, or that of Shālivāhana, called śāku (Sansk. शक), dating from the year 78 p. Chr., and commencing with the month of Čētru.

The Hindū year is divided into 12 equal portions, which nearly correspond to our solar months. Each month is divided again (by Hindūs as well as Muhammadans) into two parts (پَکھُ or پَچھُ lunar fortnight), the first from new to full moon (سُدی sudī), and the second from full to new moon (بَدی badī). The dates of these two divisions (تہہ lunar date), fifteen each, are reckoned separately.

Solar months of the Hindūs.

چِترُ čētru, from the middle of March to the middle of April.

وِساکھُ vēsākhu, from the middle of April to the middle of May.

جِثھُ jēṭhu, from the middle of May to the middle of June.

آکھارُ ākhāru, from the middle of June to the middle of July.

ساوَنُ sāvaṇu, } from the middle of July to the middle
 سرانُ srāṇu, } of August.

بَدْرُو badrō, from the middle of August to the middle of September.

اَسُو asū, from the middle of September to the middle of October.

کَٔٔی kati, from the middle of October to the middle of November.

نَاهَرِي nāharī, نَهَرِي naharī, مَنگِہرُ manghiru,	}	from the middle of November to the middle of December.
---	---	--

پوہُ pōhu, from the middle of December to the middle of January.

مَآگھُ māghu, from the middle of January to the middle of February.

پھَاگُ phāgu, پھَاگُنُ phagūnu,	}	from the middle of February to the middle of March.
------------------------------------	---	---

The Hindūs commence the day at midnight, as we do, but the Muhammadans at the previous evening. In the mouth of a Muhammadan therefore the night of a certain day always signifies the night of the previous day, as: جُمِی جِی رَاتِ Friday night = Thursday night, according to our way of reckoning. There is some difference between the Hindū and Musalmān names of the days of the week, as subjoined.

Days of the week.

Hindū.

Musalmān.

آرتارُ ārtaru¹⁾ . . . آچَرُ āčaru, Sunday.

سومَرُ sūmaru . . .	{	سُومَرُ sūmaru, سُومَارُ sūmāru,	} Monday.
---------------------	---	-------------------------------------	-----------

1) Or: آٲٲٲٲٲٲٲ āḍitavāru, آٲٲٲٲٲٲٲ āitavāru, آٲٲٲٲٲٲٲ ārtavāru.

Hindū.

Musalmān.

مَنْكَلُ mangalu . . . اَنْكَارُو anārō, Tuesday.

بُدْهَرُ budharu . . . اَرْبَا arbā, Wednesday.

وِسْپَتِ vispate . . . خَمِيسَ xamīsa, Thursday.

تَهَارُونِ thārū ¹⁾ . . .	}	جُمُو jumō, Friday.
شُكْرُ šukru . . .		

چَهَنچَهَرُ čančharu . . چَهَنچَهَرُ čančharu, Saturday.

1) Or: تَهَانَرُو thāvaru.

APPENDIX II.

SURVEY OF THE DIFFERENT SINDHI-ARABIC ALPHABETS.

The Alphabet used in this Grammar (Hindūstānī).	The Government Alphabet.	The old Sindhi Alphabet.	Roman Characters.
—	—	—	a
ا	ا	ا	b
ب	ب	ب	b̄
پ	پ	پ	bh
ت	ت	ت	t
ٹ	ٹ	ٹ	th
ث	ث	ث	t̄
د	د	د	th̄
ڈ	ڈ	ڈ	z
پھ	پھ	پھ	p
ف	ف	ف	ph
ج	ج	ج	j
چ	چ	چ	j̄
جھ	جھ	جھ	j̄h
ن	ن	ن	n̄ (ny)
ڻ	ڻ	ڻ	ē
ڙ	ڙ	ڙ	ēh
ر	ر	ر	h̄
ڙ	ڙ	ڙ	z
ڙ	ڙ	ڙ	d
ڙ	ڙ	ڙ	dh
ڙ	ڙ	ڙ	d̄
ڙ	ڙ	ڙ	d̄



MISPRINTS AND EMENDATIONS.

Introduction.

p. I, l. 23 wheras, read: whereas. p. I, note, l. 2
troughout: throughout. p. V, l. 3 r: r̥. p. VII, l. 18
लवङ्गः लवङ्ग. p. XIV, l. 20 मयूरः मयूर. p. XV, l. 18
सक्कणोमिः सक्कणोमि. p. XV, l. 19 सक्कोमिः शक्कोमि.
p. XV, l. 29 स्वांडणुः खांडणु. p. XV, l. 30 gāũ: gāũ.
p. XVI, l. 1 मेघः मेघ. p. XVIII, l. 20 जः न. p. XIX,
l. 7 rī: r̥ī. p. XIX, l. 23 मीआरोः सीआरो. p. XX,
l. 18 seams: seems. p. XXIV, l. 6 जडुः जडु. p. XXX,
l. 23 सहर्सेः सहर्षे. p. XXXI, l. 29 कः क. p. XXXVI,
l. 9 अरिज्ः आरिज्. p. XXXVII, l. 13 मुर्धन्ः मूर्धन्.
p. XL, l. 5 सिसोः सिसी. p. XLI, l. 3 अश्वुः अश्वु.
p. XLII, l. 12 निज्जुओः विज्जुओ. p. XLVII, l. 27
सन्ध्यः सन्ध्या.

p. 3, l. 21 ت : ت. p. 3, l. 22 ت : ت. p. 10, l. 15
سَعْفَص : سَعْفَص. p. 11, l. 21 anu: aũ. p. 12, l. 22
سِينْكَارِي : سِينْكَارِي. p. 23, l. 19 زَبَر : زَبَر. p. 23, l. 25
the these: these. p. 29, l. 29 goal: goat. p. 30, l. 1
add before pōe: پو. p. 33, l. 27 vijū: viju. p. 36, l. 5
čārḥō: čārḥō. p. 36, l. 15 tōbō: ṭōbō. p. 36, l. 21
مَارِیْنْدُو : مَارِیْنْدُو. p. 37, l. 27 add before ū: in. p. 37,

- l. 33 bhuē: bhūe. p. 39, l. 11 सञ्ज्ञा: सञ्ज्ञा. p. 46,
 l. 20 بهۆل: بهۆل. p. 51, l. 16 كهڙڙو: كهڙڙو. p. 51, l. 27
 وَدَهْنُ: وَدَهْنُ. p. 52, l. 15 پٺاڻ: پٺاڻ. p. 59, l. 26
 Gujurāti: Gujārātī. p. 60, l. 27 ō: ē. p. 62, l. 4 Gu-
 jarāthī: Gujārātī. p. 66, l. 25 چوٽي: چوٽي. p. 66, l. 28
 اوتھار: اوتھار. p. 66, l. 28 اُتھ: اُتھ. p. 67, l. 14
 کھاندھيرو khāndhīro: کھاندھيرو khāndīrō. p. 67, l. 14
 کھاندھ khāndhe: کھاندھ khānde. p. 68, l. 9 ālū: ātu.
 p. 68, l. 24 patru: putru. p. 69, l. 9 وائائتو: وائائتو.
 p. 69, l. 20 kāchirō: kāchirō. p. 69, l. 29 ڏتھل and
 ڏتھو: ڏتھل. p. 72, l. 3 hānōkō: hānōkō. p. 72,
 l. 3 hānē: hānē. p. 72, l. 12 ānikō: ānikō. p. 72, l. 24
 čōrānikō: čōrānikō. p. 78, l. 11 menaged: managed.
 p. 82, l. 7 پانيو: پانيو. p. 82, l. 26 Shortened from the
 Sansk. सह read: Sansk. स, shortened from सह. p. 88,
 l. 14 Bahūvrihi: Bahuvrihi. p. 88, l. 25 recognizable:
 recognisable. p. 90, l. 21 After तकु add: fem. p. 92,
 l. 4 सुजन्म: सुजन्म. p. 92, l. 25 after: Sansk. मज्जा
 add: masc. (also in Sindhi). p. 94, l. 25 تَرَن: تَرَن.
 p. 99, l. 24 ni: ni. p. 106, l. 24 توبو: توبو. p. 106,
 l. 25 توبا: توبا. p. 113, l. 6 Whe:
 We. p. 120, l. 8 put a Comma after palatal. p. 128,
 l. 22 jōyu: jōyū. p. 140, l. 18 سائين: سائين. p. 144,
 l. 20 کيهرڻاڻ: کيهرڻاڻ. p. 144, l. 21 کيهرڻو:
 p. 157, l. 15 hikirō: hikirō. p. 157, l. 16 hēkirō: hē-
 kirō. p. 159, l. 4 ḍaha: ḍaha. p. 164, l. 14 جوراڻي:
 چوراڻي. p. 169, l. 23 saha: sata. p. 170, l. 7 čōḍaha:
 čōḍahā. p. 170, l. 8 pandraha: pandrahā. p. 171, l. 20

- 173, l. 3 جِئَرِي : جِئَرِي. 173, l. 16 اَتَهَنِي : اَتَهَنِي.
 sweathearts: sweethearts. p. 190, l. 20 mūk hā: mū khā.
 p. 201, note: Risāls: Risālō. p. 208, l. 15 whit: with.
 p. 215, l. 5 جِيكِيكِي : جِيكِيكِي. p. 216, l. 28 theyself:
 thysself. p. 230, l. 5 پِئَرِن : پِئَرِن. p. 234, l. 8 Rīnō:
 Rānō. p. 236, l. 4 ē: ī. p. 237, l. 20 وَه : وَه. p. 239,
 l. 7 پَاگَرِيَاَس : پَاگَرِيَاَس. p. 241, l. 4 jōnhē: jōnhē. p. 245,
 l. 4 چَوْتِيُون : چَوْتِيُون. p. 248, l. 13 کِنَاس : کِنَاس. p. 255,
 l. 19 parhāiṇu: parhāiṇu. p. 258, l. 16 āā: āu. p. 261,
 l. 8 ču-anu: ču-anu. p. 264, l. 16 khāhann: khanhanu.
 p. 267, l. 29 parh-iju: parh-iju. p. 274, l. 21 susanu:
 tusanu. p. 277, l. 20 kuhanu: kuhanu. p. 283, l. 32
 una: ūna. p. 286, l. 20 būdhāyō: būdhā-y-ō. p. 287,
 l. 1 the II and I: the I and II. p. 287, l. 14 āni: ani.
 p. 289, l. 28 ia: iā. p. 294, l. 8 رُونْدَو : رُونْدَو. p. 299,
 l. 16 هُونْدَا : هُونْدَا. p. 301, l. 21 هُونْدَا : هُونْدَا.
 l. 19 تِهِينْدِئَس : تِهِينْدِئَس. p. 311, l. 7 هُونْدِئَس : هُونْدِئَس.
 p. 311, l. 8 تِهِينْدِئَس : تِهِينْدِئَس. p. 320, l. 20 هُونْدِئَس : هُونْدِئَس.
 p. 323, l. 9 čhaḍ-indō: čhaḍ-indō. p. 325,
 l. 2 The object being fem.: being masc. The object
 being masc.: fem. p. 336, l. 6 جِهَدِي : جِهَدِي. p. 341,
 l. 12 کِهِينْدَو : کِهِينْدَو. p. 342, l. 18 مِين : مِين. p. 348,
 l. 10 corpe: corpse. p. 361, l. 7 دِئَوَش : دِئَوَش. p. 368,
 l. 18 čhaḍiū-se: čhaḍiū-se. p. 372, l. 5 čhaḍiā-su:
 čhaḍiā-sū. p. 384, l. 2 ōcītōly: ōcītō. p. 384, l. 2 for
 the second unexpected read: unexpectedly. p. 384, l. 5
 ōḍirō: ōḍirō. p. 384, note 2, l. 2 मंहित : मंहित.
 p. 389, l. 12 Loc.: Abl. p. 395, l. 20 کُهَرِين : کُهَرِين.

- p. 395, note, l. 1 ě o: ě of. p. 396, l. 19 Čhāt: Ohōt.
 p. 402, l. 2 mē: mē. p. 405, l. 2 جَفَاثُون : جَفَاثُون.
 p. 411 The last two quotations are misplaced there and
 to be inserted on p. 417, after l. 16. p. 414, l. 15
 جِلَهَن : جِلَهَن. p. 416, l. 6 the 'Miā': thee 'Miā'.
 p. 418, l. 8 form: from. p. 420, l. 8 كَذِهِي : كَذِهِي.
 p. 423, l. 6 also!: alas! p. 432, l. 13 after God, add:
 or not?



184









